



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

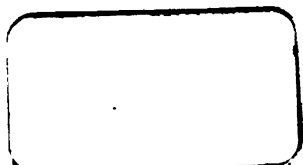
### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

1177505



HARVARD  
COLLEGE  
LIBRARY













347

# The Anatomie of The Bodie of Man

BY  
Thomas Vicary,

SERGEANT OF THE SURGEONS TO HENRY VIII, QUEEN MARY, EDWARD VI, AND  
QUEEN ELIZABETH; MASTER OF THE BARBER-SURGEONS' COMPANY; AND CHIEF  
SURGEON TO ST. BARTHOLOMEW'S HOSPITAL, LONDON, 1548-62.

---

THE EDITION OF 1548,  
AS RE-ISSUED BY THE SURGEONS OF ST. BARTHOLOMEW'S IN 1577.

---

WITH A LIFE OF VICARY, NOTES ON SURGEONS IN ENGLAND,  
BARTHOLOMEW'S HOSPITAL, AND LONDON, IN TUDOR TIMES,  
AN APPENDIX OF DOCUMENTS, AND ILLUSTRATIONS,

EDITED BY  
FREDK. J. FURNIVALL, M.A., Hon. DR. PHIL.,  
AND  
PERCY FURNIVALL,  
A STUDENT OF ST. BARTHOLOMEW'S.

[PART I.]

LONDON:  
PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY  
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCLXXXVIII.

7



**BERLIN:** ASHER & CO., 5, UNTER DEN LINDEN.  
**NEW YORK:** C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.  
**PHILADELPHIA:** J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.









PLANS OF  
BARTHOLOMEW'S

IN

1560 & 1604.

---

(For 1598, see *Norden* or *Van den Keere*.)



Vicary's  
**Anatomic of the Bodie of Man.**

---

**Early English Text Society.**

**Extra Series, No. LIII.**

**1888.**





### CORRECTIONS.

p. 25, sidenotes : for *lacestasus* read *lacertasus*.

p. 98, l. 2, for 20 read 40.

p. 114, l. 24, after 'More's' add 'second or £20 Grant of Jan. 2, 1514 (p.113)';  
and in line 27, after '1535,' add 'of More's £20 Annuity.'

(The text should have called attention 1. to the evidence on p. 113-14 of Marcellus de la More's having a second Annuity of £20 for Wages and Medicines (granted 2 Jan. 1514), as well as his first Annuity of 40 Marks, granted Aug. 6, 1513; 2. to the moral certainty that on Sept. 20, 1535, Vicary got a grant of this second Annuity of More's, either in substitution of, or in addition to, his former £5 a quarter.)

p. 127, l. 14, for '*viccomites*' read '*viccomitibus*.'

p. 127, l. 16, alter '*existentia*,' either to '*existenti*' (to agree with '*conallio*')  
or '*existentium*' (to agree with '*Communiariorum*').

p. 152, note 3, for 'page 98, *Statutes*,' read 'pages 279-280.'

p. 164, l. 15, for 'this' read 'thies.'

p. 172, l. 21, for 'having' read 'had.'

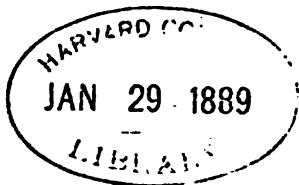
1182  
13

YOUNG & CO.  
LIBRARIAN

~~Aug 21 1799~~

11473.53

~~11473.53~~



Subscription Fund

Extra Series,  
LIII.

R. CLAY AND SONS, LIMITED, LONDON AND BUNGAY.

28-51  
17

## FORETALK.

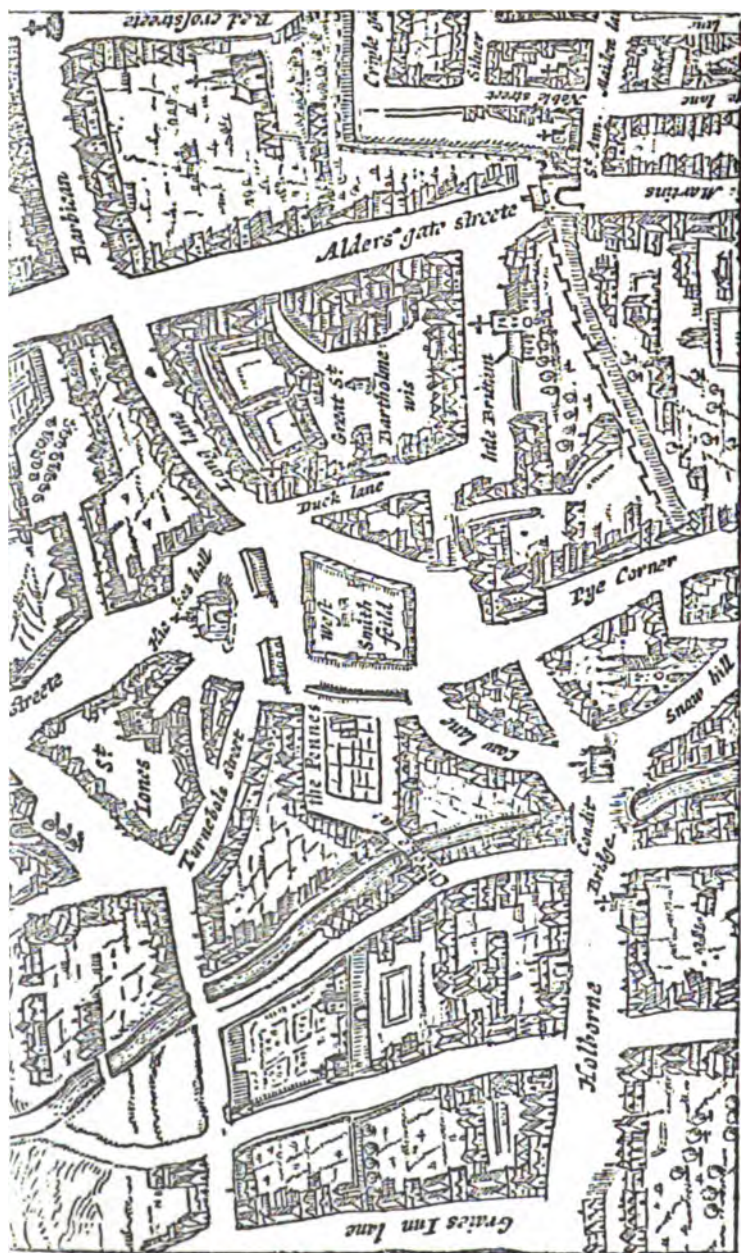
TILL Mr. W. H. Cross, the Clerk, and Dr. Norman Moore, the Warden, of St. Bartholomew's, publish Part I of their Records of the Hospital, we cannot complete the Life of THOMAS VICARY, for our Forewords to his *Anatomia*. But as the Text and Appendix in this Part of our book need a short temporary Foretalk, with a sketch of Vicary's Life, we give it here.

The first tidings of Vicary (who was probably born between 1490 and 1500) are, that he was 'a meane practiser (had a moderate practise) at Maidstone,' and was not a trained Surgeon. In 1525 he is Junior of the three Wardens of the Barbers' or Barber-Surgeons' Company in London. In 1528 he is Upper or first Warden of the Company, and one of the Surgeons to Henry VIII, at £20 a year. In 1530 he is Master of the Barber-Surgeons' Company, and is appointed—in reversion after the death of Marcellus de la More—Serjeant of the Surgeons, and Chief Surgeon to the King. This Headship of his Profession, Vicary takes in 1535 or 1536, together with its pay of £26 13s. 4d., and holds it (under Edw. VI, Q. Mary, and Q. Elizabeth) till his death in 1561 or 1562. He is the Paget of his great Tudor time.

In 1535, a fresh Grant is made to Vicary of either his old twenty pounds a year, or a fresh one: p. 114, below. In 1539, Vicary gets from Henry VIII a beneficial lease for 21 years of the Rectory-house, tithes, &c. of the dissolved Boxley Abbey in Kent, close to Maidstone; and as he is a person of influence with the King, a rich Northamptonshire squire, Anthony Wodehull, who has an infant daughter, and is probably a patient of the chief Court Surgeon, appoints Vicary as one of the Trustees of his Will (proved Oct. 11, 1542), with a view (no doubt) to the protection of his girl's property and person during her nonage. In 1541, as the acknowledged Head of his profession, Vicary is appointed the First Master





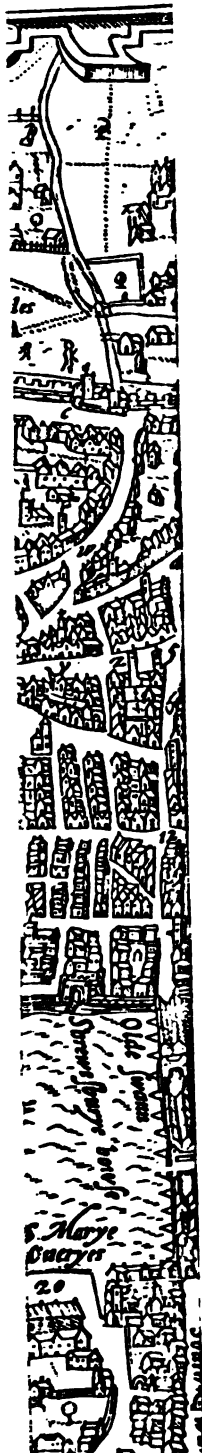


West Smithfield and St. Bartholomew's Hospital, slightly enlarged from Augustine Ryther's Map of London, 1604.





ON





.

,

of the newly amalgamated Companies of Barbers and Surgeons, and is painted—with other Surgeons, Barbers and Physicians—by Holbein. In this year 1541, he also gets a beneficial lease for 60 years, from Sir Thos. Wyat, the poet, of lands in Boxley, Kent. In 1542, he and his son William (also probably a Surgeon) are appointed by Henry, Bailiffs of Boxley Manor, &c. in Kent, with yearly salaries of £10 each. In Sept. 1546-7, Vicary is again Master of the united Company of Barbers and Surgeons. In Dec. 1547, he marries his second wife, Alice Bucke.

In 1546-7, Henry VIII handed over Bartholomew's (with other Hospitals, &c.) to the City of London. He gave it a small endowment (nominally £333 odd) out of tumble-down houses, which he charged with pensions to parsons. The balance of the endowment was but enough to keep, as patients, 'thre or foure harlottcs, then being in chyldebbedda.' So the City set to work, raised £1000 for repairs, fittings, &c., practically re-opened the Hospital, for 100 patients, and, on 29 Sept. 1548, appointed Chief-Surgeon VICARY as one of the 6 new Governors of the Hospital to act with the 6 old ones. Vicary must soon after have become Resident Surgical Governor of the Hospital. He was re-appointed annually; he is given the old Convent Garden in June 1551; and in June 1552 is made 'one of the assistants of this house for the terme of his lyffe' (extract by Dr. N. Moore). He has 3 Surgeons under him, at £18 (1549), and then £20 (1552) a year each. The Hospital finds him a Livery gown, and repairs his house. He holds his appointment till his death, late in 1561, or early in 1562. That to him is due part of the Hospital organization, and some of the beautiful unselfish spirit shown in the City 'Ordre' for Barts in 1552, we do not doubt. This 'Ordre' no one can read without admiring.

In Sept. 1548, Vicary was, for the 4th time, elected Master of the Barber-Surgeons. In 1548 too, he published his *Anatomie*—the first in English on the subject,—but whether this was after or before he was made a Governor of Barts, we cannot say. The book was reprinted by the Surgeons of Barts in 1577, with a few Forewords; and from the unique copy of that issue, the earliest now known, our reprint is made, with added head-lines and side-notes. Frequently supplemented, Vicary's little *Anatomie* held the field for 150 years. (Unluckily the biographical details of an Italian doctor in one of the added Treatises, have been lately set down to Vicary.)

In 1553, Queen Mary made a special grant to Vicary of the Arrears of his Chief Court-Surgeons' Annuity of £26 13s. 4d. which he came into in 1536, on De la More's death or resignation. In 1554 he was appointed Surgeon to Mary's husband, K. Philip; and in 1555, Philip and Mary re-granted to Vicary—his son William being doubtless then dead—the Bailiffship of the Manor of Boxley, &c., and the 2 Annuities of £10, which Henry VIII had granted to Vicary and his son in 1542. Year by year Vicary quietly worked on, doing his duty to the sick poor at Barts, and in the Barber-Surgeons' Company. He had saved money enough by March 1557-8, to lend his brother-in-law, Thos. Dunkyn, yeoman of St. Leonard's, Shoreditch, £100, which he secures in favour of his nephew Thomas Vicary, of Tenterden in Kent, clothier; and possibly about this time he buys of Jn. Joyce a house and some land next to Boxley Church, in Kent, which he devises to his nephew Stephen Vicary, son of his brother William, late of Boxley. In Sept. 1557-8, he is, for the 5th and last time, Master of the Barber-Surgeons' Company.

On Jan. 27, 1560-1, Vicary makes his Will; and he probably dies late in 1561, or early in 1562, as the last payment to him of his Annuity of £20 is in Sept. 1561, and his Will is proved by his widow on April 7, 1562. Where he is buried, we have not yet been able to find. Shortly before his death he was (says Mr. S. Young) named in a Commission of Queen Elizabeth's to the Barber-Surgeons' Company to press Surgeons for her military service.

We hope in our Forewords to give further details about Vicary and his life and times. Some are in the Appendix in this Part I, which also contains particulars about Barts not printed before. These we commend to our readers' attention. The illustrations will help to realize the London, Bartholomew's, and Kent of the good old Surgeon's day. For any corrections, information, suggestions, and notes for our Part II (which will contain a full Index), we shall be grateful. We desire only to do justice to the old Worthy of Kent, and the noble Hospital for which he and his fellow-citizens of London worked in so generous a spirit. May our successors 350 years hence be able to say of us Victorians as we can of Vicary and the Londoners of his Tudor time: like Englishmen, they tried to do their duty!

*3 St. George's Square, Primrose Hill, London, N. W.  
14 June, 1888.*

## CONTENTS.

Portrait of Vicary, after Holbein, by Mr. Austin Young.

Early Plans of Bartholomew's, from Aggas (ab. 1560), & Ryther (1604).

Norden's Map of London, 1593, by Van den Keere.

Map of Vicary's Road from London to Maidstone and Boxley, ab. 1575.

Map of the Neighbourhood of London, ab. 1575.

Ships, &c. from Saxton's Maps, ab. 1575.

Foretalk (Temporary) ... ..	PAGES v—vii
-----------------------------	----------------

Vicary's Anatomie ... ..	1—86
--------------------------	------

Appendix: (Contents p. 87-8)

I. Grants to Vicary by Kings and Queens ... ..	89—98
II. Payments to Vicary, &c. by Kings and Queens ...	99—122
III. Extracts from City Records as to Barts, Vicary, the Plague, London Vagabonds, &c. ... ..	123—178
IV. Vicary's Bailiff's Accounts of Boxley Manor ...	179—180
V. Dunkyn's £100 Mortgage to Vicary, 7 March 1557-8	181—186
VI. Vicary's Will, 27 Jan. 1560-1 (proved, 7 April 1562)	187—194
VII. Henry VIII's Statutes relating to Surgeons ...	195—209
VIII. Supplement to the Statutes: the Surgeons' Com- promise with the City as to serving on Quests, &c. ... ..	210—219
IX. Ten Recipes by Hen. VIII and his Physicians. Poem, 'What Veins to bleed in,' &c. ... ..	220—230
X. Payments to Surgeons in 1529-43, by Hen. VIII, &c.	231—235
XI. Pay of Army and Navy Surgeons to Hen. VIII ...	236—237
XII. Some of Hen. VIII's Payments to Holbein and to Players ... ..	238—242
XIII. The 185 Freemen of the Barber-Surgeons' Company in 1537; the nos. of the other City Companies	243—246
XIV. Ordinances of the Barber-Surgeons of London, A.D. 1529, &c. ... ..	247—268
XV. Ordinances of the Barber-Surgeons of York, A.D. 1592, &c. ... ..	269—288
XVI. Order for the Government of Barts, A.D. 1552 ...	289—336

**A profitable Trea-  
tise of the Anatomic  
of mans body :**

**Comppled by that excel-  
lent Chirurgion, M. Tho-  
mas Vicary, Esquire, Seriaunt  
Chirurgion to king Henry the  
eyght, to king Edward the .vj. to  
Queene Mary, and to our most  
gracious Soueraigne Lady  
Queene Elizabeth, and also  
chefe Chirurgion of S.  
Bartholomewes  
Hospital.**

**Which work is newly reuenged,  
corrected, and published by the  
Chirurgions of the same  
Hospital now being.  
An. 1577.**

**¶ Imprinted at London, by  
Henry Bamforde.**









Nowe he that is the perfect guyde,  
 doth knowe our helpes were here alone,  
 By homely style it may be spyde,  
 for rules in Rhetorike haue we none:  
 Our heads doo lacke that fyled phrase,  
 whereon fine wittes delight to gaze.  
 If any say we deserue heere blame,  
 we pray you then amende the same.



# TO THE RIGHT

Worshipful, Sr. Rou-  
land Haiwarde, Knight, President  
of little Saint Bartholomewes in

West Smithfeilde, Sr. Am-  
brose Nicholas, Knight, Maister  
Alderman Ramsay, vvith the  
rest of the worshipful Ma-  
sters and Gouernours

of the same,

William Clowes, Wil. Beton,  
Richard Story, and Edward Bayly,  
Chirurgions of the same Hospital,  
wishe health and prosperitie.

[1577.]



*He People* in times past  
did prayse and extoll by  
Pictures and Epigrames the  
famous dedes of all sutche  
persons vvho so euer in  
any vertuous qualitie or  
Liberal Science excelled.  
*Sulpitius Gallus* among the

Folk of old  
praised those who  
excelled in virtues  
or science.

*Romanes* was highly renouvv<sup>e</sup>med for his singuler cun-  
ning in Astronomie, by vvwhose meanes *Lucius Paulus*  
obteyned the victorie in his vvarres against *Percius*.

\* sign. ¶ ij back.

*Pericles* also among the Athenians vvvas had in great  
admiration and honour for his profounde knowvledge in  
Philosophie, by vvhom the vvhole Citie of *Athens* vvvas  
from care and vvoe deliuered, vvhen they supposed their  
dest[r]uction to be neare at hand, by a blacke darknes  
of some admiration hanging ouer their Citie. Howe  
honorably vvvas *Apelles* the Paynter esteemed of mightie  
king *Alexander*, by whom onely he desired to be

*Pericles* was  
honoured by the  
Athenians;

*Apelles* by King  
*Alexander*.

## 6 The Epistle Dedicatorie. 1577. Envy of Physic.

paynted. But amongst all other Artes and Sciences, vvwhose prayse in tymes past flourished and shined most brightly, Chirurgerie among the vvise *Grecians* lacked not his prayse, honour, and estimation. For dyd not 4 that worthy and famous captayne of the Greekes, *Agamemnon*, loue dearly and rewarde bountifully both *Podalerius* and *Machaon*, through vvwhose cunnings skill in Surgerie, thousands of vvorthy \*Greekes vvvere saued 8 alius and healed, vvwho els had dyed and perished. And further heere to speake of *Philoneter*, of *Attalus*, of *Hiero*, of *Archelaus*, and of *Iula*, kinges of famous memorie, vvho purchased eternal prayse by their study 12 and cunning in Phisicke and Surgery. But novve in these our dayes enuie so ruleth the roste, that Phisicke should be condemned, and Surgerie despised for euer, but that sometime payne biddeth battayle, and care 16 keepeth skirmishe, in suche bytter sorte, that at the last this Alarum is sounded out: Novve come Phisicke, and then helpe Surgerie! Then is remembred the saying of *Iesus the sonne of Sirache*, which is notable: 1 20  
 'Honour the Phisition and Chirurgeon for necessitie, vvhom the almightie God hath created, because from the hyest commeth Medicine, and they shall receyue

The Wise Greeks  
honoured  
Surgerie.

\* sign. ¶ 144.

But now, envy  
condemns Physic  
and despises  
Surgerie, till pain  
comes.

Jesus, the Son  
of Sirach, says,  
'Honour the  
Physician and  
Surgeon.'

1 'The Wisdome of Iesus, the sonne of Sirach, called Ecclesiasticus,' ch. xxxviii. (1) Honour the Physition vvith that honour that is due vvnto him, because of necessitie: for the Lord hath created him. (2) For of the most High commeth healing, and he shall receiue giftes of the King. (3) The knowledge of the Physition lifeth vp his head, and in the sight of great men he shall be in admiration. (4) The Lorde hath created medicines of the earth, and he that is wise will not abhorre them. (5) Was not the water made sweete with wood, that man might knowe the vertue thereof? (6) So hee hath given men knowledge, that hee might bee glorified in his wonderous workes. (7) With such doeth he heale men, and take away their paines. (8) Of such doeth the apothecarie make a confection, and yet he can not finish his owne workes: for of the Lorde commeth prosperitie and wealth ouer all the earth. (9) My sonne, fayle not in thy sicknesse, but pray vvnto the Lorde, and he will make thee whole. (10) Leasse off from sinne, & order thine hands aright, and clense thine heart from all wickednes. (11) Offer sweete incense . . . (12) Then give place to the Physition: for the Lorde hath created him: let him not go from thee, for thou hast neede of him. (13) The houre may come, that their enterprises may haue good successe. (14) For they also shall pray vvnto the Lorde, that he would prosper that which is giuen for ease, and their phisike for the prolonging of life. — *Apocrypha*, 1583.

*The Epistle Dedicatorie. 1577. Thomas Vicary. 7*

gyftes of the King.' VVherefore vve exhort the vvyse  
man, that he in no tyme of prosperitie and health  
neglect these noble \*Artes and mysteries of Phisicke

\* sign. ¶ III. bk.

4 and Chirurgerie, because no age, no person, no countrey  
can long time lacke their helpes and remedies. VVhat  
is it to haue landes and houses, to abounde in siluer  
and golde, to be deckt with pearles and Diamondes,  
8 yea, and to possesse the vvhole vvorld, to rule ouer  
Nations and countreys, and to lacke health, the cheefest  
Iuel<sup>1</sup> and greatest treasure of mans lyfe and delight.

What shall it  
profit a man,

If he has the  
whole world,  
and yet lacks  
Health, man's  
greatest treasure?

Consider then, vves beseeche your vvorships, vvhat  
12 prayes are due to suche noble Sciences, whiche onely  
vvorke the causes of this aforesayde health, and hovve  
much the vveale publique are bounde to al them  
whose cares and studies daylye tendeth too this ende.

Among those to  
whom praise  
is due,

16 Amongst vvhom heere is to be remembered *Master  
Vicary*, Esquire, Seriaunt Chirurgion to Kinges and  
Queenes of famous memorie: VVhose learned vvorke  
of the Anatomie is by vs, the forenamed Surgions of  
20 Saint \*Bartholomewes in Smithfelde, nevvyly reuiued,  
corrected, & published abroad to the commoditie of  
others, who be Studentes in Chirurgerie: not vvithout  
our great studies, paynes, and charges. And although

is Thomas Vicary,

whose *Anatomic*  
we Surgions  
of Barie have  
newly published.  
\* sign. ¶ v.

24 we do lack the profound knowledge and sugred elo-  
quence of the Latin and Greeke tongues, to decke and  
beautifie this vvorke, yet we hope the studious Reader  
shal thereby reape singuler commoditie and fruite, by  
28 reading this little Treatise of the Anatomie of mans  
body, the vvhich is onely grounded vpon reason and  
experience, which are two principal rootes of Phisicke  
and Surgerie, As it is graunted by *Galen* in his thirde

It is grounded on  
Reason and  
Experience.

32 Booke, *De Methode medendi*: and vve vvho dayly  
worke and practise in Surgerie, according to the deepnes  
of the Arte,—aswel in greuous vvounds, Vloers, and  
Fistules, as other hyd and secrete diseases, vpon the

And we who  
daily treat  
grievous wounds

<sup>1</sup> jewel

## 8 *The Epistle Dedicatorie. 1557. Care for the Poor.*

body of man, dayly vsed by vs in S. Bartlemews Hos-  
 \* sign. ¶ v. back. pital and other places, &c., Those poore \*and greued  
 creatures, aswell men and woman as children,—do  
 know the value know the profite of this Art to be manyfolde, and the 4  
 of the Art. lacke of the same to be lamented. Therefore Galen truly  
 vvriteth, saying, That no man can vvorke so perfectly  
 as aforesayde, vvithout the knowvledge of the Anato-  
 mie: For (sayth he) it is as possible for a blinde man 8  
 to carue and make an Image perfect, as a Chirurgion to  
 vvorke<sup>1</sup> without error in mans body, not knowving  
 the Anatomie. And further, for as muche as your  
 1 orig. vvorke to. Worships are very careful for those poore and greued 12  
 And as you Governours of the creatures within the Hospital of S. Bartlemewes, &c.,  
 Hospital care for the poor, vvhereof Master Vycarie vvvas a member, VVe are there-  
 fore novve encouraged to Dedicate this little vvorke  
 we dedicate Vicary's book of the Anatomie, beeing his and our trausayles, to you<sup>1</sup> 16  
 to you, as Patrons of this Booke, to defende agaynst the  
 rauening Iavves of enuious Backbyters, vvhicke neuer  
 † sign. ¶ v. cease by all vnlawful meanes to blemishe and detface  
 the vvorkes of the learned, expert, and vvval disposed 20  
 and beg you to persons. Finally, vve do humbly craue of your Good-  
 take it in good nesses to accept in good part this Treatise concerning  
 part. the Anatomie, as the fruites of our studies and labours,  
 vvhereby wee shal be muche better encouraged to set 24  
 foorth hereafter other profitable vvorkes for the common  
 vvealth. Heerein yf your VVisedomes doo vouchsafe  
 to heare our requestes, and to alovve these our dooinges,  
 as dyd noble Amasus, king of Egypt, accept the 28  
 labours of his payneful Artificers, we haue not  
 onely to thanke your VVorships for so  
 dooing, but also to pray alway for you  
 vnto the almightie God to requite 32  
 your goodneses, receyuing  
 you into his protection  
 and keeping.  
 Amen. 36

We pray God to  
 have you in His  
 keeping.

¶ To the Reader.

4 **D**EARE Brethren,<sup>1</sup> and freendly Readers, we  
haue here, according to the trouth and mean-  
ing of the Author, set forth this needeful  
and necessarie worke concerning the *Anatomy of mans*  
*body*, beeing collected and gathered by master *Thomas*  
*Vicary*, and nowe by vs the Chirurgions of *Sainct*  
8 *Bartholomewes* Hospital, reuiued, corrected, and pub-  
lished. And albeit this Treatise be small in Volume,  
yet in commoditie it is great and profitable. Notwith-  
standing, if the thinges therein conteyned be not dis-  
12 cretly and wisely studied and applyed, according to the  
true meaning of the Author, Wee haue to tell you hereof,  
that therein is great peryl, because, through ignoraunt  
Practicio<sup>n</sup>ers, not knowing the Anatomie, commonly  
16 doth ensue death, and seperation of soule and body.  
Furthermore, whereas many good and learned men in  
these our dayes, doo cease to publishe abroad in the  
Englishe toung their workes and traauayles, it is, for  
20 that if any one fault or blemishe, by fortune be com-  
mitted, eyther by them or the Printer escaped, they  
are blamed, yea, and condemned for ignoraunt men, and  
errour-holders. But nowe we here cease from these  
24 poyntes to trouble the gentle Reader with longer dis-  
coursing, for whose sakes and commodities wee haue

Readers, we haue  
this *Anatomic* of  
The<sup>s</sup>. Vicary,  
reuiued by us.

Though small,  
it is valuable,  
but needs  
discreet use.

\* sign. ¶ vii.

Many men will  
not print in  
English now,

to avoid blame for  
chance mistakes.

<sup>1</sup> All that follows (save 'Vicarie to his Brethren') is in black letter.



## 10 *The Bart.'s Surgeons of 1577 to the Reader.*

Do you correct our  
fautes gently,  
and speak kindly  
of the Author.

\* sign. ¶ vij. bk.

taken these paynes: Wishing that men more skylful  
and better learned, woulde haue borne this burthen for  
vs. Crauing onely this muche at your handes, for to  
correct our fautes fauourably, and to reporte of the 4  
Author courteously, who \*sought (no doubt) your  
commodities onely, and the profite of the common-  
Wealth, without prayse and vayneglory of him selfe.

We commit you  
to God's keeping.

Thus wee, the Chirurgions aforesayde, 8  
commit you to the blessed keeping  
of Almighty God, who always  
defende and increase your  
studies and ours. 12  
Amen.

Lord, make our  
Rulers protect  
godly Artes!

O Lorde which made the loftie Skyes,  
worke in our Rulers hartes,  
Alwayes to haue before their eyes 16  
safegarde to godly Artes.



¶ Thomas Vycarie to  
his Brethren practising  
Chirurgerie.

[sign. ¶ viij.]

[1548]



EEREAFTER foloweth a little  
treatise of the Anatomie of mans  
body, Made by Thomas Vycarie,  
Citizen and Chirurgion of Lon-  
don, for all suche young Brethren  
of his Felowship practising Chi-

This book is for  
young Surgeons,

8  
rurgerie. Not for them that be expertly seene in  
12 the Anatomie: for to them Galen, the Lanterne of all  
Chirurgions, hath set it foorth in his Canons, to the  
high glory of God, and too the erudition and know-  
ledge of al those that be expertly seene and learned in  
16 the noble Science of Chirurgerie. And because al the  
noble Philosophers wryting vpon Chirurgerie \*doo  
condemne al suche persons as practise in Chirurgerie,  
not knowing the Anatomie, Therefore I haue drawn  
20 into certayne Lessons and smal Chapters a parte of the  
Anatomie, but touching a part of euery member par-  
ticulerly: Requiring euery man that shal reade this  
little Treatise, to correct and amende it where it shal

not expert ones.

\* sign. ¶ viij, bk.

They must know  
Anatomy;  
and so I have  
described the  
parte of the body.

24 be neede, and holde me excused for my bolde  
enterprise, and accept my good  
wyl towards the  
same.

[sign. A. J.]

¶ *A breefe Treatise of*the<sup>1</sup> Anatomie of mans body: Com-pyled by me *Thomas Vycarie* Esquire,

and Sargeant Chirurgeon to king

Henry the eyght, for the use and

commoditie of al Vnlearned

Practicioners in Chi-

rurgerie.

[1548]

## [CHAPTER I.]

**I**N the name of God, Amen! Heere I shal declare vnto you shortly and breefly the say-  
 12  
 inges and the determinations of diuers auncient  
 Authors, in three poyntes, very expedient for al men  
 to knowe, that entende to vse or exercise the mysterie  
 or arte of Chirurgerie. The first is, to knowe what  
 13  
 thing Chirurgerie is: The Second is, how that a  
 Chirurgeon should be chosen: And the thirde is, with  
 what properties a Surgion should be indued.

From ancient  
 Authors, I tell  
 you, 1. what  
 Surgery is.  
 2. how to choose  
 a Surgeon.  
 3. his qualities.

**T**HE fyrst is, to know what thing Chirurgerie is. 20  
 Heerein I dō note the saying of *Lamfranke*,  
 whereas he sayth, Al thinges that man \*would  
 knowe, may be knowne by one of these three thinges:  
 That is to say, by his name, or by his working, or els by  
 24  
 his very being and shewing of his owne properties. So  
 then it followeth, that in the same manner we may  
 know what Chirurgerie is by three thinges. First, by  
 his name, as thus, The Interpreters write, that Surgerie 28  
 is deriued oute of these wordes, *Apo tes chiros, cai tou*  
*ergou*, that is too bee vnderstanded, A hand working,

Chirurgery  
 (surgery) is  
 from Greek *cheir*  
 a hand, and *ergon*  
 work.

<sup>1</sup> orig. of the

Ch. I.] *Surgery is Hand-working in Man's Body.* 13

and so it may be taken for al handy artes. But noble  
 Ipcoras sayth, that Surgerie is hande working in mans  
 body; for the very ende and profite of Chirurgerie is  
 4 hande working. Nowe the seconde manner of knowing  
 what thing Chirurgerie is, it is the saying of *Anicen* to  
 be knowen by his beeing, for it is verely a medecinal  
 science: and as Galen sayth, he that wyl knowe the  
 8 certantie of a thing, let him not busy him selfe to  
 knowe only the name of that thing, but also the work-  
 ing and the effect of the same thing. Nowe the thirde  
 way to knowe what thing Chirurgerie is, It is also to  
 12 be knowen by his beeing \*or declaring of his owne  
 properties, the which teacheth vs to worke in mannes  
 body with handes: as thus, In cutting or opening  
 those partes that be whole, and in healing those partes  
 16 that be broken or<sup>1</sup> cut, and in taking away that that is  
 superfluous, as warts, wennes, skurfulas, and other  
 lyke. But further to declare what Galen sayth Sur-  
 gery is, It is the laste instrument of medecine: That is  
 20 to say, Dyet, Pocion, and Chirurgerie: of the whiche  
 three, sayth he, Dyet is the noblest and the most ver-  
 tuous. And thus he sayth, whereas a man may be  
 cured with Dyet onely, let there be given no maner of  
 24 medicine. The seconde instrument is Pocion: for and  
 if a man may be cured with Dyet and Pocion, let there  
 not be ministred any Chirurgerie. The thirde and  
 laste Instrument is Chirurgerie, through whose vertue  
 28 and goodness is remoued and put away many greuous  
 infirmities and diseases, which might not have bene  
 remoued, nor yet put away, neither with Diet nor with  
 Pocion. And by these three meanes it is knowen what  
 32 thing Chirurgerie is. And this suffiseth †for vs for  
 that poynt. Nowe it is knowen what thing Chirurgerie  
 is, there must also be chosen a man apt and mete to  
 minister Surgerie, or to be a Chirurgion. And in this

It is hand-work-  
 ing in man's  
 body,

and also a medi-  
 cinal science.

\* sign. A. U.

It is cutting,  
 healing, and  
 removing  
 excrescences.

It is the last  
 resource,  
 after Diet and  
 Medicine,

and removes  
 grievous diseases  
 which they cannot  
 touch.

† sign. A. U. back.

<sup>1</sup> orig. broke nor

## 14 *The qualities of a Surgeon: good looks, &c.* [Ch. I.

A Surgeon must  
be a temperate  
and well-made  
man.

One with an ugly  
face can't have  
good manners.

He must also keep  
God's commands,  
and have a steady  
hand.

\* sign. A. H.

He must be  
learned, expert,  
clever, and well-  
mannered.

poynt al Authors doo agree, that a Chirurgion should be chosen by his complexion,<sup>1</sup> and that his complexion be very temperate, and al his members wel proportioned. For *Rasis*<sup>2</sup> sayth, Whose face is not seemely, it 4 is vnpossible for him for to haue good manners. And Aristotle, the great Philosopher, writeth in his Epistles to the noble king Alexander (as in those Epistles more playnely doth appeare) howe hee should choose al suche 8 persons as should serue him, by the forme and shape of the face, and al other members of the body. And furthermore they say, he that is of an euill complexion, there must needes folowe like conditions. Wherefore 12 it agreeth that a Chirurgion must be both of a good and temperate complexion, as is afore rehearsed. And principally, that he be a good lyner, and a keeper of the holy commaundements of God, of whom commeth al 16 cunning and grace, and that his body be not quaking, and his hands \*stedfast, his fingers long and smal, and not trembling; and that his left hand be as ready as his right hande, with al his lymmes able to fulfil the 20 good workes of the soula. Nowe here is a man meete to be made a Chirurgion. And thoughte he haue al these good qualities before rehearsed, yet is he no good Chirurgion, but a man very fitte and meete therfore. 24 Now then, to knowe what properties and conditions this man must haue before he be a perfect Chirurgion. And I doo note foure thinges moste specially that euery Chirurgion ought for to haue: The first, that he be 28 learned; the seconde, that he be expert; the thirde, that he be ingenious; the fourth, that he be wel manered. The first (I sayde), he ought to be learned, and that he knowe his principles, not onely in Chirur- 32 gerie, but also in Phisicke, that he may the better defende his Surgery. Also he ought to be seene in

<sup>1</sup> Disposition, habit of body. See p. 18 below.

<sup>2</sup> See Forewords: *Anatomic* section.

Ch. I.] *Surgeons must know Anatomy, & not drink.* 15

natural Philosophie, and in Grammer, that he speake  
congruities in Logike, that teacheth him to proue his  
proportions with good reason. In Rethorike, that  
4 teacheth him to speake seemely and eloquently: also  
in Theorike, that teacheth \*him to knowe thinges  
natural and not natural, & thinges agaynst nature.  
Also he must knowe the Anatomie; for al authors write  
8 against those Surgions that worke in mans body, not  
knowing the Anatomie; for they be likened to a blind  
man that cutteth in a vine tree, for he taketh more or  
lesse than he ought to doo. And here note wel the  
12 saying of Galen, the prince of Philosophers, in his  
Estories, that it is as possible for a Surgion not know-  
ing the Anatomie, to worke in mans body without  
error, as it is for a blind man to carue an Image &  
16 make it perfyte. The .ij. I said, he must be expert;  
for Rasmus sayth, he ought to knowe and to see other  
men work, and after to have vse and exercise. The  
thirde, that he be ingenious or wittie, for al thinges  
20 belonging to Chirurgerie may not be written, nor with  
letters set forth. The fourth, I sayde, that he muste  
be wel manered, and that he haue al these good con-  
ditions here folowing: First, that he be no spous-  
24 breaker, nor no drunkarde. For the Philosophers say,  
amongst all other thinges beware of those persons that  
followe dronkenness, for they be accounted for †no men,  
because they liue a life bestiall: wherfore amongst al  
28 other sortes of people, they ought to be sequestred from  
the ministring of medicine. Likewise a Chirurgion  
must take heede that he deceiue no man with his vague  
promises, for to make of a smal matter a great, because  
32 he woulde be counted the more famous. And amongst  
other thinges, they maye neither be flatterers, nor  
mockers, nor priue backbiters of other men. Likewise  
they muste not be proude, nor presumptuous, nor  
detracters of other men. Likewise they ought not to

He must know  
Natural Philo-  
sophy, Grammer,  
Logie, and  
Rhetoric,

\* sign. A. ij, bk.

and specially  
Anatomy,

as Galen says.

He must not be  
an adulterer or  
drunkard,

† sign. A. ij.  
For drunkards  
are no men,  
but liue a bestial  
life.

He must not  
deceiue,

Neither,

be proud,

# 16 A Surgeon's qualities: Charity, Purity, &c. [Ch. I.

or covetous, be too coustous, nor no nigarde, & namely<sup>1</sup> amongst  
 their freendes, or men of worship; but let them be  
 honest, curteous, and free, both in wordes and deeda.  
 Likewise they shal geue no counsayle except they be 4  
 asked, and then say their aduise by good deliberation;  
 and that they be wel aduised afore they speake, cheffy  
 in the presence of wise men. Likewise they muste be  
 as priue and as secrete as anye Confessour, of al thinges 8  
 that they shal eyther heare or see in the house of their  
 Pacient. They shal not take into their cure any maner  
 of person, except he wyl be obedient vnto \*their pre-  
 ceptes; for he can not be called a pacient, vnlesse he be 12  
 a sufferer. Also that they doo their diligence aswel to  
 the poore as to the riche. They shal neuer discomfort  
 their pacient, and shall commaunde all that be about  
 him that they doo the same; but to his freendes, speake 16  
 truthe, as the case standeth. They must also be bolde  
 in those thinges whereof they be certayne, and as  
 dreadfull in al perilles. They may not chide with the  
 sicke, but be alwayes pleasaunt and mery. They must 20  
 not couet any woman by waye of vylanie, & specially  
 in the house of their Pacient. They shal not, for couet-  
 ousnes of money, take in hande those cures that be  
 vncurable, nor neuer set any certaine day of the sicke- 24  
 mans health, for it lyeth not in their power: folowing  
 the distinct counsayle of Galen, in the amporisme of  
 Ipcras, saying, *Opòrtet seipsum non solum*. By this,  
 Galen meaneth, that to the cure of euery sore there 28  
 belongeth foure thinges: of which, the first and prin-  
 cipal belongeth to God, the second to the Surgion, the  
 thirde to the Medicine, and the fourth to the Pacient.  
 Of the whiche foure, and if any one doo fayle, the 32  
 †Pacient can not be healed: then they, to whom be-  
 longeth but the fourth parte, shal not promise the  
 whole, but bee first wel aduised. They must also be

<sup>1</sup> specially

## Ch. II.] *The Anatomy of the eleuen simple Members.* 17

gracious and good to the poore; and of the rich take liberally for bothe. And see they neuer prayse themselves, for that redoundeth more to their shame and

He must be kind to the poor, and make the rich pay for them.

4 discredite, then to their fame and worship: For a cunning and skilful Chirurgeon needs neuer vaunt of his dooings, for his works wyll euer get credite ynough.

Likewise, that they despise no other Chirurgeon with-  
8 out a great cause; for it is meete that one Chirurgeon should loue another, as Christe loueth vs all. And in

He must not despise other Surgeons.

thus dooing, they shall increase both in vertue & cunning, to the honour of God and worldly

12 fame. To whome he bring vs al.

Amen!

### [CHAPTER II.]

#### ¶ Heereafter foloweth the Anathomie

16 of the simple members.



ND if it be asked you how many simple members<sup>1</sup> there be, it is to be answered, eleuen, and two that be but superfluities  
20 of members; \*and these be they, Bones,

The 11 simple Members, and 2 superfluities.  
\* sign. B. I. bk.

Cartylages, Nerues, Pannykles,<sup>2</sup> Lygaments, Cordes,

<sup>1</sup> Hear Bartholomeus de Glanvilla (*de Proprietatibus Rerum*, in John de Trevisa's English) on Members simple: 'Avicen sayth / that membris bene bodyes made of the fyrst medlyng of humours. Other, as it is sayde secundum Johannem / a membre is a stedfaste and sadde [firm, solid] partie of a beaste, composed of thynges that bene lyke other [or] vnlyke, and is ordeyned to som specyall offyce / And by that that it is called a stedfast partie, it is distinguished from the partie that is not stedfaste / as a spirite. In that that hit is sayde to be made of thynges that ben lyke and vnlyke, hit is vnderstonde double dynersite of membris, simple or vnlyke, and compounded or of office. For the membris ben called / membris lyke and simple / the whose partes be of the same kynde with the holle: as euery partie of bloude is bloude, and so of other. And suche symple membris and lyke, ben rather [earlier] in kynde, than the membris or liumes of office: for the simple ben partis of the liumes that ben compounded. . . The membris and the liumes ben composed to se, to fele, and to mene, and ben instrumentis of the soule, as howe, fote, and eien, and other such that ben nedeful in diuers qualitees to the werkynge of the soule.' Bk. V. ed. Berthelet, 1535 ('the chef d'œuvre of Berthelet's press'), sign. F. ij.

<sup>2</sup> 'Pannicle (*panniculus*, dim. of *pannus*), fine cloth, a little piece of cloth. VICARY.



1st Member:  
The Bone.

Arteirs, Weines, Fatnes, Fleshe and Skinne; and the superfluities be the heares<sup>1</sup> & the nayles. I shal beginne at the Bone, because it is the fundation, and the hardest member of al the body. The Bone is a consimile<sup>2</sup> 4 member, simple and spermatike,<sup>3</sup> and colde and dry of complexion,<sup>4</sup> insensible, and inflexible; and hath diuers formes in mans body, for the diuersitie of helpinga. The cause why there be many bones in mans body, is this: 8 Sometime it is needeful that one member or one lymme should moue without another. Another cause is, that some defende the principal members, as dothe the bone of the brest, and of the head: and some to be the 12 fundation of diuers partes of the body, as the bones of the Ridge,<sup>5</sup> and of the legges: and some to fulyll the hollowe places, as in the handes and feete, &c.

2nd Member:  
The Gristle:

the 6 causes for  
which it was de-  
signed.

The Grystle is a member simple and spermatike, 16 next in hardnes to the bone, and is of complexion colde and drye, and insensible. The grystle was ordeyned for sixe causes or profites that I fynd in it: The first is, that the continual mouing of the hard 20 bone might not be done in a iuncture, but that the grystle should be a meane betweene the Lygament and him: The seconde is, that in the time of concussion or oppression, the softe members or limmes 24

The fleshy pannicle (*panniculus carnosus*), the fleshy membrane or akin, which lies next under the fat of the outward parts, and is the fourth covering that enwraps all the body, from the head to the sole of the foot.—1681. Blount, *Glossographia*.

<sup>1</sup> Excrement (outgrowth), as Shakspeare calls Armado's moustache in *Love's Lab. Lost*, V. i. 112.

<sup>2</sup> Uniform in structure. L. *consimilis*, alike in all parts. Ital. *consimile*, all alike.—Florio. See p. 23, below.

<sup>3</sup> *Spermatick Parts and Vessels*, (in *Anat.*) are those Arteries and Veins which convey the Blood to the Testicles; also those Vessels thro' which the Seed passes: Also all whitish Parts of the Body, which by reason of their Colour, were anciently thought to be made of the Seed; as Bones, Sinews, Gristles, &c.—Kersey's *Phillips's New World of Words*, 1706.

<sup>4</sup> *Complexion*, the Colour of the Face, the Natural Constitution, or Temperature of the Body.—Kersey's *Phillips*.

<sup>5</sup> *Sydne*. A Sax. *Aryce*, the back of a man or beast, a ridge, roof.

• Ch. II.] *The Gristle, Ligaments, Sinews & Nerves.* 19

should not be hurt of the harde: The thirde is, that the extremitie of bones and Ioyntes that be gristly, might the easelyer be folded and moued together with-  
4 out hurt: The fourth is, for that it is necessarie in some meane places to put a grystle, as in the throte bowel<sup>1</sup> for the sounde: The fyfth is, for that it is needeful that some members be holden vp with a  
8 grystle, as the liddes of the eyes: The sixth is, that some limmes haue a sustayning and a drawing abroad, as in the nose and the eares, &c.

The use of  
Gristle.

The Lygament is a member consimple, simple, and  
12 spermatike, next in hardnes to the gristle, and of complexion cold and dry, and is flexible and insensible, and byndeth the bones together. The cause why he is flexible and insensible is this: If it had bene  
16 sensible, he mighte not haue suffred the labour and mouing of the ioynts: and if it had not ben flexible of his bowing, one lymme should not haue moued without another. The se<sup>c</sup>onde profite is, that he be ioynd  
20 with sinews, for to make Cordes & Bawnes: The thirde helpe is, that he be a resting place to some sinewes: The fourth profite is, that by him the members that be within the body be sustayned, as the  
24 matrix and kidneys, and diuers other, &c.

3<sup>rd</sup> Member:  
The Ligament

binds the bones  
together.

\* sign. B. H. bk.

It joins with  
Sinews to make  
Tendons and  
Muscles.

The Sinew is a consimiler member, simple and spermatike, meane betweene harde and softe, and in complexion colde and drye, and he is both flexible and  
28 sensible, strong and tough, hauing his beginning from the braine, or from *Mynuca*, whiche is the marow of the backe. And from the brayne commeth .vij. payre of Nerues sensatiues; and from *Mynuca* commeth .xxx.  
32 payre of Nerues motius, and one that is by him selfe, that springeth of the last spondel. Al these senews haue both feeling and mouing; in some more, and in some lesse, &c.

4<sup>th</sup> Member:  
Sinews.

Sinews start  
from the Braine or  
Spinal Cord.

5<sup>th</sup> Member:  
Nerves.

Nerves of feeling  
spring from the  
Braine: those of  
motion from the  
Spinal Cord.

<sup>1</sup> Windpipe, 'woesen' or wesand. O.Fr. *boel*, L. *botellus*, a sausage, intestine.

## 20 *Of Tendons, Brawns, & Fibres or Will.* [Ch. II.]

6th Member:  
Cords or Tendons

are made from

\* sign. B. 2.

Sinews and Ligaments.

They move the  
Bones as the Will  
directs.

They combine  
with flesh and  
form Muscles,

which divide into  
fibres, and are  
called Will.

\* sign. B. 2, bk.

7th Member:  
Arteries.

A Corde or Tendon<sup>1</sup> is a consimple or official member, compounde and spermatike, synowy, strong, and tough, meanly betweene hardenes and softnes, and meanly sensible and flexible, and in complexion colde 4 and dry. And the Corde or Tendon is thus made: The synewes \*that come from the brayne & from Mynuca, and go to moue the members, is intermingled with the Lygamentes; and when the Synewes and 8 Lygamentes are intermingled together, then is made a corde. And three causes I perceyue why the Cordes were made: The fyrst is, that the Synewe alone is so sensible that he may not suffer the great labour and 12 trauel of mouing, without the felowship and strength of the Lygament that is insensibile, and that letteth his great feeling, and bringeth him to a perfect temperaunce, and so the Cordes moue the limmes to the wil 16 of the soule. And this Corde is associated with a simple flesh, and so therof is made a brawne or a muskel, on whom he might rest after his trauel. And this Brawne is called a Muskle. Then when this 20 Corde is entred into this brawne, he is departed into many smal threeds, the whiche be called 'wylle.'<sup>2</sup> And this wyl hath three properties: The fyrst is in length, by whose vertue that draweth, it hath might: The 24 seconde<sup>3</sup> in breadth, by whome the vertue that casteth out hath might: The third in thwartnes, in whom the vertue \*that holdeth hath might: and at the ende of the Brawne those threedes be gathered to make another 28 muskel, &c.

Nowe I wyl begynne at the Artera.<sup>4</sup> This Artere

<sup>1</sup> *Tendon* (Lat. in *Anat.*) is a similar [homogeneous] nervous Part, joyn'd to Muscles and Bones, by which the voluntary Motion of the Members is chiefly performed.—1706. Kersey. *Official* must be 'having an office or function.'

<sup>2</sup> Seemingly identifying the fibres by which the Will acts, with the Will itself: 'so the Cordes moue the limmes to the wil of the soule.'

<sup>3</sup> *orig. secunda.*

<sup>4</sup> *Arteria* (Gr. in *Anat.*), an Artery: The Arteries are those hollow skinny

## Ch. II.] *Arteries from Heart, & Veins from Liver.* 21

- is a member consimyle, simple and spermatike, hol-  
lowe and synowy, hauing his springing from the hart,  
bringing from the harte to euey member, blood and  
4 spirite of lyfe. It is of complexion cold and drye. And  
al these Arteres haue two cotes, except one that goth  
to the Lunge, and he hath but one cote that spreadeth  
abrode in the Lungs, and bringeth with him to the  
8 Lunge blood, with the spirite of lyfe to nourishe the  
Lunge withal: and also that Artere bringeth with him  
from the lunges ayre to temper the fumous heate that  
is in the harte. And this Artere is he that is called  
12 *Arteria venalis*, because he hath but one cote as a  
wayne, and is more obedient to be delated abroad  
through al the lunges, because that the blood might the  
sooner sweate through him: wheras al other Arters  
16 haue two cotes, because one cote may not withstande  
the might and power of the spirit of life. Diuers  
other causes there be, which shal be declared in \*the  
Anathomie of the brest, &c.
- 20 The Veyne<sup>1</sup> is a symple member, in complexion  
colde and drye, and spermatike, like to the Artere,  
hauing his beginning from the Lyuer, and bringing  
from the Lyuer nutritiue blood, to nourishe euey  
24 member of the body with. And it is so to be vnder-  
standed, that there is no more difference betweene these  
two vessels of blood, but that the Artere is a vessel of  
blood spiritual or v<sup>ital</sup>. And the Veyne is a vessel  
28 of blood nutrimental, of the which Veynes there is

Arteries spring  
from the heart,  
and carry life-  
blood to every  
limb.

All Arteries haue  
2 coats,

save *Arteria  
Venalis*, and that  
has but one.

\* sign. B. 4.

24 Member:  
Veins.

Veins spring from  
the Liver,

and differ from  
Arteries only in  
carrying nutri-  
mental blood,  
while Arteries  
carry vital blood.

Vessels like Veins, in which the most thin and hottest part of the Blood, together with the Vital Spirits, pass thro' the Body.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>1</sup> *Veins* (in *Anat.*) are long and round Canals or Pipes which consist of four Coats, viz. a Nervous, a Glandulous, a Muscular, and a Membranous one; their Office being to receive the Blood that remains after the Nourishment is taken, and to carry it back to the Heart to be revived and improved: These Veins have several Names according to the different Parts they pass thro'; as the *Axillary*, the *Basilick*, the *Cephalick*, the *Hepatick*, the *Pulmonary*, &c.—1706. Kersey.

## 22 The 2 chief Veins. *Flesh & its Functions.* [Ch. II.]

The chief Veins  
are *Vena Porta*  
and *Venacalis* or  
*Vena Cava*.

noted two most principal, of the which one is called  
*vena porta*;<sup>1</sup> the other is called *venacalis*, of whom it  
is too much to treat of now, vntyll we come to the  
anathomie of the wombe, &c. 4

9th Member:  
Flesh.

Of flesh are 3  
kinds;  
1. soft;  
2. brawny;  
3. knotty.

\* sign. B. 4, bk.

Flesh is like  
clothes to the  
body.

Simple flesh fills  
up hollows.

Glandulous flesh  
gives blood its  
colour,

and makes spittle.

The flesh is a consimiler member, simple, not sper-  
matike, and is ingendred of blood congeled by heate,  
and is in complexion hote and moyest. Of the which  
is noted three kindes of fleshes; that is to say, one is 8  
soft & pure fleshe: the seconde is musculus, or hard  
& brawny<sup>2</sup> flesh: the thirde is glandulus, knotty, or  
kurnelly fleshe. Also the commodities of the fleshe be  
indifferent, for some be common to \*euery kinde of 12  
fleshe, and some be proper to one maner of fleshe  
alone. The profytes of the fleshe be many; for some  
defende the bodye from colde, as dothe clothes: also  
it defendeth the body from harde thinges comming 16  
agaynst it: also through his moysture he rectifieth  
the body in sommer, in time of great heate. Where-  
fore it is to be considered what profitableness is in  
euery kinde of fleshe by him selfe. And fyrst of 20  
simple and pure fleshe, whiche fulylleth the con-  
cavities of voyde places, and causeth good forme and  
shape: and this fleshe is founde betweene the teeth,  
and on the ende of the yarde. The profite of the 24  
Brawny fleshe, or musculus fleshe, shal be spoken of  
in the Anathomie of the armea. The profites of the  
Glandulus fleshe are these: First, that it turneth the  
blood into a cullour like to him selfe, as doth the 28  
fleshe of a womans pape turne the menstrual blood into  
mylke: secondly, the Glandulus fleshe of the Testikles  
turneth the blood into sparne: thirdly, the Glandulus  
flesh of the cheekes, that ingendreth the spittle, &c. 32

<sup>1</sup> *Vena Porta*, the Port-Vein, which takes Name from the two Eminences  
call'd by Hippocrates *pulsi*, i. e. *Porta* or *Gates*, between which it enters the  
Liver.—1706. Kersey. *Venacalis* is '*Vena Cava*, the largest Vein in the  
body.'—ib.

<sup>2</sup> *Brawny*, full of Brawn or Sinews.—Kersey.

## Ch. II.] 3 kinds of Fat. Two kinds of Skin. Hair. 23

The next is of Fatnes, of the whiche \*I finde three  
 kindes: The firste is *Pinguedo*, and it is a consimilar<sup>1</sup>  
 member, not spermatike, and it is made of a subtyl  
 4 portion of blood congeled by colde: and it is of com-  
 plexion colde and moyst, insensible, and is intermedled  
 amongst the partes of the fleshe. The seconde is  
*Adeppes*,<sup>2</sup> and is of the same kinde as is *Pinguedo*, but  
 8 it is departed from the fleshe besydes the skinne, and  
 it is as an oyle, heating and moysting the skinne.  
 The thirde is *Auxingia*,<sup>3</sup> and it is of kinde as the others  
 be, but he is departed from the fleshe withinforth  
 12 about the kidneys, and in the intrayles, and it helpeth  
 both the kidneys and the intrayles from drying by his  
 vntiositie, &c.

\* sign. C. J.  
 10th Member:  
 Fatnes.  
 Fat is of 3 kinds:

1. blood congealed  
 by cold;

2. an oil moisten-  
 ing the skin;

3. greasing the  
 kidneys.

Then come we to the Skinne. The Skinne is a  
 16 consimile member or official, partely spermatike, strong  
 and tough, flexible and sencible, thinne and temperate,  
 Wherof there be two kindes: One is the Skinne that  
 couereth the outwarde members: and the other the  
 20 inner members, whiche is called a Pannicle, the profit-  
 ableness of whome was spoken of in the laste Lesson:  
 But the Skinne is properlye wouen \* of Threedes, Nerues,  
 Veynes, and Arteirs. And he is made temperate,  
 24 because he should be a good deemer of heate from  
 colde, and of moystnes from drynes, that there shoulde  
 nothing noye nor hurt the body, but it geueth warning  
 to the common wittes thereof, &c.

11th Member:  
 Skin.

Skin is of 2 kindes:

1. external;

2. internal,  
 membrane.

\* sign. C. J. bk.

It warms the Wits,  
 of hurtful things.

28 The Heyres of euery part of mans body are but

Superficially L.  
 Hair.

<sup>1</sup> *Similar Parts or Simple Parts*, (in *Anat.*) those Parts of the Body that are throughout of the same Nature and Frame; as the Flesh, Bones, Veins, Arteries, Nerves, &c.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Adeps*, (*Lat.*) Fat, Tallow, Grease: Among Anatomists, it is consider'd as a similar Part of the Body, differing in this respect from *Pinguedo*, that it is a thicker, harder, and more earthy Substance, which flows from the Blood thro' peculiar Vessels into certain Baggs or Bladders that receive it.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Auxingia* (*axle, wago*), that which beamears the axle, waggon-grease, fat.—Riddle. 'The Grease or Swarf in the Axle-tree of a Wheel; the Fat or Tallow of an Hog, Boars-Grease.'—Kersey.

## 24 *Hair & Nails. Head, the abode of Soul.* [Ch. III.]

Hair is made of  
fume from viscoue  
matter.

a superfluitie of members, made of the grosse fume or smoke passing out of the viscoue matter, thickened to the forme of heyre. The profitableness of him is declared in the Anathomie of the head, &c.

4

*Superfluitie II.*

Nails come from  
fume too,

The Nayles likewise are a superfluitie of members, engendred of great earthly smoke or fume resolved through the natural heate of humours, and is softer then the Bone, & harder then the Fleshe. In complexion they be colde and drye, and are alwayes waxing in the extremitie of the fyngers and toes. The vtilitie of them are, that by them a man shal take the better holde: also they helpe to clawe the body when it needeth: Lastly, they helpe to deuide thinges, for lacke of other tooles, &c.

and grow at the  
ende of fyngers and  
toes.

### [CHAPTER III.]

\* sign. C. 3.

#### ¶ *Heereafter foloweth the*

16

Anathomie of the compound members, and first of the head.

The Head is the  
abode of the  
reasonable Soul.

**B**Ecause the head of man is the habitation or dwelling place of the reasonable soule of man, therefore, with the grace of God, I shal fyrst speake of the Anatomie of the head. Galen saith in the seconde Chapter *De iuuamentis*,<sup>1</sup> and Auicen rehearseth the same in hys fyrst preposition and third Chapter, prouing that the Head of man was made neither for Wittes, nor yet for the Braynes, but onely for the eyes. For beastes that haue no heades, haue the orgayne or instrumentes of Wittes in their bresta. Therefore God 28 and nature haue reared vp the head of man onely for the eyes, for it is the hiest member of man: and as a beholder or watchman standeth in a high Towre to geue warning of the Enemies, so doth the Eye of man 32

Beastes with no  
heades haue their  
wits in their  
bresta.

<sup>1</sup> *Juvamentis, orig. iuuamentes.*

# Ch. IIL.] 5 things outside the Head: Hair; Skin. 25

geue warning vnto the common Wittes, for the defence of all other members of the body. Nowe to our purpose.

If the question be asked, how many things be there

4 \*conteyning on the head, and howe many thinges con-

tayned within the head? As it is rehearsed by Guydo,

there bee but fyue conteyning, and as many contained:

as thus, The Heyre, the Skinne, the Flesh, the Pan-

8 nicles, and the Bone, neither rehearsing Veyne nor

Artera. The which Anathomie can not be truly

without them both, as thou shalt wel perceiue both in

this Chapter, but specially in the next. And nowe in

12 this lesson I shall speake but of Heire, Skinne, Fleshe,

Veines, Pannicles, and Bones, what profite they doo to

man, euery of them in his kinde.

Of the Heire of the head (whose creation is known

16 in the Anatomie of the simple members) I doo note foure

vtilities why it was ordeyned: the fyrst is, that it de-

fendeth the Brayne from too muche heate, and too muche

colde, and many other outwarde noyances: The seconde

20 is, it maketh the forme or shape of the head to seeme

more seemelyer or beautyfuller. For if the head were

not heyred, the face and the heade should seeme but one

thing; and therefore the heyre formeth and shapeth the

24 head from the face: The thirde is, that \*by the cullour

of the heyre is witnesed & knowne the complexion

of the Brayne: The fourth is, that the fumosities of

the brayne might assend and passe lyghtlyer out by

28 them. For if there were a sad thing, as the skinne or

other, of the same nature as the heyre is, the fumosities

of the brayne might not haue passed throwe it so

lightly, as it doth by the heyre.

32 The Skinne of the head is more lazartus,<sup>1</sup> thicker,

and more porrus than any other Skinne of any other

member of the body. And two causes I note why:

One is, that it keepeth or defendeth the brayne from

36 too muche heate and colde, as doth the heyre: The

\* sign. C. ij. bk.

Guydo says there are 5 things outside the head, and 5 inside.

The 5 outside, are,

1. Hair, which

protects the brain

and adorns the head,

\* sign. C. 2.

and lets out the fumosities of the brain.

[<sup>1</sup> leucosteus, brawny.]

2. Skin, more muscular, thicker and more porous than on any other part,



## 26 *The Pericranium, & Skin & Flesh over it.* [Ch. III.]

other, it discusseth to the common wittes of al thinges that noyeth outwardly, for the heyre is insensible: The thirde cause why the skinne of the head is more thicker then any other skinne of the body, is this, that it 4 keepeth the brayne the more warme, and is the better fence for the brayne, and it bindeth and keepeth the bones of the head the faster together.

to keep the brain warm.

2. Muscular Flesh, made of thin fibres,

\* sign. C. 2. 14.

to comfort the digestion of near members.

Next followeth the Fleshe, the which is al Mus- 8 culus or Lazartus fleshe, lying vpon *pericranium* without meane.<sup>1</sup> \* And it is made of subtile Wylle, and of simple fleshe, Synewes, Veines, & Arteira. And why the fleshe that is al musculus or lazartus in euery 12 member of a mans body was made, is for three causes: the fyrst is, that by his thicknes he shoulde comforte the digestion of other members that lye by him: The seconde is, that through him euery member is made 16 the more formelyer, and taketh the better shape: The thirde is, that by his meanes euery member of the body draweth to him norishing, the which others withholdeth to put forth from them: as it shal be 20 more playnlyer spoken of in the Anathomie of the wombe.

4. *Pericranium*,

with a vein and artery under it,

taking nourishment to the brain.

Next followeth *Pericranium*,<sup>2</sup> or the couering of the bones of the head. But heere it is to be noted of a 24 Veyne and an Artere that commeth betweene the flesh and this *Pericranium*, that nourisheth the vtter part of the head, and so entreth priuily through the commissaries<sup>3</sup> of the skul, bearing to the Brayne and to his 28 Pannikles nourishing: of whose sustaunce is made bothe *Duramater*, and also *Pericranium*, as shall be

<sup>1</sup> Intervening medium. *Lazartus* is *lacertus*, brawny, muscful.

<sup>2</sup> *Pericranium*, (*Gr.* in *Anat.*) a Membrane or Skin that lies under the thick hairy Skin of the Head, and immediately covers the whole Scull, except just where the Temporal Muscles lie.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Commissure*, a joyning close, or conching of Things together; a Closure or Seam: In *Anatomy*, the Mould of the Head, where the Parts of the Scull are united.—1706. Kersey. For *Duramater*, see note 4, p. 23.

### Ch. III.] *Duramater and the 7 Bones of the Skull.* 27

declared in the partes conteyned in the head. Here \*it

\* sign. C. 4.

is to be noted of this Pannikle, Pericranium, that it bindeth or compasseth al the bones of the head, vnto

4 whom is adioyned the Duramater, and is also a part of his substaunce, howbeit they be separated, for Duramater is nerer y<sup>e</sup> brayne, and is vnder the skull. This

*Duramater is part of it, and is under the skull.*

Pericranium was made principally for two causes: one is, that for his strong bynding together he should make firme and stable the feeble commissaries or seames of the bones of the head: The other cause is, that it should be a meane betweene the harde bone and the

12 softe fleshe.

Nexte is the Bone of the Pot of the head keeping in the Braynes, of which it were too long to declare their names after al Authors, as they number them

5. Skull, which

16 and their names; for some name them after the Greeke tongue, and some after the Arabian; but in conclusion, al is to one purpose. And they be numbred seuen

has 7 bones:

bones in the pan or skul of the head: the fyrst is

20 called the Coronal bone, in which is y<sup>e</sup> Orbyts or holes of the Eyes, and it reacheth from the Browes vnto the middest of the head, and there it meteth with the seconde bone called Occipissial,<sup>1</sup> a \*bone of the hinder

1. Coronal,

\* sign. C. 4, bk.

2. Occipital,

24 part of the head called the Noddel of the head, which two bones, Coronal and Occipissiale, be deuided by the Commissaries<sup>2</sup> in the middes of the head. The thirde

III. iv. Parietal (side bones),

and fourth bones be called Parietals,<sup>2</sup> and they be the 28 bones of the sideling parts of the head, and they be deuided by the Commissories<sup>2</sup> both from the foresayde Coronal and Occipissial. The fyfth and the syxth

<sup>1</sup> *Occipitis Os*, the Occipital Bone, a Bone of the Scull, which lies in the hinder part of the Head; being shap'd almost like a Losenge, with its lower angle turned inwards.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Parietals*, or *Parietal Bones*, (in *Anat.*) two Bones of the fore part of the Head, which are the thinnest in the Scull, and almost of a square figure.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Sutures*. See note 3, p. 26.

## 28 *Bones of Head. 5 things inside Head.* [Ch. IV.]

v. vi. *Petrose*  
(temporal),

vii. *Paxillary*  
(*Sphenoid*),  
which wedges the  
others together.

These are the 7  
Head-bones.

bones be called *Petrose*<sup>1</sup> or *Mendosa*<sup>2</sup>: and these two bones lye ouer the bones called *Parietales*, on euery side of the head one, lyke skales, in whom be y<sup>e</sup> holes of the eares. The seuenth and last of the head is 4 called *Paxillarie*, or *Bazillarie*; <sup>3</sup> the whiche bone is, as it were, a wedge vnto all the other seuen bones of the head, and doth fasten them together. And thus be all numbred: the first is the Coronal bone, the seconde 8 is the Occipissial, the thirde and the fourth is *Parietales*, the fyfth and the sixth is *Petrose* or *Mendosa*, and the seuenth is *Paxillari*, or *Bazillari*. And this suffiseth for the fyue thinges conteyning. 12

### [CHAPTER IV.]

\* sign. D. J.

\*¶ *In this Chapter is declared the fine thinges conteyned within the head.* 16

The 5 things inside the Head:

**N**Ext vnder the bones of the head withinfoorth, the first thing that appeareth is *Duramater*; then is *Piamater*; then the substaunce of the *Brayne*; and then *Verny-formes* and *Retemirabile*. But first to 20 speake of *Duramater*,<sup>4</sup> whereof and howe it is sprong and made: First, it is to be noted of the *Veins* and

<sup>1</sup> *Petroseum Os*, (in *Anat.* i. e. the rocky Bone) the inner Process of the Bones of the Temples, so call'd by reason of its Hardness and Craggedness.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Mendosa Sutura*, or *Squamen Sutura*, (in *Anat.*) a scaly joining together of Bones; as in the Bones of the Temples, and those of the Fore-part of the Head.—Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Basilare Os*, (in *Anat.*) the same with *Sphenoides*, a Bone of the *Cranium* common both to the Scull and upper Jaw. It is seated in the middle of the Basis of the Scull, and is joyn'd to all the Bones of the *Cranium* by the *Sphenoidal Suture*, except in the middle of its Sides, where it is continued to the *Ossa Petrose*, as if they were but one Bone.—Kersey. See note 2, p. 44.

<sup>4</sup> *Mater Dura*, or *Mentax Crassa*, (in *Anat.*) a Membrane or Skin, that sticks close to the Scull on the inside, in some Places, and mediately covers the Brain, and the *Cerebellum* or lesser Brain; having four Cavities, or hollow Parts, which supply the place of Veins.—Kersey.

### Ch. III.] *Duramater and the 7 Bones of the Skull.* 27

declared in the partes conteyned in the head. Here \*it  
 is to be noted of this Pannikle, Pericranium, that it  
 bindeth or compasseth al the bones of the head, vnto  
 4 whom is adioyned the Duramater, and is also a part of  
 his substaunce, howbeit they be separated, for Dura-  
 mater is nerer y<sup>e</sup> brayne, and is vnder the skull. This  
 Pericranium was made principally for two causes: one  
 8 is, that for his strong bynding together he should make  
 firme and stable the feeble commissaries or seames of  
 the bones of the head: The other cause is, that it  
 shoulde be a meane betweene the harde bone and the  
 12 softe fleshe.

Nexte is the Bone of the Pot of the head keeping  
 in the Braynes, of which it were too long to declare  
 their names after al Authors, as they number them  
 16 and their names; for some name them after the Greeke  
 tongue, and some after the Arabian; but in conclusion,  
 al is to one purpose. And they be numbred seuen  
 bones in the pan or skul of the head: the fyrst is  
 20 called the Coronal bone, in which is y<sup>e</sup> Orbyts or holes  
 of the Eyes, and it reacheth from the Browes vnto the  
 middest of the head, and there it meteth with the  
 seconde bone called Occipissial,<sup>1</sup> a \*bone of the hinder  
 24 part of the head called the Noddell of the head, which  
 two bones, Coronal and Occipissiale, be deuided by the  
 Commissaries<sup>2</sup> in the middes of the head. The thirde  
 and fourth bones be called Parietales,<sup>3</sup> and they be the  
 28 bones of the sideling parts of the head, and they be  
 deuided by the Commissories<sup>3</sup> both from the foresayde  
 Coronal and Occipissial. The fyfth and the syxth

\* sign. C. 4.

*Duramater is part of it, and is under the skull.*

1. Skull, which

has 7 bones:

1. Coronal.

\* sign. C. 4. bk.

2. Occipital,

3. 1v. Parietal (side bones),

<sup>1</sup> *Occipitis Os*, the Occipital Bone, a Bone of the Scull, which lies in the hinder part of the Head; being shap'd almost like a Losenge, with its lower angle turned inwards.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Parietals*, or *Parietal Bones*, (in *Anat.*) two Bones of the fore part of the Head, which are the thinnest in the Scull, and almost of a square figure.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Sutures*. See note 3, p. 26.

## 28 *Bones of Head. 5 things inside Head.* [Ch. IV.

v. vi. *Petrosa*  
(temporal),

vii. *Paxillary*  
(Sphenoid),  
which wedges the  
others together.

These are the 7  
Head-bones.

bones be called *Petrosa*<sup>1</sup> or *Mendosa*<sup>2</sup>: and these two bones lye ouer the bones called *Parietales*, on euery side of the head one, lyke akales, in whom be y<sup>e</sup> holes of the eares. The seuenth and last of the head is 4 called *Paxillarie*, or *Bazillarie*; <sup>3</sup> the whiche bone is, as it were, a wedge vnto all the other seuen bones of the head, and doth fasten them together. And thus be all numbred: the first is the Coronal bone, the seconde 8 is the Occipissial, the thirde and the fourth is *Parietales*, the fyfth and the sixth is *Petrosa* or *Mendosa*, and the seuenth is *Paxillari*, or *Bazillari*. And this suffiseth for the fyue thinges conteyning. 12

### [CHAPTER IV.]

\* sign. D. J.

\*¶ *In this Chapter is declared the fine thinges conteyned within the head.* 16

The 5 thinges inside the Head:

**N**Ext vnder the bones of the head withinfoorth, the first thing that appeareth is *Duramater*; then is *Piamater*; then the substance of the *Brayne*; and then *Vermiformes* and *Retemirabile*. But first to 20 speake of *Duramater*,<sup>4</sup> whereof and howe it is sprong and made: First, it is to be noted of the *Veine* and

<sup>1</sup> *Petrosum Os*, (in *Anat.* i. e. the rocky Bone) the inner Process of the Bones of the Temples, so call'd by reason of its Hardness and Craggedness.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Mendosa Sutura*, or *Squamen Sutura*, (in *Anat.*) a scaly joining together of Bones; as in the Bones of the Temples, and those of the Fore-part of the Head.—Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Basillare Os*, (in *Anat.*) the same with *Sphenoides*, a Bone of the *Cranium* common both to the Scull and upper Jaw. It is seated in the middle of the Basis of the Scull, and is joyn'd to all the Bones of the *Cranium* by the *Sphenoidal Suture*, except in the middle of its Sides, where it is continued to the *Ossa Petrosa*, as if they were but one Bone.—Kersey. See note 2, p. 44.

<sup>4</sup> *Mater Dura*, or *Meninx Crassa*, (in *Anat.*) a Membrane or Skin, that sticks close to the Scull on the inside, in some Places, and mediately covers the Brain, and the *Cerebellum* or lesser Brain; having four Cavities, or hollow Parts, which supply the place of Veins.—Kersey.

# Ch. IV.] *Ventricles of the Brain, & their Powers.* 31

sages that are called *Meates*,<sup>1</sup> through whom passeth the spirit of life too and fro. But here ye shal note that euery Ventrikle is diuided into two partes; and in  
 4 euery parte God hath ordeyned and set singular and seuerall vertues, as thus: First, in the foremost Ventrikle God hath founded and set the common Wittes, otherwise called the fyue Wittes, as Hearing, Seeing,  
 8 Feeling, Smelling, and tasting. And also there is in one part of this Ventrikle, the vertue \*that is called Fantasie, and he taketh al the formes or ordinaunces that be disposed of the fyue wittes, after the meaning  
 12 of sensible thinges: In the other parte of the same Ventrikle is ordeyned and founded the Imaginative vertue, the whiche receyueth of the common Wittes the fourme or shape of sensitiue thinges, as they were  
 16 receyueth of the common wittes withoutfoorth, representing their owne shape and ordinaunces vnto the memoratiue vertue. In the middest sel or ventrikle there is founded and ordeyned the Cogitative or estim-  
 20 ative vertue: for he rehearseth, sheweth, declareth, and deemeth those thinges that be offered vnto him by the other that were spoken of before. In the thirde Ventrikle, and last, there is founded and ordeyned the  
 24 vertue Memoratiue: in this place is registred and kept those thinges that are done and spoken with the senses, and keepeth them in his treasure vnto the putting  
 28 instrumentes of animal workes, out of whose extremities or lower partes springeth Mynuca, or marowe of the spondels: of whom it shall \*be spoken of in the Anatomie of the necke and backe. Furthermore, it is to be  
 32 noted that from the foremost Ventrikle of the brayne springeth seuen payre of sensatiue or feeling senews, the which be produced to the Eyes, the Eares, the

each diuided into 2 parts.

In the foremost Ventrikle are the Five Wittes,

\* sign. D. 11.  
also the Fancy,

and the Imagination.

In the 2nd or middle Ventrikle is Thought.

In the 3rd Ventrikle is the Memory.

\* leaf D. 11. 11.

From the foremost Ventrikle spring 7 pair of sensitive Sinews.

<sup>1</sup> L. *Meatus*, a Passage or Way; also the Pores of the Body.—Kersey.

## 32 *Brain: Vermiformis & Rete Mirabile.* [Ch. IV.]

Nose, the Tounge, and to the Stomack, and to diuers other partes of the body: as it shal be declared in their anatomies.

4. *Vermiformis.*

5. *Rete mirabile*  
or caule, which

turns the vital  
spirite into animal.

In this Caul the  
Brain is enclosed.  
\* leaf D. 4.

The Brain is the  
Governor or  
Treasury of the  
5 Whs.

Also it is to bee noted, that aboute the middest 4 ventrikle is the place of Vermiformis,<sup>1</sup> with curnelly fleashe that filloth; and Retemirabile,<sup>2</sup> or wonderful caule vnder the Pannicles, is sette or bounded with Arteirs onely, whiche come from the harte, in the 8 whyche the vitayle spirite, by his great labour is turned and made animal. And ye shal vnderstande, that these two be the best kept partes of al the body; for a man shal rather dye, then any of these should suffer any 12 manner of greeses from withoutfoorth; and therefore God hath set them farre from the hart. Heere I note the saying of Haly Abbas,<sup>3</sup> of the comming of smal Arteirs from the hart, of whom (sayth he) is made a 16 marceylous net or caule, in the which caule is inclosed the \*Brayne, and in that place is layde the spirite of feeling; from that place hath the spirite of feeling his first creation, and from thence passeth to other mem- 20 bers, &c. Furthermore, ye shal vnderstand that the brayne is a member colde and moyst of complexion, thinne, and meanely<sup>4</sup> viscous, and a principal member, and an official member, and spermatike. And fyrst, 24 why he is a principal member, is, because he is the gouernour or the treasure of the fyue wittes: And why he is an official member, is, because he hath the effect of feeling and stering: And why he is colde and moyst, 28 is, that he shoulde, by his coldnes and moystnes, abate and temper the exceeding heate and drought that com-

<sup>1</sup> *Vermiformis Processus*, (in *Anat.*) a prominence or bunching Knob of the *Cerebellum*, or lesser Brain, so nam'd from its Shape.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Rete*, (Lat.) a Net. . . In *Anatomy*, the same as *Omentum*, or the Caul. . .

*Rete Mirabile*, a fine *Plexus*, or Weaving together of many small Arteries in the Brain, especially of brute Beasts; so call'd by reason of its admirable Structure.—Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> See the account of him in the Forewords.

<sup>4</sup> moderately.

Ch. IV.] *Galen's advice. The Brain and the Moon.* 33

meth from the harte: Also, why he is moyst, is, that it should be the more indifferenter and abler to euery thing that shoulde be reserued or gotten into him:  
 4 Also, why it is soft, is, that it should geue place and fauour to the vertue of stering: And why it is meanelly viscous, is, that his senewes should be strong and meanelly toughe, and that they shoulde not be letted in  
 8 their working throughe his ouermuche hardnes. Heere Galen \*demaundeth a question, which is this, Whether that feeling and mouing bee brought to Nerues by one or by diuers? or whether the aforesayde thing be  
 12 brought substancially or radically. The matter (sayth he) is so harde to searche and be vnderstoode, that it were much better to let it alone and passe ouer it. Aristotle, intreating of the Brayne, sayth: The Brayne  
 16 is a member continually mouing and ruling al other members of the body, gouing vnto them both feeling and mouing; for if the Brayne be let,<sup>1</sup> al other members be let: and if the Brayne be wel, then al other  
 20 members [of] the body be the better disposed. Also the brayne hath this propertie, that it moueth and followeth the mouing of the Moone: for in the waxing of the Moone, the Brayne followeth vpwardes; and in the  
 24 wane of the Moone, the brayne descendeth downwardes, and vanisheth in substance of vertue: for then the Brayne shrinketh together in it selfe, and is not so fully obedient to the spirit of feeling. And this is  
 28 proud in menne that be lunatike or madde, and also in men that be epulentike,<sup>2</sup> or hauing the falling sickness, that \*be moste-greoued in the beginning of the newe Moone, and in the latter quarter of the Moone.  
 32 Wherefore (sayth Aristotle) when it happeneth that the Brayne is eyther too drye or too moyst, then can it not worke his kinde: for then is the body made colde: then are the spirites of lyfe melted and resolued away:

Cause of the qualities of the Brain.

\* leaf D. 4, back.

Galen's wise advice about a puzzling question!

Let it alone!

The Brain rules all the other members of the body.

It follows the moving of the Moon,

rising and falling with it,

as lunatics and epileptics prove.

\* sign. R. J.

<sup>1</sup> hindered, stoppt.

<sup>2</sup> epileptic.



### 34 *The Face, Forehead, Brows and Eyelids.* [Ch. V.]

and then foloweth feebleness of the wittes, and of al other members of the body, and at the laste death.

#### [CHAPTER V.]

#### ¶ *Heercafter foloweth the*

4

#### Anatomic of the Face.

The Forehead

**T**HE Front or the Forhead conteyneth nothing but the Skinne and Musculus fleshe, for the panicle vnderneath it is of Pericranium, and 8 the bone is of the Coronal bone. Howebeit there it is made bronde, as yf ther were a double bone, whiche maketh the forme of the Browea. It is called the Forhead or Front, from one Eare to the other, and 12 from the rootes of the Eares of the head before, vnto y<sup>e</sup> browea. But the cause why the Browes were set \* and reared vp, was, that they shoulde defende the Eyes from noyaunce withoutfoorth: And they be ordeyned with 16 heare, to put by the humour or sweat that cometh from the head. Also the Browes do helpe the Eyelidde,<sup>1</sup> and do beautifie and make fayre the face; for he that hath not his Browes heyred, is not seemely. And Aris- 20 tole sayth, that ouer measurable Browes betokeneth an enuious man: Also high browes and thicke betokeneth hardnes: and browes with little heare betokeneth cowardnes: and meanly, signifieth gentlenes 24 of hart. Incisions about these partes ought to be done according to the length of the body, for there the Muscle goeth from one Eare to the other. And there, if any incision should be made with the length of the 28 Muscle, it might happen the Browe to hang ouer the Eye without remedie, as it is many times seene, the

stretches from ear to ear.

\* sign. E. J. back.

It protects the eyes, and helps the Eyelids to adorn the face.

The Browes mark men's characters.

Incisions in these partes must be made lengthwise.

<sup>1</sup> See Shakspeare on eyelids: *Lucrece*, 366-9; *The Tempest*, 'fringed curtains of thine eyes,' &c., but specially *Cymbeline*, II. II. 19-23:

'... her lids,  
... these windows, white and azure, lac'd  
With blue of heaven's own tinct.'

more pitie! The browes be called *Supercilium* in Latin; and vnder, is the Eye liddes, which is called *Cilium*, and is garnished with heyres. Two causes I

- 4 finde why the eye-liddes were ordeyned: The fyrst is, that they shoulde keepe and defende the Eye from \*duste and other outwarde noyances: the seconde is, when the eye is weery or heauy, then they should be 8 couered, and take rest vnderneath them. Why the heyres were ordeyned in them, is, that by them is addressed the formes or similitudes of visible thinges vnto the apple of the eye.

The Eyelids keep the eye from dust, &c.

\* sign. R. 3.

and take forme of thinges to the Apple of the Eye.

- 12 The Eare is a member semely and grystlye, able to be folden without, and is the orgayne or instrument of hearing: It is of complexion colde and drye. But why the eare was set vp out of the head, is this, that the 16 soundes that be very fugitiue should lurke and abyde vnder his shadowe, tyl it were taken of the instrumentes of hearing: Another cause is, that it should keepe the hole that it standeth ouer, from thinges falling in, that 20 might hinder the hearing. The senewes that are the Orgayns or Instrumentes of hearing, spring each from the Brayne, from whence the seuen payre of senewes do spring; & when they come to the hole of the Eare, 24 there they writhe lyke a wyne presse; and at the endes of them there be like the head of a worrne, or like a little teat, in whiche is receyned the sounde, and so caried to the common \*wittes.

The Ear is the organ of hearing.

thro' sinews that come from the brain:

these twist like a wine-press, and have a teat at their end, to receive sound.

\* sign. R. 3. bk.

- 28 The Eyes be nexte of nature vnto the Soule: for in the Eye is scene and knowen the disturbances & greefes, gladnes and ioyes of the Soule, as loue, wrath, and other passions. The Eyes be the instrumentes 32 of sight. And they bee compounde and made of ten thinges: that is to say, of seuen Tunicles<sup>1</sup> or Cotes, and of three humours. Of the whiche (sayth Galen)

The Eyes are made of 7 Tunicles and 3 Humours.

<sup>1</sup> *Tunick* or *Tunicle* (in *Anat.*), a little Coat, Membrane, or Skin, covering any part of the Body: of these there are four noted ones that belong to the Eye,

## 36 *The 7 Coats and 3 Humours of the Eye.* [Ch. V.]

**The Eye:** the Brayne and the head were made for the Eye, that they might be in the hiest place, as a beholder in a towre, as it was rehearsed in the Anatomie of the head. But diuers men holde diuers opinions of the Anatomie of the Eyes: for some men accompt but three tunikles, and some sixe. But in conclusion, they meane all one thing: For the very truth is, that there be counted and reckoned seven Tunikles, that is to say, 8

**Names of the 7 Tunikles,** *Sclerotica*,<sup>1</sup> *Secondyna*, *Retyna*,<sup>2</sup> *Vnia*, *Cornua*, *Aranus*,<sup>3</sup> and *Coniunctiua*:<sup>4</sup> and these three humours, that is to say, *humor Vitrus*, *humor Albigynus*, and *humor Crystallinus*.<sup>5</sup> It is be knowne howe and after what maner 12 they spring. You shal ynderstande, that there springeth of the brayny substaunce of his for<sup>e</sup>most Ventrikles, two senowes, The one from the right side, and the other from the left, and they be called the 16

<sup>\*</sup> sign. R. III.  
From the front Ventricle of the Brain spring 2 hollow sinews,

viz. the *Cornuous*, the *Ureous*, the *Vitreous*, and the *Crystalline*, to which there are as many Humours answerable.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>1</sup> *Sclerotica*, or *Sclerotica Tunica*, the horney Coat of the Eye. See *Cornua Tunica*.—Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Retiformis Tunica*, or *Retina*, one of the Tunicles or Coats of the Eye, which resembles the Figure of a Net, and is the principal Instrument of Sight.—Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Aranca Tunica* or *Crystallina* (Lat. in *Anat.*), a Coat of the Eye, that surrounds and encloses the Crystalline Humour; taking Name from its thin light Contexture, like that of a Cob-web.—Kersey.

<sup>4</sup> *Coniunctiva Tunica* (Lat. in *Anat.*), a Coat of the Eye, so call'd from its sticking close to it; the same with the *Adnata Tunica*, the common Membrane or Coat of the Eye, otherwise call'd *Coniunctiva* and *Albuginea*: It arises from the Scull, grows to the outward part of the *Tunica Cornea*; and, that the *Visible Species* may pass there, leaves a round hollow space forward, to which is join'd another nameless Coat made up of the Tendons of those Muscles that move the Eye.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>5</sup> *Vitreal* or *Vitreous*, belonging to Glass, Glassy; a Term in *Anatomy*, as the *vitreous Humour*, which is one of the three Humours of the Eyes, so nam'd from its resembling melted Glass. 'Tis thicker than the *aqueous Humour*, but not so solid as the Crystalline, and exceeds both in quantity.—1706. Kersey.

*Aqueous Humour*, or the *Watery Humour*, one of the Humours of the Eye which is the outmost, being transparent, and of no Colour: It fills up the space between the *Tunica Cornea* and the *Crystalline Humour*.—*ibid.*

*Crystalline* or *Icy Humour*, a white, shining Humour of the Eye, which is thicker than the rest, and the first Instrument of Sight.—1706. Kersey.

fyrst payre, for in the Anatomie they be the first paire  
of senewes that appeare of al senen. And it is shewed  
by Galen, that these senews be hollowe as a reede, for  
4 two causes. The fyrst is, that the visible spirit might  
passe freely to the Eyes: The second is, that the  
forme of visible thinges mighte freely be presented  
to the common wits. Nowe marke the goeing forth  
8 of these senewes: When these senewes goo out from  
the substaunce of the Brayne, he commeth through  
the Piamater, of whose substaunce he taketh a Pan-  
nicle or a Cote: and the cause why he taketh that  
12 Pannicle, is to keepe him from noying;<sup>1</sup> and before  
they enter into the skul, they meete, and are vnited  
into one senewe the length of halfe an inche: and  
then they depart<sup>2</sup> agayne into two, and eche gooth  
16 into one eye, entring through the brayne panne; and  
these senews be called *Nerui optici*. And three causes  
I finde why these Nerues are ioyned in one before they  
passe into the Eye: First, if it happen any diseases in  
20 one eye, the other \*should recoyne all the visible spirite  
that before came to bothe: The seconde is, that all  
thinges that we see shoulde not seeme two: for if they  
had not bene ioyned together, euery thing shoulde  
24 haue seemed two, as it doth to a worme, and to other  
beastes: The thirde is, that the Senewe might stay and  
helpe the other. But herevpon Lamfranke<sup>3</sup> accordeth  
much, saying, that these two Senewes come together  
28 to the Eyes, and take a Panikle both of Piamater and  
of Duramater; and when they enter into the Orbyt of  
the Eye, there the extremities are spread abroad, the  
which are made of three substances: that is to say, of  
32 Duramater, of Piamater, and of *Nerui optici*. There

taking the power  
of sight to the  
Eye, and bring-  
ing back what  
they see, to the  
Wits.

One sinew goes  
into each Eye.

The 2 are called  
*Nerui optici*.

\* sign. E. H. M.

This is to prevent  
every one seeing  
double.

The extremities  
spread abroad.

<sup>1</sup> annoying, getting hurt.

<sup>2</sup> part, separate.

<sup>3</sup> An eminent surgeon: see the account of him in Hamilton's *Hist. of Medi-  
cine*, i. 364. He was a native of Milan, and died in France about 1300. His  
*Chirurgia Magna et Parua* was first printed in 1490.—Cooper.

### 38 *The Coats and Three Humours of the Eye.* [Ch. V.

and take 3 Coats, be ingendred three Tunikles or Cotes, as thus : Of the substance that is taken from Duramater, is ingendred the fyrst cote that is called Secondina : and of Nerui optici is ingendred the third cote that is called Retina : 4 and eche of them is more subtiller then other, & goeth about the humours without meane. And it is to be vnderstoode, that eche of these three Tunicles be divided, and so they make sixe : That is to \*say, iij. 8 which are divided, and form 6. \* sign. E. iv. of the partes of the brayne, and three of the parts out-wardes, and one of Pericranium that couereth the bones of the head, whiche is called Coniunctiua. And thus you maye perceyue the springing of them, as thus : of 12 Duramater springeth Sclerotica and Cornua : of Pia-mater springeth Secondina and Vnia : and of Nerui optici springeth Coniunctiua.

Three Humours  
are in the eye,

Vitreous,

Aqueous,

Crystalline,

\* sign. E. iv, bk.

and each is wrapt  
in a Membrane.

Nowe to speake of the humors, which be three ; and 16 their places are the middle of the Eyes : Of the whiche the fyrst is Humor Vitrus, because he is lyke glasse, in colour very cleare, redde, liquit, or thinne ; and he is in the inward side next vnto the brayne : and it is thin, 20 because the nutritiue blood of the Crystalline might passe, as water through a sponge should be clensed and made pure, and also that the visible spirite mighte the lightlyer passe through him from the Brayne. And he 24 goeth about the Crystalline humour, vntil he meete with Albuginus humour, which is set in the vttermost parte of the Eye. And in the myddeest of these humours Vitrus and Albuginus, is set the Crystalline humour, in 28 whiche is set principally the syght of \*the Eye. And these humours be separated and inuolued with the Pannicles aforesayde ; betweene euery Humour a Panicle. And thus is the Eye compound and made. But to 32 speake of euery Humour and euery Pannicle in his due order and course, it would aske a long processe, and a long Chapter : and this is sufficient for a Chirurgion.

Nowe to begin at the Nose : You shall vnderstande 36

# Ch. V.] *The Nose, Nostrils, and Profits of them.* 39

that from the Brayne there commeth .ij. Senews to the  
holes of the brayne pan, where beginneth the con-  
cauitie of the Nose; and these two be not properly  
4 senewes, but organes or instrumentes of smelling, and  
haue heades lyke teates or pappes, in whiche is re-  
ceyued the vertue of smelling, and representing it to  
the common wittes. Ouer these two is set Colatorium,<sup>1</sup>  
8 that we cal the Nose-thrills: and it is set betweenes the  
Eyes, vnder the vpper part of the Nose. And it is to  
be noted, that this concauitie or ditche was made for  
two causes: The fyrst is, that the ayre that bringeth  
12 fourth the spirite of smelling, might reste in it tyll it  
were taken of the organ or instrument of smelling: The  
seconde cause is, that \*the superfluities of the Brayne  
might be hydden vnder it vntill it were censed. And  
16 from this concauitie there goeth two holes down into y<sup>e</sup>  
mouth, of which there is to be noted three profits:  
The fyrste is, that when a mans mouth is close, or  
when he eateth or sleepeth, that then the ayre might  
20 come through them to the Lunges, or els a mans mouth  
should alwayes be open: The seconde cause is, that  
they helpe to the relation of the forme of the Nose:  
for it is sayd, 'a man speaketh in his Nose,' when any  
24 of these holes be stopp'd: The thirde cause is, that  
the concauitie might be censed by them when a man  
snuffeth the Nose, or draweth into his mouth inwardly.  
The Nose is a member consimple or official, appearing  
28 without the face, somewhat plicable, because it shoulde  
the better be censed. And it is to be perceyued that  
it is compounde and made of skinne and Lazartus  
fleshe, and of two bones standing in maner triangle-  
32 wise, whose extremities be ioyned in one part of the  
Nose with the Coronal bone, and the nether extremities

The Nose has  
2 Sinews or

organes of smell,  
with heades like  
teats.

It has Nostrils.

\* sign. F. j.

and 2 holes into  
the Mouth.

When a man  
speaks in his  
Nose.

The Nose is  
bendable, -

and made of mem-  
branous flesh,  
2 bones, and 2  
gristles.

<sup>1</sup> *Colatorium*, a Strainer, or *Cribrum Benedictum*, the blessed Sieve, put by the ancients 'in the Reins, and thro' which they would have the Humour call'd *Serum* strain'd into the Uretera.'—1708. Kersey, *Cribrum Ben.* See p. 44, n. 1.

#### 40 *Muscles of the Nose. Temples and Cheeks.* [Ch. V.

are ioyned with two grystles, and another that diuideth  
 the Nose\*thrilles within, and holdeth vp the nose :  
 Also there be two concauities or holes, that if one  
 were stopped the other should serue : Also there is in 4  
 the Nose two Muskles to helpe the working of hys  
 office. And Galen sayth, that the Nose shapeth the  
 Face moste ; for where the Nose lacketh (sayth he), al  
 the rest of the face is the more vnseemely. The Nose 8  
 should be of a meane bignes, and not to exceede in  
 length or breadth, nor in highnesse. For Aristotle  
 sayth, yf the Nose-thrills be too thinne or to wyde, by  
 great drawing in of ayre, it betokeneth great straightnes 12  
 of hart and indignation of thought. And therefore it  
 is to be noted, that the shape of the members of the  
 body betokneth and iudgeth the affections and wyll of  
 the Soule of man, as the Philosopher sayth. 16

The Temples  
 The temples be called the members of the head,  
 and they haue that name because of continuall mouing.  
 And as the science of the Anatomie meaneth, the spirite  
 vital is sente from the hart to the brayne by Arteirs ; 20  
 and by veynes and nutrimental blood, where the  
 vessels pulsatiues be lightly hurt. Also the temples  
 \*haue dentes or holes inwardely, wherein he taketh the  
 humour that commeth from the brayne, and bringeth 24  
 the eyes asleepe ; and if the sayde holes or dentes be  
 pressed and wroung, then by trapping of the humour  
 that continueth, he maketh the teares to fal from  
 the Eye. 28

The Cheeks  
 haue 7 upper  
 muscles, and 13  
 lower ones to the  
 under jaw ;  
 The Cheeks are the sideling partes of the face ; and  
 they contayne in them Musculus fleshe, with Veynes  
 and Arteirs ; and aboute these partes be many Muskles.  
 Guydo maketh mention of .vij. about the chekes & 32  
 ouer lyp. And Haly Abbas sayth, there be .xij. Mus-  
 cles that moue the nether Lawe, some of them in open-  
 ing, and other some in closing or shutting, passing  
 vnder the bones of y\* temples, And they be called 36

\* sign. F. J. back.

The Nose has 2  
 Muscles.

It should be of  
 moderate size.

\* sign. F. H.

have inward dents  
 to receive humour  
 from the brain.

Ch. V.] *The Cheeks show Men's Dispositions, &c.* 41

- Temporales*:<sup>1</sup> And they be right noble and sensatiue; of whose hurte is muche peril. Also there be other Muskles for to grinde and to chewe. And to al these
- 4 Muskles commeth Nerues from the brayne, to geue them feeling and mouing: and also there commeth to them many Arteirs and Veines, and chiefly about the temples, and the angles or corners of the Eyes, and the
- 8 Lippees. And as the Philosophers say, the cheefe beau<sup>t</sup>ie in man is in the cheekes; and there the complexion of man is most knowen: as thus, if they be full, ruddy, and meddled with temperate whitenes, and not
- 12 fat in substaunce, but meanely<sup>2</sup> fleshly, it betokeneth hotte and moyst of compl[e]xion, that is, sanguin and temperate in culler. And if they be white coloured, without medling of rednes, and in substaunce fat and
- 16 soft, quauering, it betokeneth excesse and superfluitie of colde and moyst, that is flematike: And if they be browne in colour, or cytrin, yelow, redde, and thin, and leane in substaunce, betokeneth great drying and
- 20 heate, that is cholerike: And if they be as it were blowen in colour, and of little fleshe in substaunce, it betokeneth excesse and superfluitie of drynes and colde; and that is melancolie. And as Auicen sayth, the Cheekes
- 24 doo not only shewe the diuersities of complexions, but also the affection and wil of the hart: for by the affection of the hart, by sodaine ioy or dreede, he waxeth eyther pale or redde. The bones or bony partes, fyrste
- 28 of the Cheekes, be two: of the Nose outwardely, two: of the vpper Mandibule,<sup>3</sup> two: within the Nose, three:

also Temporal ones;

and all haue Nerves from the Braine.

\* sign. F. H. bk.

The disposition of a man is known by his cheeks;

whether he's sanguine,

phlegmatic,

choleric,

or melancholy.

They show his affections too.

The Cheeks haue 10 bones,

<sup>1</sup> *Temporalis* (in *Anat.*), a Muscle of the upper Jaw, otherwise call'd *Crota-philus*, which, arising from part of the *Os Frontis*, *Sincipitis*, and *Sphenoides*, is inserted to the upper part of the *Processus Coronæ* of the lower Jaw. This Muscle with its Partner draws the lower Jaw upwards.—Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> moderately.

<sup>3</sup> *Mandibula* (in *Anat.*), the Mandible or Jaw, either Upper or Lower: The Upper consists of Twelve Bones, on each Side six; but the Lower at riper Years grows into one continued Bone, extremely hard and thick.—Kersey.



## 42 *Bones of Cheeks. 5 Parts of the Mouth.* [Ch. V.

\* sign. F. M. as thus : \* one diuiding the Noethrilles within ; and in  
 ech Noethril one ; and they seeme to be rowled like a  
 wafer, and haue a holownesse in them, by whiche the  
 ayre is respyred and drawen to the lunges, and the 4  
 superfluitie of the brayne is purged into the mouth-  
 wardes, as is before rehearsed. But Guydo and Galen  
 say, that there be in the face nyne bones ; yet I can not  
 finde that the nether Mandible should be of y<sup>e</sup> number 8  
 of those nyne, for the nether Mandible accompted there,  
 proveth them to be ten in number ; Of which thing I  
 wyl holde no argument, but remit it to the sighte of  
 your Eyes. 12

though Galen and  
 Guydo say 8.

The Mouth has 5  
 parts :

1. the Lips, the partes of the mouth are fyue, that is to say,  
 the Lippes, the teeth, the tounge, the Uuila, and the  
 Pallet of the mouth. And first to speake of the  
 lippes : they are members consimile or official, full of 16  
 Musculus fleshe, as is aforesayde, and they were or-  
 deyned for two causes ; one is, that they should be to  
 the mouth as a doore to a house, and to keepe the  
 mouth close tyl the meate were kindly chewed : The 20  
 other cause is, that they should be helpers to the pro-  
 nouncing of the speache. The teeth<sup>1</sup> are members \*con-  
 sinile or official, spermatike, and hardest of any other  
 members, and are fastened in the cheke bones, and 24  
 were ordeyned for thre causes : First, that they should  
 chewe a mans meate, or it should passe downe, that it  
 might be the sooner digested : The seconde, that they  
 should be a helpe to the speache ; for they that lacke 28  
 their Teeth, doe not perfectly pronounce their wordes :  
 the thirde is, that they should serue to beasts as  
 weapons. The number of them is vncertayne ; for  
 some men haue mo, and some lesse ; they that haue 32  
 the whole number haue .xxxij., that is to say .xvj.

Who the doore to a  
 house ;

\* sign. F. M, bk.

2. the Teeth  
 to chew, and to  
 help the speech :

<sup>1</sup> Dens . . The Teeth are of thre sorts, viz. the *Incisores*, or Cutters, which  
 bite off the Morcel ; the *Canini* or Dog-teeth that break it ; and the *Molars* or  
 Grinders that make it small.—Kersey.

about, and as many beneath, as thus, two *Deuallies*,  
 two *Quadripulles*,<sup>1</sup> two *Cannines*,<sup>2</sup> eyght *Morales*,<sup>3</sup> and  
 two *Cunsaes*.<sup>4</sup> The Tounge is a carnous member, com-  
 4 ponde and made of many Nerues, Lygamentes, Veines  
 and Arteirs, ordeyned principally for three causes:  
 The first is, that when a man eateth, the Tounge mighte  
 helpe to turne the meate tyll it were wel chewed:  
 8 The seconde cause is, that by him is receiued the taste  
 of sweete and sowre, and presented by him to the com-  
 mon wittes: The thirde is, that by him \* is pronounced  
 euery speach. The fleshy parte of the tounge is white,  
 12 and hath in him nine muskles; and about the roote  
 of him is Glandulus, in the whiche be two welles, and  
 they be ouer ful of spittle, to temper and keepe moyst  
 the tounge, or els it would waxe dry by reason of his  
 16 labour, &c. The Uuila<sup>5</sup> is a member made of a sponge-  
 ous fleshe, hanging downe from the ende of the Pallet  
 ouer the goulet of the throte, and is a member in com-  
 plexion colde and dry; and oftentimes when there  
 20 falleth rawnes or muche moystnes into it from the  
 head, then it hangeth downe in the throte, and letteth  
 a man to swallowe; and it is broade at the vpper ende,  
 and smal at the nether. It was ordeyned for diuers  
 24 causes: One is, that by him is holpen the sounde of  
 speache; for where the Uuila is lacking, there lacketh  
 the perfect sound of speache: Another is, that it might  
 helpe the prolation<sup>6</sup> of vomites: another is, that by  
 28 him is tempered and abated the distemperaunce of the  
 ayre that passeth to the Lunges: another is, that by

(16 at top,  
16 below.)

2. the Tounge,

to receive taste,  
and speak;

\* sign. F. iv.

with 9 muskles;

4. the Uvula,

to help speach,

and temper the  
air that goes to  
the Lunges;<sup>1</sup> † the *Duals* the central Incisors; the *Quadruples* the side ones.<sup>2</sup> *Caninus*. Doggish: curriah: of a dogge.—Cooper. <sup>3</sup> *Molaris*. A cheeke tooth.—1578. Cooper. <sup>4</sup> † *Casuales* (chance-teeth), or *Clausales*, shutting ones?<sup>5</sup> *Uvula*, the little piece of red, spungy Flesh that hangs down from the Palate or Roof of the Mouth, between the two Glandules call'd *Amygdala*: Its use is to prevent the Air from ent'ring too cold into the Lunges, and to hinder any Liquor that is drunk from falling upon the Nostrils: It is otherwise termed *Uva*, *Uvigena*, and *Uvigena*; as also *Cion* and *Columella*.—Kersey.<sup>6</sup> forth-casting, bringing up.

#### 44 *Palate; its Connection with the Stomach.* [Ch. V.]

him is guyded the superfluities of the brayne that  
 \* sign. F. iv, bk. commeth from the coletures \* of the Nose;<sup>1</sup> or els the  
 superfluities should fal down sodenly into the mouth,  
 the which were a displeasure. The Pallet of the mouth 4  
 conteyneth nothing els but a carnous Pannicle; and  
 the bones that be vnderneath it haue two diuisions,  
 One along the Pallet from the diuision of the Nose,  
 with 2 mandibles, and from the opening of the other Mandible vnto the 8  
 nether ende of the Pallet, lacking halfe an inch; and  
 there it diuideth ouerthwart; and the first diuision is  
 of the Mandible, and the seconde is of the bone called  
 Paxillarie or Bazillarie,<sup>2</sup> that sustayneth and byndeth 12  
 al other bones of the head together. The skiinne of  
 the Pallet of the mouth is of the inner parte of the  
 stomack and of Myre, and of Ysophagus,<sup>3</sup> that is, the  
 way of the meate into the stomacke. The way how to 16  
 know that such a pannicle is of that part of the  
 stomacke, may be knowen when that a man is touched  
 within the mouth, anone he beginneth to tickle in the  
 stomacke; and the neerer that he shal touche vnto the 20  
 throte, the more it abhorreth the stomacke, and often  
 times it causeth the stomacke to yeld from him that is  
 within him, as when \* a man doth vomite.  
 \* sign. G. I.  
 Also in the mouth is ended the vppermoste ex- 24  
 tremitie of the Wesande, which is called Myre or  
 Isophagus. And with hym is conteyned *Trachia arteria*,<sup>4</sup>  
 that is, the way of the ayre, whose holes be conuerl  
 with a lap like a tong, and is gristly, that the meate 28  
 and drinke mighte slyde ouer him into Isophagus: The

\* sign. F. iv, bk.

1. The Palate,

with 2 mandibles,

and a skin from  
the stomack:

touch the mem-  
brane, and the  
man tickles in his  
stomack.

One end of the  
windpipe is in the  
mouth.

It is covered by a  
lap like a tongue,

<sup>1</sup> *Colatoire du nez.* The sponge bone through which the aniuell passeth from the braine into the noethrils.—1611. Cotgrave. See note, p. 33.

<sup>2</sup> *Os basilare.* The Nape, or Nuke-bone; the bone wherby all the parts of the head are supported: some call it the Cuneall bone, because it is, wedge-like, thrust in betwene the bones of the head and th' upper Jaw.—1611. Cotgrave. (See note 3, p. 28, above.) <sup>3</sup> See note 4, p. 47, below.

<sup>4</sup> *Arteria trachea* or *Aspera* (i. e. the rough Artery), the Wind-pipe, a gristly Vessel, which consists of several Rings and Parts; its use being, to form and convey the Voice, to take in Breath, &c.—1706. Kersey's *Philippus*.

whiche grystle, when a man speaketh, it is reared vp, and couereth the way of the meate: and when a man swalloweth the meate, then it couereth the way of the 4 ayre, so that when the one is couered, the other is discovered. For if a man open the waye of the ayre when he swalloweth, if there fal a crum into it, he shal neuer cease coughing vntil it be vp agayne. And this 8 suffiseth for the necke.

which protects  
the air-passage.

[CHAPTER VI.]

¶ *Heereafter foloweth the*

*Anatomie of the Necke.*

- 12 **T**HE Necke foloweth next to be spoken of. Galen proueth that the Necke was made for no other cause but for the Lungen; for al thinges \* that haue no Lunga, haue neither necke nor voyce, except 16 fishe. And you shal vnderstande, that the necke is all that is conteyned betweene the head and the shoulders, and betweene the chinne and the breast. It is compounde and made of foure thinges, that is to say, of 20 *Spondillus*,<sup>1</sup> of *Seruicibus*,<sup>2</sup> of *Gula*, and of *Guttur*, the which shal be declared more playnely hereafter; and through these, passe the waye of the meate and of the ayre; but they be not of the substance of the necke.
- 24 The Spondelles of the necke be seuen: The fyrst is ioyned vnto the lower parte of the head, called Paxillarie or Bazillarie,<sup>3</sup> and in the same wise are ioyned euery Spondel with other, and the laste of the seuen 28 with the fyrst of the Backe or Ridge: and the Lygamentes that keepe these Spondels together, are not so hard and tough as those of the backe: for why? those of the necke be more feebler and subtiler: The cause

The Neck is made  
for the Lungen.

\* sign. G. I. h.

It consists of 4  
things:

1. Seven Spondels  
or Vertebrae.

<sup>1</sup> *Vertebre*: i. A turning ioynt, or ioynt wherein the bones meet so as they may turne; as in the huckle-bone, &c.—1611. Cotgrave.

<sup>2</sup> The Pax-wax or Pax-wax, the *Ligamentum Nucha*. See next page.

<sup>3</sup> See p. 44, note 2, above.

## 46 *The Neck, its Sinews, Muscles & Fleashes.* [Ch. VI.]

is this, for it is necessary otherwhile that the head moue without the necke, and the necke without the head, the whiche might not well haue beene done if they had beene strong and boystroua. Of these afore-<sup>4</sup> sayd seuen \*Spondels of the necke, there springeth seuen payre of Senewes, the whiche be diuided into the head and into the Vysage, to the shoulders, and to the armes. From the hole of the first spondel springeth <sup>8</sup> the fyrst payre of senewes, betwene the fyrst spondel and the seconde; and so fourth of al the rest in like maner as of these. Also these senewes receyue subtil wyлле of the senews of the Brayne; of the which wyлле, <sup>12</sup> and senewes, and fleashe, with a pannikle, make the composition of Muskels, Lazartes, and Brawnes, the which three thinges be al one, and be the instrumentes of voluntarie mouing of euery member. 16

\* sign. G. H.  
wherefrom spring  
7 pair of Sinews,

receiving fibres  
from the Brain;

2. Twenty Mus-  
cles.

Three kinde of  
Flesh in the Neck;  
the first called  
Pizwez or Gold-  
Hair.

\* sign. G. H., bk.

The second is  
muscular;

the third fills  
hollows.

The Muskles of the neck, after Galen, are numbred to be .xx. mouing the head and the necke. Likewise it is to be noted, that there be three maner of fleashes in the necke: the first is called *Pizwez*<sup>1</sup> or *Seruizia*, and <sup>20</sup> it is called of Chylder 'Golde heire, or yellowe heire,' the whiche are certayne longitudinales lying on the sides of the Spondels from the head downe to the latter Spondel. And they are ordeyned for this cause, that <sup>24</sup> when the Senewes be weery of ouer muche labour with mouing and tra<sup>u</sup>ayle, that they might rest vpon them as vpon a bedde. The second fleshe is *musculus*, from whome springeth the Tendons and cordes that moue <sup>28</sup> the head and the necke, whiche be numbred twentie, as is afore declared: The thirde fleshe replenisheth the voyde places, &c. The thirde parte of the necke is

<sup>1</sup> Called also Fax-wax, Fick-fack, Fig-fag, Fix-fax, Pack-wack, Pease-wease, and Tax-wax. 'Paz-wax, synewe,' ab. 1440. *Promptorium Parvulorum*, ed. Way. The tough strong elastic ligament running along the spinal vertebra into the occipital bone.—1866. Wheatley. *Dict. of Reduplicated Words*. *Philolog. Soc. Trans.*, 1865, p. 67. A.Sax. *fax* is hair.

## Ch. VI.] *The Neck, its Throat-boll and Gullet.* 47

called *Guttur*,<sup>1</sup> and it is the standing out of the throte boll. The fourth part is called *Gula*,<sup>2</sup> and the hinder parte *Cervix*,<sup>3</sup> and hath that name of the Philosophers, 4 because of the marowe comming to the Ridge bones. It is so called, because it is (as it were) a seruauant to the brayne: For the necke receiueth and taketh of the brayne, influence of vertue of mouing, and sendeth it 8 by senewes to other parts of the body downwarde, and to al members of the body. Heere you shal vnderstand, that the way of the meate, & Mire or Isophagus,<sup>4</sup> is al one thing; and it is to be noted, that it stretcheth 12 from the mouth to the stomache, by the hinder part of the necke inwardly, fastned to the spondels of the necke, vntyl he come to the fyfthe spondel, and there he leaueth the spondel, and stretcheth tyl he come to 16 the for<sup>e</sup>most part of the brest, & passeth through *Diafragma*<sup>5</sup> tyl it come to the mouth of the stomache, and there he is ended. Furthermore it is to be noted, that this Wesande is compounde and made of two Tunikles 20 or Cotes, that is to say, of the inner and of the vtter. The vtter tunikle is but simple, for he needeth no retention but ouely for his owne nourishing: but the inner Tunikle is compounde and made of Musculus 24 Longitudinal Wyl, by which he may drawe the meate from the mouth into the stomack, as it shal be more playnely declared in the Anatomie of the stomacke.<sup>6</sup> Furthermore, *Caua<sup>7</sup> pulmonis via, trachia arteria*,<sup>8</sup> al

1. *Guttur*, or Throat-boll.  
2. *Gula*, or gullet.

3. *Esophagus*, running from the mouth to the Stomack.

4. *sign. G. M.*

The Gullet is made of 2 Cotes.

the inner one of longitudinal muscular fibre.

<sup>1</sup> *Guttur* (*Lat.*), the Throat, or Head of the Windpipe. *Guttural Cartilage* (in *Anat.*), a Gristle, which, with others, makes up the Larynx, or top of the Throat.—Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Gula* (*Lat.*), the Gullet, or upper part of the Throat.—Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Cervix*, the hinder part of the Neck. *Cervical*, belonging to the Neck, as the *Cervical* or *Vertebrai Vessels*, a Term us'd by Anatomists for the Arteries and Veins that pass thro' the *Vertebrae*, or Turning-Joints and Muscles of the Neck up to the Scall.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>4</sup> *Esophagus*, the Gullet or Wesand-pipe, the Conduit or Funnel that conveys the Meat and Drink from the Mouth to the Stomack.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>5</sup> for '*Diafragma*.'

<sup>6</sup> Chapter VIII, p. 60, below.

<sup>7</sup> orig. *Cana*.

<sup>8</sup> See *Arteria trachea*, p. 44, note 4, in Chapter V, above.

## 48 *The Throat-Boll. The Shoulder-Bones.* [Ch. VII.]

The Throat-boll  
or Epiglottis is  
within the neck,  
next the Gullet,  
and made of  
gristle.

[It. *Guldris*;  
see p. 98.]

\* sign. G. III, 111.

these be one thing, that is to say, the throte boll;<sup>1</sup> and it is set within the necke besides y<sup>e</sup> Wesande towards *Gula*, and is compoude of the grystle knytte eache with other. And that pannikle that is meane be-<sup>4</sup> twene the Wesand and the throte bol, is called *Isinon*.<sup>2</sup> Also ye shal vnderstand, that the great Veines which ramesie by the sydes of the necke to the vpper part of the head, is of some men called *Gwideg*.<sup>3</sup> & of others *Vena organica*, the incision of whom is perillous. \* And thus it is to be considered, that the Necke of man is compoude and made of skinny fleshe, Ligamentes, and bones. And this suffiseth for the necke<sup>12</sup> and the throte.

### [CHAPTER VII.]

#### ¶ *The Anatomie of the*

Shoulders and Armes.

16

The Shoulder has  
2 bones,

the Shoulder blade

**A**ND fyrst to speake of the bones: It is to be noted, that in the shoulder there be two bones, that is to say, the Shoulder bone, and the Cannel bone;<sup>4</sup> and also the adiutor bone<sup>5</sup> of the arme<sup>20</sup> are ioyned with y<sup>e</sup> shoulder bones, but they are not numbred among them, but amongst the bones of the armes. In the composition of the shoulder, the fyrst bone is *Os spatula*, or shoulder blade, whose hinder<sup>24</sup> part is declined towards y<sup>e</sup> chinne, & in that ende it is broade, & thin, and in the vpper part it is round, in whose roundnes is a concauitie, which is called y<sup>e</sup> boxe or coope of the shoulder, into which entereth the<sup>28</sup> Adiutor bones; and they haue a bynding togethers

<sup>1</sup> '*epiglottis*: anglie, the throtebolle.' 15th-century Glossary in Wülker's *Old English Vocabularies*, i. 580/21. '*Epiglottis* or *Sublinguim* (in *Anat.*), the fifth Cartilage or Gristle of the *Larynx*, the cover or flap of the Wind-pipe.' —1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> Arab. *isa* is fat matter.—N.

<sup>3</sup> 'A corruption for Arab. *'irek*, vein, says Dr. Neubauer; the *'i* = *ain*, is the strongest guttural, written by *gw*; the confusion of *r* and *d* is common in Arabic texts.' <sup>4</sup> The Clavicle. <sup>5</sup> The Humerus or upper bone of the arm.

with strong flexible Senewes, and are conteyned faste  
 with the bone called *Clavicula*, \* or the Cannel bone:<sup>1</sup>  
 and this Cannel bone stretcheth to bothe the shoulders,  
 4 one ende to the one shoulder, and another to the other;  
 and there they make the composition of the shoulders.  
 The bones of the great arme, that is to say, from the  
 shoulder to the fingers endes, be .xxx. The first is the  
 8 Adiutor bone, whose vpper ende entreth into the con-  
 cauitie or boxe of the shoulder bone: It is but one  
 bone, hauing no felowe, and it is hollowe, and ful of  
 marowe; and it is also crooked, because it shoulde be  
 12 the more habler to grype thinges; and it is hollowe,  
 because it should be lighter and more obedient to the  
 steering or mouing of the Brawnes. Furthermore, this  
 bone hath two emynences, or two knobe in his nether  
 16 extremitie, or in the iuncture of the Elbowe, of the  
 which the one is more rising then the other, and are  
 made lyke vnto a Polly<sup>2</sup> to drawe water with; and the  
 endes of these bones enter into a concauitie propor-  
 20 tioned in the vppermoste endes of the two Focle bones;<sup>3</sup>  
 of whiche two bones, the lesse goeth from the Elbowe  
 to the Thombe, by the vppermoste part of the arme,  
 and the greater is the \* nether bone from the Elbowe  
 24 to the little finger. And these two bones be conteyned  
 with the Adiutor bone,<sup>4</sup> and bee bounde with strong  
 Ligamentes, and in like maner with the bones of the  
 hande. The whiche bones be numbred .viij.; the .iiij.

\* sign. G. iv.  
and the Clavicle.

The great Arm  
has 30 bones:

1. the Adjutor, or  
Humerus,

with 2 knobe at  
the elbow,

made like a  
bucket-pulley,  
and fitting into  
the top ende of  
Ulna and Radius.

\* sign. G. iv, bk.

The arme-bones  
are bound to the  
8 hand-bones (or  
carpal-bones).

<sup>1</sup> *Clavicula* (in *Anat.*), the Clavicles, or Channel-bones: two small Bones which fasten the Shoulder-bones and Breast-bone, as it were a Key, being situated at the Basis, or bottom of the Neck above the Breast, on each Side one.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Fr. Poule*: f. A pullie.—1611. Cotgrave.

<sup>3</sup> The *Ulna* and *Radius*, or lower bones of the Arm. See *Focle minus*, from Kersey, p. 52, note 3, below. *Fr. Focle*: m. The arme from the elbow to the wrist; the leg, or shanke, from the knee to the ankle; each consisting of two bones: *Focle grand*, Th' upper of these two bones, being the longer and greater; *Focle minur*, ou, *petit focle*, The vndermost, and lesse of them.—1611. Cotgrave.

<sup>4</sup> The *Humerus*, or upper bone of the Arm.



## 50 *Bones of the Hand. Sinews & Muscles.* [Ch. VII.]

To the 5 metacarpal bones are joined the bones of the fingers and thumb;

14 finger bones,

5 metacarpal,

8 carpal,

8 in arme:

30 in all.

Through the Vertebrae run 4 Sinews,

\* sign. H. J.

which, with the Ligaments of the Shoulder,

form a Tendon,

vppermost be ioyned with the .iiij. nethermost towardes the handes: and in the thirde warde of bones, be .v. and they are called *Ossa patinis*, and they are in the palme of the hande. And to them be ioyned the bones 4 of the Fingers and the Thombes, as thus; in euery fynger .iiij. bones, and in the thombe two bones: that is to say, in the fingers and thombe of euery hand .xiiij. called *Ossa digitorum*; in the palm of the hand 8 .v. called *Patinis*;<sup>1</sup> and betweene the hande and the wryste, viij. called *Racete*;<sup>2</sup> and from the wryst to the shoulder .iiij. bones: al which beeing accompted together, ye shal finde thirtie bones in eche hand and arme. 12

To speake of Senewes, Lygamentes, Cordes and Brawnes: Here fyrst ye shal vnderstand that there commeth from Mynuca,<sup>3</sup> thorowe the Spondels of the necke, foure senewes, which most playnly do appeare in 16 sight, as thus: one commeth into the \* vpper parte of the arme, another into the nether parte, and one into the inner side, and another into the vtter side of y<sup>e</sup> arme; and they bring from the brayne and from 20 Minuca, both feeling and mouing into the armes, as thus: The senewes that come from the Brayne and from the marow of the backe that is called Minuca, when they come to the iuncture of the shoulder, there 24 they are mixed with the Lygamentes of the selfe shoulder, and there the Lygamentes receyue both feeling and mouing of them; and also in their medling together, they are made a Corde or a Tendon. Three 28

<sup>1</sup> *Metacarpus*, or *Metacarpium* (in *Anat.*), the Back of the Hand, consisting of four small and somewhat long Bones, which stretch out the Palm of the Hand, and are call'd *Post-brachialia*. *Metacarpus* is also a Bone of the Arm, made up of four Bones, which are ioyn'd to the Fingers; that which bears up the Fore-finger, being the biggest and longest.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> meaning. Of these carpal bones, Cotgrave (A.D. 1611) has, '*Os scammoides*. Certaine little flat bones wherewith the ioynts of the fingers and toes are filled, settled, and strengthened: their number is vncertaine, and their name they haue of the oylie graine *Sesame*, the which they somewhat resemble.'

<sup>3</sup> 'the marow of the backe,' spinal cord.

Ch. VII.] *Sinews. How a Tendon becomes a Muscle.* 51

causes I find why the senewes were medled with the  
 Lygamentes: The first cause is, that the excellent feel  
 ing of the senewes, whiche many waies be made weery  
 4 by their continual mouing, should be repressed by the which relieves  
 insencibleness of the Lygamentes: The seconde is, that  
 the littleness of the Senewes shoulde be fulfilled  
 through the quantitie of the Lygamenta. The third is,  
 8 the feebleness of the senewe, that is insufficiencie and  
 too feeble to see his offices, but by the strength and and strengthens  
 hardnes of the Lygamentes. the sinews.

Nowe to declare \* what a Corde is, what a Ligament, \* sign. H. J. bk.  
 12 and what a Muskele or a Brawne, it is ynough rehearsed  
 in the Chapter of the Simple members.<sup>1</sup> But if you  
 wyl, thorough the commaundement of the Wyl or of  
 the Soule, drawe the arme to the hinder part of the  
 16 body, then the vtter Brawne is drawn together, and  
 the inner is enlarged: And likewise inwards, when the  
 one brawne dothe drawe inwards, the other doth  
 stretch; & when the arme is stretched in length, then  
 20 the Cordes be lengthened: but when they passe the  
 iuncture of the shoulder and of the Elbowe, by three  
 fingers breadth or thereabout, then it is deuided by  
 subtill wyl, and medled with the simple fleshe: and  
 24 that whiche is made of it is called a Brawne. And  
 three causes I finde why that the simple fleshe is  
 medled with the Corde in the composition of the  
 brawne: The fyrst is, that the aforesayde Wylle  
 28 might drawe in quiet through the temperaunce of the  
 fleshe. The seconde is, that they temper and abate  
 the drought of the cord with his moystnes, the which  
 drought he getteth through his manifold mouing. The  
 32 thirde is, that the forme \* of the brawny members  
 shoulde be the more fayre, and of better shape: wher-  
 fore God and nature haue clothed it with a Panikle,  
 that it might the better be kept. And it is called of

When you draw  
back the arme,  
the outer Muscle  
contracts, and the  
inner expands.

The Tendon is  
mixed with flesh,  
and called a  
Brawne.

\* sign. H. H.

<sup>1</sup> Ch. II. p. 17, above.

## 52 *Muscles. Veins & Arteries of the Arm.* [Ch. VII.]

or Muscle, that is,  
a little mouse.

Between every 2  
joints is a Brawne;

and there are 16  
Brawnes or Mus-  
cles in the arme  
and hande.

Of Veins and  
Arteries.  
From the Vena  
Cava one branch  
runs to each arm-  
pit,  
\* sign. H. II. bk.  
when it divides  
into 2:

1. at the bend of  
the arme called  
*Basilica*,

y<sup>e</sup> Philosophers 'Musculus,' because it hath a forme like vnto a Mouse. And when these Brawnes come neere a Ioynt, then the Cordes spring forth of them, and are medled with the Lygaments agayne, and so 4 mouneth that Ioynt.<sup>1</sup> And so ye shall vnderstande, that alwayes betweene euery two Ioyntes, is ingendred a Brawne, proportioned to the same member and place, vnto the last extremitie of the fingers, so that aswell 8 the least iuncture hath a proper feeling and mouing when it needeth, as hath the greatest. And after Guydo, there be numbred .xiiij. in the arme and hande, as thus: .iiij. in the Adiutor,<sup>2</sup> mouing the vpper part 12 of the arme: and .iiij. in the Focels,<sup>3</sup> mouing that part of the arme: and fve in the hande, mouing the fyngers.

Now to speake somewhat of the Veynes and Arteirs 16 of the arme: It is to be vnderstoode, that from *Venacelsis*<sup>4</sup> there commeth two braunches, the one commeth to the one arme pyt, and the other \*commeth to the other. And nowe marke the spreading; for as it is 20 of the one, so it is of the other, as thus: when the braunch is in the arme pyt, there he is deuyded into two braunches; the one braunche goeth along in the inner side of the arme vntil it come to the bought of 24 the arme, and there it is called *Basilica* or *Epatica*,<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Ligament* (Lat. in *Anat.*), a Band or String partaking of the Quality of a Cartilage and a Membrane, design'd by Nature for ioyning together of Parts, especially Bones, in order to the better performing of their Motions.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Humerus. Adjutory*, aiding or helping; as the *Adjutory Bones*, two Bones that reach from the Shoulders to the Elbows, and are so call'd by some Anatomists.—1706. Kersey. *Adiutor*. A helper; a furtherer.—1578. Cooper.

<sup>3</sup> *Focile Majus*, the greater bone of the Arm, peculiarly call'd *Vna*, or the greater Bone of the Leg, nam'd *Tibia*. *Focile Minus*, the lesser Bone of the Arm, known by the Name of *Radius*, or the lesser Bone of the Leg, termed *Fibula*.—1706. Kersey's *Phillips*. See the extract from Cotgrave, p. 49, note 3, above.

<sup>4</sup> *Vena Cava*, the largest vein of the body. See p. 57, note 4.

<sup>5</sup> *Basilica*, or the *Basilick Vein*, the inner Vein of the Arm, otherwise call'd

and so goeth downe the arme til it come to the wryst,  
 and there it is turned to the backe of the hand, and is  
 found betwene the little fynger and the next, and there  
 4 it is called *Saluatella*.<sup>1</sup> Nowe to the other braunche *Saluatella*.  
 that is in the arme hole, which spreadeth to the vtter  
 side of the shoulder, and there he deuideth in two: y<sup>e</sup>  
 one goeth spreading vp into y<sup>e</sup> carnous parte of the  
 8 head, and after descendeth through the bone into the  
 Brayne, as is declared in the Anatomie of the head<sup>2</sup>:  
 The other braunche goeth on the outward side of the  
 arme, and there he is deuided in two also; the one  
 12 parte is ended at the hande, and the other part is  
 folded about the arme, tyl it appeare in the bought of  
 the arme, and there it is called *Sephalica*.<sup>3</sup> from thence  
 it goeth to the backe of the hande, & appeareth be-  
 16 twene the thombe \*and the formost fynger; and there  
 it is called *Sephalica ocularia*. The two branches that  
 I spake of, whiche be diuided in the hinder part of  
 the shoulders; from eche of these two (I say) springeth  
 20 one; and those two meete together, and make one veyne,

and at the back of  
the hand,

*Saluatella*.

2. the other runs  
into the head.

The other branch  
runs outside the  
arm,

and at the hand is  
called *Cephalica*;

\* sign. H. III.  
the other runs  
between the  
thumb and 1<sup>st</sup>  
finger.

*Hepatica*, being the lower Branch of the *Axillaris*, divided into three Branches,  
 under the *Musculus Pectoralis*.—1706. Kersey. '*Veins basilique*. (Called by  
 our Anatomists) the liuer veine: issues from the *Sousclaviers*, and is diuided  
 into two branches, a deepe and a superficiall one; the later whereof, being neere  
 the inwarde processe of th' arme, and varie neere the skinne, is diuided into  
 other two; viz. a lesse, which runnes into the head veine, and together with it,  
 makes the *Mediane*; whilst the greater passes by th' elbow vnto the hand, &  
 there makes the *Saluatella*.'—1611. Cotgrave. '*Basilica*. The liuer vaine.  
*Hepaticus*. Of the liver.'—1578. Cooper.

<sup>1</sup> *Saluatella* (in *Anat.*), a Vein which takes its rise from the Liver, and runs  
 thro' the Arm and Wrist into the Little Finger.—1706. Kersey. See Cotgrave's  
 definition, p. 54, note 2.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 24, above, and p. 57, note 4, below.

<sup>3</sup> *Veins cephalique*. The head veins; or, a third branch of *la Sousclaviers*;  
 passes betweene the muske *Deltoides*, and that of the breast, and goes vnto the  
 bought of the elbow, where it diuides it selfe into two branches; the lower, and  
 lesse, going along th' inner part of the arme, ioynes with a branch of *la basilique*,  
 and together with it, makes the *Mediane*; the higher, and greater, seated in the  
 outside of the elbow, yeelds on both sides many branches, the greatest whereof  
 meets with *la Basilique*, and together with it, makes *la Saluatella*.—1611.  
 Cotgrave.

## 54 *The 5 chief Veins. Arteries. The Chest.* [Ch. VII.

which appeareth in the bought of the arme, and there  
 The 5 chief Veins, it is called *Mediana*, or *Cordialis*, or *Commune*.<sup>1</sup> And  
 thus it is to be vnderstoode, that of *vena Scephalica*  
 springeth *vena occularis*; and of *vena Basilica*<sup>2</sup> spring- 4  
 eth *vena Saluatella*; <sup>3</sup> and of the two veynes that meete,  
 springeth *vena Mediana*; and in ramefying from these  
 fyue principal Veines springeth innumerable, of the  
 whiche a Chirurgion hath no great charge, for it suf- 8  
 fieth vs to knowe the principals.

with many less  
 ones, which a  
 Surgeon needn't  
 trouble about.

Under every Vein  
 is an Artery,

carrying the spirit  
 of life.

\* sign. H. H, bk.

Arteries have two  
 coats.

The Brest is the  
 Chest of the  
 Spiritual Mem-  
 bers.

To speake of Arteirs, you shall vnderstande, that  
 wheresoeuer there is founde a Veine, there is an Arteire  
 vnder him: and if there be founde a great Veine, there 12  
 is found a great Arteir; and where as is a little Veine  
 there is a little Arteir: For whersoeuer there goeth a  
 veine to geue nutriment, there goeth an Arteir to bring  
 the spirite of lyfe. Wherefore it is to be noted, that 16  
 the Arteirs lye \*more deeper in the flesh then the  
 Veines doo: for they cary and kepe in them more  
 precious blood than doth the Veine; and therefore he  
 hath neede to be further from daungers outwardly: 20  
 and therefore God and Nature haue ordeyned for him  
 to be closed in two cotes, where the Veine hath but  
 one, &c.

The Brest or Thorax is the Arke or Chest of the 24  
 spiritual members of man, as sayth the Philosopher:  
 where it is to be noted, that there be foure thinges  
 conteyning, and eyght conteyned, as thus: The foure  
 conteyning are, the Skinne, Musculus fleshe, the 28

<sup>1</sup> *Veine mediana*. The middle, common, or black veine, compounded of the two lesse branches of the liuer and head veines, and running along the middle of the arme almost vnto the wrist, where it passes in the form of an Y into the hand: there is likewise another of this name vnder th' Instup. — 1611. Cotgrave.

<sup>2</sup> *Basilica*, the liuer vaine. — Cooper. 1578. See p. 52, note 5.

<sup>3</sup> *Saluatelle*; i. Th' outward branch of the shoulder veine, falling down, ouer the wrist, vnto the partition between the ring finger and the little one. — 1611. Cotgrave.

## Ch. VII.] *The Chest, its Paps, Muscles, & Bones.* 55

- Pappes, and the Bones: The partes conteyned are, the Hart, the Lunges, Panikles, Ligamentes, Nerves, Veines, Arteirs, Mire or Isofagua. Nowe the skinne  
 4 and the fleshe are knowne in their Anatomie. It is to be noted, that the fleshe of the Pappes differeth from the other fleshe of the body, for it is white, glandulus, & spongeous: and there is in them, both Nerves,  
 8 Veines and Arteirs; and by them they haue Colliganes<sup>1</sup> with the hart, the lyuer, the brayne, and the generatiue members. Also there is in the brest, as old Authors  
 \*make mention, lxxx. or .xc. Muskles; for some of  
 12 them be common to the necke, some to the shoul- ders, and to the spades, some to Diafragma<sup>2</sup> or y<sup>e</sup> Mydriffe, some to the Ribbes, some to the Backe, & some to the brest it selfe. But I fynde certayne  
 16 profitablenes in the creation of y<sup>e</sup> Papa, aswel in man as in woman: for in man it defendeth the spirituals from annoyannce outwardly: and another, by their  
 thicknes they comfort the natural heate in defence of  
 20 the spirites. And in women there is the generation of milke: for in women there commeth from the Matrix into their Brestes manye Veines which bring into them menstrual blood, the whiche is turned (through  
 24 the digestiue vertue) from red colour into white, like the colour of the Pappes, euen as Chylley comming from the stomocke to the Lyuer is turned into the colour of the Lyuer.
- 28 Nowe to speake of the bones of the Brest: They be sayde to be triple or threesfolde; and they be numbred to be seuen in the Brest before; and their length is according to the breadth of the brest; and  
 32 their extremities or endes be grystlie, as the ribbes be.

The Brest contains 3 parts: Heart, Lunges, &c.

In it are 80 or 90 Muskles.

\* sign. H. iv.

The Paps protect the spiritual members,

and in women make milke.

The brest has 7 bones,

with gristly ends.

<sup>1</sup> *Colliganes*: f. A binding, tying, or knitting together.—1611. Cotgrave.

<sup>2</sup> *Diafragma*. The Midriffe: a long and round muscle, whereby the vitall parts are separated from the naturall; and the heart and lights from the stomack, and nether bowels.—1611. Cotgrave.

## 56 *Ensiform Cartilage. Spine, Ribs, Heart.* [Ch. VII.]

\* sign. H. IV. M.

At the lower end  
of the Thorax is  
a gristle,  
*Ensiforme*.

The Spine has  
12 Spondels or  
Vertebres,

and 12 Ribs,  
7 true, 5 false.

The Heart is  
King of all  
members;

\* sign. I. L.

And in the \*upper end of Thorax is an hole or a  
concauitie, in which is set the foote of the Furklebone,<sup>1</sup>  
or Canel bone; and in the nether end of Thorax,  
agaynst y<sup>e</sup> mouth of the stomacke, hangeth a gristle <sup>4</sup>  
called *Ensiforme*<sup>2</sup>: and this gristle was ordeyned for  
two causes: One is, that it shuld defende the stomacke  
from hurte outwardly: The seconde is, that in time of  
fulnes it should geue place to the stomacke in time of 8  
needs when it desireth, &c.

Nowe to speake of the parts of the backe behinde-  
foorth: There be .xij. Spondels,<sup>3</sup> through whom passeth  
Mynuca, of whom springeth .xij. payre of Nerves, 12  
br[i]nging both feeling and mouing to the Muscles of  
the Brest aforesayde. And here it is to be noted, that  
in enery syde there be .xij. Rybbes; that is to say,  
.vij. true, and .v. false, because these .v. be not so 16  
long as the other .vij. be, and therefore be called false  
Rybbes, as it may be perceined by the sighte of  
the Eye.

Likewise of the partes that be inwardly; and fyrst 20  
of the Hart, because he is the principal of al other  
members, and the beginning of life: he is set in the  
middest of the brest seuerally by him selfe, as Lord  
and King of \*al members. And as a Lorde or King 24  
ought to be serued of his subiectes that haue their  
liuing of him, So are al other members of the body  
subiectes to the Hart, for they receyue their liuing  
of him, and they doo seruice many wayes vnto him 28  
agayne. The substance of the Hart is, as it were,

<sup>1</sup> *Furcale Os, Furcula Superior, or Furcula* (in *Anat.*), the upper Bone of the *Sternum*, or breast-bone, otherwise call'd *Jugulum*.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Ensiformis Cartilage* or *Mucronata* (*Lat. in Anat.*), is the lowest part of the *Sternum*, or Breast-bone, so nam'd from its sharp-pointed Triangular Shape, resembling the Edge of a Sword.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Spondylus*, A rounde thyng of stone, or leade, put on a spindle: a wherue. A loynt or knot of the backe bone.—1578. Cooper.

## Ch. VII.] *The Heart, its Work, & its 2 Ventricles.* 57

Lazartus<sup>1</sup> fleshe; but it is spermatike, and an official<sup>2</sup> member, and the beginning of life; and he geueth to euery member of the body both blood of life, and  
 4 spirite of breath and heate: for if the Hart were of Lazartus fleshe, his mouing and steering should be voluntarie, and not natural; but the contrarie is true, for it were impossible that the Hart should be ruled  
 8 by Wyl onely, and not by nature. The Harte hath the shape and forme of a Pyneapple; and the brode ende thereof is vpwardes, and the sharpe ende is downewardes, depending a little towards the left  
 12 side. And here it is to be noted, that the Hart hath blood in his substaunce, whereas al other members haue it but in their Veines & Arteirs: also the hart is bounde with certayne Ligamentes to the backpage of  
 16 the brest, but these Lygamentes touche \*not the substaunce of the Hart, but in the ouerpart they spring forth of him, and is fastened, as is aforesayde. Furthermore, the Hart hath two Ventrikles<sup>3</sup> or con-  
 20 cauities, and the left is hyer then the right; and the cause of this holownesse is this, for to keepe the bloud for his nourishing, and the ayre to abate and temper the great heate that he is in, the which is kept in his  
 24 concauities. Nowe here it is to be noted, that to the right Ventrikle of the harte commeth a veyne from the great veyne called *Venakelis*,<sup>4</sup> that receyueh al the

and gives each, life-blood and heat.

The Heart is like a Pine-apple.

\* sign. I. i, bk.

It has 2 Ventricles.

Into the right one, comes a vein from the *Vena Cava*,

<sup>1</sup> *Lacertus*, the sinewy part of the arm, between the shoulder and the elbow. *Lacertous*, brawny, sinewy, musculous, nervous, strong. Bailey's Forcellini. *Lacertous*, Hauing great brawnes and strong sinewes: *Coloni lacertori*. Husbandmen that be strong brawned.—1578. Cooper.

<sup>2</sup> That which fills an office, has a function.

<sup>3</sup> *Ventriculi Cordis*, the Ventricles of the Heart, which are two large Holes, one on the Right, and the other on the Left Side of the Heart: The former receiving the Blood from the *Vena Cava*, a great hollow Vein, sends it to the Lunge; whilst the other receives the Blood from the Lunge, and distributes it thro' the whole Body by the *Aorta*, or great Artery, and its branches.—1706. Kersey's *Phillips*.

<sup>4</sup> *Vena Cava*, the largest Vein in the Body, so named from its great Cavity or hollow Space, into which, as into a common Channel, all the lesser Veins



## 58 *Ventricles of the Heart, & their Functions.* [Ch. VII.

and brings the  
Heart some of the  
thickest blood ;

The rest is refined  
in the left  
Ventricle,

\* sign. I. II.

into a clear spirit,  
between body  
and soul.

From the left  
Ventricle springs  
one Artery taking  
blood to the  
Lungs ;

substance of the blood from the Lyner. And this  
veine that commeth from Venakelis, entreth into the  
hart at the right Ventricle, as I sayde before ; and in  
him is brought a great portion of the thickest blood to 4  
nourishe the Hart with ; & the residue that is left of  
this, is made subtil through the vertue of the hart ;  
and then this blood is sent into a concautie or pytte in  
the mydde<sup>st</sup> of the Harte betweene the two Ventricles, 8  
and therein it is made hote and pured ; and then it  
passeth into the left Ventricle,<sup>1</sup> and there is ingendred  
in it a spirit that is clearer, brighter, and subtiler then  
any corporal \* or bodely thing that is ingendred of the 13  
four Elementes ; For it is a thing that is a meane be-  
tweene the body and the soule. Wherefore it is likened  
of the Philosophers, to be more liker heauenly thinges  
then earthly thinges. Also it is to be noted, that from 16  
the left Ventricle<sup>2</sup> of the Hart springeth two Arteries :  
The one hauing but one cote, and therefore it is called  
*Arterea venalis* : and this Arter carrieth blood from the  
Hart to the Lungs,<sup>3</sup> the which blood is vaporous, that 20  
is tried and left of the Harte, and is brought by this  
Artery to the Lunges, to geue hym nutriment : and  
there he receyueth of the Lunges ayre, and bringeth it  
to the hart to refreshe him with. Wherefore Galen 24

except the *Pulmonaris* empty themselves ; being divided into two thick  
Branches called the *Ascending and Descending Trunks*. This Vein receiving  
the Blood from the Liver and other Parts, carries it to the Right Ventricle of the  
Heart, that it may be there a-new improved and inspirited.—1706. Kersey's  
*Phillips*.

<sup>1</sup> *Pulmonaria Vena*, or *Arteria Venosa*, a Vessel which, after having accom-  
pany'd the Wind-pipe and Pulmonary Artery in all their Branchings in the  
Lungs, and by its small Twigs receiv'd the Bloud out of that Artery, it dis-  
charges itself thro' the left Auricle of the Heart into the Ventricle of the same  
Side.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> The Pulmonary Artery springs from the right Ventricle.

<sup>3</sup> *Pulmonaria Arteria*, or *Vena Arteriosa* (in *Anat.*), a Vessel in the Breast,  
that springs immediately out of the right Ventricle of the Heart, from whence it  
conveys the Blood to the Lungs, having a double Coat like that of the Arteries.  
—1706. Kersey.

sayth, that he fyndeth that mans harte is natural and  
 frendly to the Lunges, for he geueth him of his owne  
 nutrimental to nourishe him with; and the Lunges  
 4 rewardes him with ayre to refreshe him with agayne,  
 &c. The other Arterye that hath two cotes, is called  
*vena Arterialis*, or the great Artery that ascendeth and  
 dissendeth;<sup>1</sup> and of him springeth al the other Arteirs  
 8 that spreade to euery member of the body, for by him  
 is vnified \*and quickneth al the members of the body.  
 For the spirite that is reteyned in them, is the instru-  
 ment or treasure of al the vertue of the soule. And  
 12 thus it passeth vntil it come to the Brayne; & there  
 he is turned into a further digestion, and there he  
 taketh another spirite, and so is made animal, and at  
 the Lyner nutrimental, and at the Testikles generatiue;  
 16 and thus it is made a spirite of euery kinde, so that he,  
 beeing meane of al maner of operations and work-  
 ings, taketh effect. Two causes I fynde why these  
 Arteirs haue two cotes: One is, that one cote is not  
 20 sufficient nor able to withstande the violent mouing  
 and steering of the spirite of lyfe that is caryed in  
 them: The seconde cause is, that the thing that is  
 caryed about from place to place, is of so precious a  
 24 treasure that it had the more neede of good keeping.  
 And of some Doctors this Arteir is called Pulsatiue  
 veyne, or the beating veyne: for by him is perceyned  
 the power & might of the Hart, &c. Wherefore God  
 28 and Nature haue ordeyned that the Arteirs should  
 haue two cotes.

Also there is in the Harte three Pelikels, opening  
 and \*closing the goeing in of the Harte blood and  
 32 spirite in conuenient time. Also the Hart hath two

and another,  
the Aorta,

from which all  
other Arteries  
proceed.

\* sign. I. H. bk.

The Aorta goes  
to the Brain,

and is there  
made animal;  
in the Liver  
nutrimental,  
and in the  
Testicles,  
generative.

This Artery is  
sometimes called  
the Beating Vein.

The Heart has  
3 Valves,  
\* sign. I. H.

<sup>1</sup> *Arteria Aorta* or *Magna*, the great Artery, a Vessel consisting of four Coats, and continually beating, which carries the spirituous Blood from the left Ventricle of the Heart, by its Branches, to all parts of the Body.—1706. Kersey.

## 60 *Heart's Auricles. Pleura, &c. Lungs.* [Ch. VIII.]

and 2 Little Ears  
or Auricles,

with a cartilage.

It is covered by  
the Pericardium.

The Mediastinum  
parts the Breast  
in two.

The Pleura  
covers the Ribs  
in-side.

Little Eares, by whome commeth in and passeth out the ayre that is prepared for the Lungen<sup>1</sup> Also there is founde in the Hart a Cartilaginous audiment, to helpe and strength the selfe Harta. Also the Harta is covered with a strong Pannikle, which is called of some, *Capsula cordeo*, or *Pericordium*,<sup>2</sup> the whiche is a strong case, vnto whome commeth Nerues, as to other inwarde members. And this Panicle *Pericordium* springeth of the vpper Pannicle of the Midriffe. And of him springeth another Panikle, called *Mediastinum*,<sup>3</sup> the which departeth the Brest in the midst, and keepeth that the Lungen fal not ouer the Hart. Also there is an other Pannikle that couereth the Ribbes inwardly, that is called *Pleura*,<sup>4</sup> of whom the Midriffe taketh his beginning. And it is sayde of many Doctors, that Duramater is the originall of all the Pannicles within the body: and thus one taketh of another, &c.

### [CHAPTER VIII.]

sign. I. M. M.

## ¶ *The Anatomie of the Lungen.*

20

The Lunge

**T**HE Lungen is a member spermatike of his fyrst creation; and his natural complexion is colde and dry; and in his accidental complexion he is colde 24

<sup>1</sup> *Auricula Cordis* (in *Anat.*), the two Auricles, or Bosoms of the Heart, which are seated at its *Basis* over the *Ventricles*, and so call'd from their somewhat resembling the Ears of a Man's Head: Their Use is, to receive the Venal Blood from the *Vena Cava* and *Pulmonaris*, and (as it were) to measure it into the *Ventricles*.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Pericardium* (in *Anat.*), a double Membrane, Skin or Bag, which surrounds the whole Substance of the Heart, containing a Liquor to moisten, make alippery, and (as some say) to cool that noble Part.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Mediastinum*, the double Skin, or folding of the *Pleura*, which proceeds from the *Vertebra's* or Turning-joynts of the Back, and diuides the whole Breast from the Throat to the Midriff into two hollow Bosoma.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>4</sup> *Pleura* (*Gr.* in *Anat.*), the Membrane or Skin which covers the In-side of the Chest, sticking to the Ribs.—1706. Kersey.

## Ch. VIII.] *The Lungs, their Lobes, and Functions.* 61

and moyste, lapped in a Nerueous Pannikle, bicause  
 it should gather together the softer substance of  
 the Lungen, and that the Lungen might feele by the  
 4 meanes of the Pannicle, that whiche he might not feele  
 in himselfe. Nowe to proue the Lungen to be colde  
 and drye of kinde, it appeareth by hys swift steering,  
 for he lyeth euer wauing ouer the hart, and about the  
 8 harte. And that he is colde and moyst in rewarde, it  
 appeareth wel, that he receyueth of the brayne many  
 cold matters, as Catarics,<sup>1</sup> and Rumes, whose substance  
 is thinne. Also I fynde in the Lungen, three kinds of  
 12 substance: One is a Veyne comming from the Liuer,<sup>2</sup>  
 bringing with him the Crude or rawe parte of the  
 Chylle<sup>3</sup> to feede the Lungen: Another is *Arterea renalis*,<sup>4</sup>  
 comming from the hart, bringing \* with him the spirite  
 16 of lyfe to nourishe him with: The third is *Trachia*<sup>5</sup>  
*arteria*, that bringeth in ayre to the Lungen; and it  
 passeth through al the left part of them to doo his  
 office. The Lungen is decouided into fise Lobbes<sup>6</sup> or  
 20 Pellikels, or fise portions, that is to say, three in the  
 right side, and two in the left side. And it was done  
 for this cause, that if there fel any hurt in the one part,  
 the others shoulde serue and doo their office. And  
 24 three causes I finde why the Lungen were principally  
 ordeyned: First, that they should drawe colde winde,  
 and refreshe the hart: The seconde, that they shoulde

are wrapt in  
 a neruouse  
 membrane.

They be wauing  
 about the hart.

\* sign. l. iv.

The Lunge are  
 divided into  
 5 Lobes,

to refresh the  
 Heart with  
 cool air

<sup>1</sup> *Catarrihus*, A rewme or stilling downe of humors from y<sup>e</sup> hed.—1578. Cooper.

<sup>2</sup> *Vena Porta*, the Portal Vein, according to Vicary.

<sup>3</sup> *Chyle*, a white Juice in the Stomach and Bowels, proceeding from a light dissolution and fermentation of the Victuals; which Juice, mingling and fermenting with the Gall and Pancreatick Juice, passes the Lacteal Veins, &c., and at last is embodied with the Bloud.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>4</sup> The Pulmonary Artery: see note 1, p. 58, above.

<sup>5</sup> *Trachea, siue Trachia*. The wesin or pipe of the lungs: the winde pipe.—1578. Cooper. See *Arteria Trachea*, note 4, p. 44, above.

<sup>6</sup> Lobes (*Gr.* in *Anat.*), the several Lappets or Divisions of the Lunge, or Liuer.—1706. Kersey.

## 62 *The Œsophagus, Diaphragm, & Belly.* [Ch. VIII.]

and to purify  
the air.

chaunge and alter, and purifie the ayre before it come to y<sup>e</sup> hart, least the hart were hurte and noyed with the quantitie of the ayre: The thirde cause is, that they shoulde receyue from the harte the famous superfluities 4 that he putteth foorth with hys breathing, &c.

Behind the Lungs  
is the Œsophagus.

Behinde the Lunges, towards the Spondels, passeth Mire or Isófagus, of whom it is spoken of in the Anatomie of the necke.<sup>1</sup> And also there passeth both 8

\* sign. l. iv, bk.

Veynes and Arteirs; and al these with *Trachia arteria* doo make a Stoke, replete vnto the Gullet with \* Pannikles, and strong Lygaments, and Glandulus fleshe to fulfil the voyde places. And last of al is the 12

The Midriff or  
Diaphragm

Midriffe;<sup>2</sup> and it is an official member, made of two Pannikles, and Lazartus flesh; and his place is in the midst of the body ouerthwart or in bredth vnder the region of the spirituall members, departing them 16 from the matrix. And three causes I finde why the Midriffe was ordeyned: First, that it should diuide the spirituals from the nutrates: The seconde, that it should keepe the vital colour or heate to dissende 20 downe to the nutrates: The last is, that the malicious fumes reared vp from the nutrates, should not noye the spirituals or vyitals, &c.

divides the  
spiritual organs  
from the nutritive  
ones.

The Wombe or  
Belly

The wombe is the region or the citie of al the 24 Intrils; the whiche reacheth from the Midriffe downe vnto the share inwardly, and outwardly from the Reynes or Kydnes, downe to the bone Pecten, abor: the priue partes. And thys wombe is compounde and 28 made of two thinges, that is to say, of *Syfac* and *Myrac*.<sup>3</sup> *Syfac*<sup>4</sup> is a Pannicle, and a member spermatike, official,

is made of *Syfac*  
(Peritoneum)  
and *Myrac*  
(Epigastrium).

<sup>1</sup> p. 45 above.

<sup>2</sup> *Midriff*, a Membrane, or Skin, which separates the Heart and Lungs from the Lower Bowels. See *Diaphragm*. Kersey. And p. 55, note 2, above.

<sup>3</sup> *Arab. Syfac*, the peritoneum; *Mardc*, the soft parts of the belly.—See Forewords, § 13, 'Vicary's *Anatomia*.' Also p. 63, note 2.

<sup>4</sup> *Siphack* (Arabick), the inner rim of the belly, which is joyned to the cawl,

## Ch. VIII] *The Belly, its 2 Parts, and its Muscles.* 63

sensible, senowy, compound of subtil Wyl, and in complexion colde \* and drye, hauing his beginning at the inner Pannicle of the Midriff. And it was ordeyned

\* sign. K. 1.

4 because it shoulde conteyne and bind together al the Intrals, and that he defende the Musculus so that he oppresse not the natural membra. And that he is strong and tough; it is because he should not be lightly 8 broken, and that those thinges that are conteyned goo not forth, as it happeneth to them that are broken,<sup>1</sup> &c.

As he binds all the entrails together.

*Myrac*<sup>2</sup> is compound and made of foure thinges, that is, of skin outwardly, of fatnes, of a carnous pannicle, 12 and of Musculus fleshe. And that it is to be vnderstanded, that all the whole from Sifac outwarde, is called *Myrac*, it appeareth wel by the wordes of Galen, where he commaundeth, that in al woundes of the wombe, to

Everything outside the Peritoneum is *Myrac*.

16 sewe the Sifac with the *Myrac*; and by that it proueth, that there is nothing without the Sifac, but *Myrac*.

And in this *Myrac* or vtter parte of the wombe,<sup>2</sup> there is noted cyght Muscles, two Longitudinals, proceeding

in it are 8 Muscles;  
2 longitudinal,

20 from the sheelde of the Stomache vnto Os Pecten:<sup>3</sup> two Latitudinales comming from the backe-wardes to the

2 latitudinal,

wombe: and foure Tran<sup>u</sup>erse, of the which, two of them spring from the Ribbes on the right side, and go to the

\* sign. K. 1. bk.

24 left side, to the bones of the Haunches, or of Pecten: and the other two spring from the Ribbes on the left syde,

4 transverse.  
2 going from the ribs on the left, over the belly on the right.

and come ouer the wombe to the righte partes, as the other before doth. Heere it is to be notel, that by the

where the intrals are covered.—1681. (1st ed. 1656) T. Blount, *Glossographia*. (Blount died in 1679.)

<sup>1</sup> Ruptured, having hernia.

<sup>2</sup> *Myrach*, an Arabick Word of the same Signification with 'Epigastrium, the Fore-part of the *Abdomen* or lower Belly, whose upper part is call'd *Hypochondrium*; the middle part, *Umbilicalls*; and the Lowermost *Hypogastrium*.'—1706. Kersey's *Phillips*.

<sup>3</sup> *Pectinis Os*, or *Pubis Os*, the Share-bone, which is the lower and inner, or the fore-part of the *Os Innominatum*. The upper Part of this Bone is call'd its *Spine*, into which the Muscles of the lower Belly are inserted.—1706. Kersey's *Phillips*.

## 64 *The Belly's Muscles. Omentum or Caul.* [Ch. VIII.]

These Muscles  
have 3 powers

and 3 functions.

\* sign. K. H.

The Caul Hies the  
Peritonæum,

protects the  
nutritive organs,

and helps  
Digestion.

vertue of the subtil wyl that is in the Musculus longitudinal, is made perfect the vertue attractiue: and by the musculus Tranuerse is made the vertue retentive: and by the musculus Latitudinale is made the vertue 4 expulsiue. It is thus to be vnderstoode, that by the vertue attractiue, is drawn downe into the Intrals al superfluities, both water, wynde, and dyrt: By the vertue retentive, all thinges are withholden and kept, 8 vntil nature haue wrought his kinde: And by the vertue expulsiue, is put foorth al thinges when Nature prouoketh any thing to be done. Galen sayth that woundes or incisions be more perillous in the middest 12 of the wombe then about the sides, for there the partes be more tractable, then any other partes be. Also he sayth, that in wounds persing the womb there shal not be made \* good incarnation, except Sifac be sewed with 16 Myrac.

Nowe to come to y<sup>e</sup> parts conteyned within: Fyrst, that which appeareth next vnder the Sifac is *Omentum*,<sup>1</sup> or *Zirbus*,<sup>2</sup> the which is a pannicle couering the stomacke 20 and the Intrals, implanted with many Veynes and Arteirs, and not a little fatnes orleynd to keepe moyest the inwarde partes. This Zirbus is an official member, and is compound of a veyne and an Artoir, the which 24 entreth and maketh a line of the vtter tunikle of the stomacke, vnto whiche tunikle hangeth the Zirbus, and couereth al the guttes downe to the shayre. Two causes I finde why they were ordeyned: one is, that 28 they shuld defend y<sup>e</sup> nutritiues outwardly: the seconde is, that through his owne power & vertue he should strength and comfort the digestion of al the Nutrates, because they are more feeblen then other members be, 32 bicause they haue but a thin wombe or skinne, &c.

<sup>1</sup> *Omentum*. The call or sewet wherein the bowels are lapt. The rim or thin skinne wrapping the braine called *Pia mater*.—1578. Cooper.

<sup>2</sup> *Zirbus* (*Arab.*), the Caul that covers the Bowels.—1706. Kersey.

## Ch. VIII.] *The Guts, Duodenum, Jejunum, Ileum.* 65

- Next Zirbus, appeareth the Intrals or guttes, of which Galen saith, that the Guttes were ordeined in the fyrst creation to conuey the drosse of the meate and drinke, & to clense the body of their superfluities. And here it is to be noted that there be sixe portions \* of one whole Gutte, which both in man and beast beginneth at the nether mouth of the stomacke, and 8 so continueth foorth to the end of the Fundament. Neuerthelesse he hath diuers shapes and formes, and diuers operations in the body; and therefore he hath diuers names. And here-vpon the Philosophers say, 12 that y<sup>e</sup> lower wombe of a man is like vnto the wombe of a swine. And lyke as the stomack hath two tunikles, in like maner haue al the Guttes two tunikles. The fyrst portion of the Guttes is called *Duodenum*, 16 for he is .xij. ynches of length, and couereth the nether parte of the stomacke,<sup>1</sup> and receyeth al the drosse of y<sup>e</sup> stomacke: The second portion of the Guttes is called *Ieiunium*,<sup>2</sup> for he is euermore emptie; for to him 20 lyeth euermore the chest of the Gal, beating him sore, and draweth forth of him al the drosse, and clenseth him clene: The .iiij. portion of gutte is called *Ileon*,<sup>3</sup> or final gutte, and is in length .xv. or .xvj. Cubites. 24 In this gutte oftentimes falleth a disease called *Ileaca passio*.<sup>4</sup> The .iiij. gut is called *Monoculus*, or blind

The Entrails  
or Guts

carry off the  
refuse of food.

A Gut has 6 parts,

\* sign. K. II, bk.

from the mouth  
of the Stomach,  
to the Fundament.

1. *Duodenum*,

2. *Jejunum*,

3. *Ileum* (these 3  
make the Small  
Intestine),

<sup>1</sup> *Duodenum* (in *Anat.*), the first of the thin Guts, about Twelve Fingers breadth long, which is continu'd to the *Pylorus*, or lower Orifice of the Stomach, and ends at the first of the Windings under the *Colon*: This Gut differs from the *Jejunum* and *Ileum*, in that it is straighter, and its Coats thicker.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Ieiunium*. The vppermost gutte next the bottoms of the stomacks. *Ieiunium*. Fasting. 1578.—Cooper. *Iejunum* or *Iejunus Intestinum*, the second of the small Guts, which is about eight Foot long in Men, and so call'd from its being often found empty.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Ileum*, or *Ileon*, the third of the small Guts, so call'd by reason of its great turnings, and being about 21 Hands-breadth in Length: it begins where the Gut *Iejunium* ends, and ends itself at the *Cecum*.—Kersey.

<sup>4</sup> *Ileac Passio*, a painful wringing or twisting of those Guts, when they are stop't up, or full of Wind, or troubled with sharp Humours, or when the upper



*a. Monoculus*  
(Cæcum, or *ægut*  
Coel),

\* sign. K. III.

*a. Colon,*

*a. Rectum* (these  
3 make the Large  
Intestine).

The Mesentery is  
a texture of  
mesenteric Veins,

protected by  
membranes, &c.

gut;<sup>1</sup> and it seemeth to haue but one hole or mouth; but it hath two, one neere vnto the other; for by the one al things go in, \*and by the other they goo out agayne: The fyfth<sup>2</sup> is called *Colon*,<sup>3</sup> and receyeth al the droesse depriued from al profitableness; and therefore there commeth not to him any veynes Miseraices, as to the other: The syxte and last is called *Rectum*<sup>4</sup> or *Longaon*,<sup>5</sup> and he is ended in the Fundament, and hath 8 in his nether end foure Muscles, to holde, to open, to shutte, and to put out, &c. Next is to be noted of *Mesenterium*,<sup>6</sup> the which is nothing else but a texture of innumerable veynes Miseraices,<sup>7</sup> ramed of one 12 veyne called *Porta epates*,<sup>8</sup> couered and defended of Pannicles and Ligamentes comming to the Intrals, with the backe ful of fatnes and glandulus fleshe, &c.

The stomacke<sup>9</sup> is a member compound and sper- 16

part of any Entrall sinks or falls in with the lower: It is also call'd *Chordapeus* and *Volubulus*.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>1</sup> *Cæcum Intestinum* (in *Anat.*), the blind Gut, so nam'd, because one end of it is shut up, inasmuch that the Ordure, and the Humour call'd *Chyle*, both come in and go out at the same Orifice.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> orig. fyrst.

<sup>3</sup> *Colon* is one of the thick Guts, and the largest of all, being about 8 or 9 Hands-breadths long, and full of little Cells, which are sometimes stuff'd with Wind and other Matters that cause the Pains of the *Colick*.—Kersey.

<sup>4</sup> *Rectum Intestinum* (in *Anat.*), the straight Gut, which begins at the first *Vertebra* or a Turning-joynt of the *Os Sacrum*, and goes directly downward to the end of the Rump, or the utmost end of the Backbone.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>5</sup> *Longaon*. The arse gutta.—1578. Cooper.

<sup>6</sup> *Mesenterion*. The double skinned that fasten the bowels to the backe, and eche to other, and also wrappeth and incloeth a number of veynes being branches of the gret carrying veyne by which both the guttes are nourished, and the iules of meate concocted is conueyed to the liuer to bee made bloude.—1578. Cooper. *Mesenterium* or *Mesentery*, the double Skin in the middle of the Belly, which fastens the Bowels to the Back, and one to another; being enrich'd with Glandules or Kernels, Nerves, Arteries, Veins, and Vessels, that carry the Juices call'd *Chyle* and *Lympha*.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>7</sup> *Mesenterick Veins* (in *Anat.*), Branches of the *Vena Porta*, that arise from, or rather are enclod'd in the *Mesaraum* or *Mesentery*.—Kersey.

<sup>8</sup> *Mesenterick Vein*, is the Right Branch of the *Vena Porta*, which spreads it self over the Guts, *Iejunum*, *Pleum*, *Cæcum*, and *Colon*.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>9</sup> *Ventricle* (i. e. a little Belly), the Stomach, a skinny Bowl seated in the

## Ch. VIII.] *The Stomach, its Tunicles & Helpers.* 67

matike, senowy and sensible; and therein is made perfect the fyrst digestion of Chila. This is a necessarie member to al the body; for if it fayle in his working, al the members of the body shal corrupte. Wherefore Galen sayth, that the stomacke was ordeyned principally for two causes: The first, that it shoulde be to al the members of the body, as y<sup>e</sup> earth is to al that are ingendred of the earth, that is, that it shoulde desire sufficient \*meate for al the whole body: The seconde is, that the stomacke should be a sacke or chest to al the bodie for y<sup>e</sup> meate, and as a Cooke to al the members of the body. The stomacke is made of two pannicles, of which the inner is Nerueous, and the vtter Carnoous. This inner. pannicle hath musculus longitudinales that stretcheth along from the stomacke to the mouth, by the which he draweth to him meate and drinke, as it were handes. Also he hath Tranuers wyl,<sup>1</sup> for to withholde or make retention. And also the vtter pannicle hath Latitudinal wyl, to expulse and put out; and that by his heate he shoulde helpe the digestiue vertue of the Stomacke, and by other heates geuen by his neighbours, as thus: It hath the lyuer on the right side, chafing & heating him with his lobes or figures: & the Splen<sup>2</sup> on the left syde, with his fatnes, and veynes sending to him melancolie, to exercise his appetites: and aboue him is the Harte, quickening him with his Arteries: Also the brayne, send to him a braunche of Nerues to geue him feeling. And

The Stomach

\* sign. K. H, bk.

is the body's food-sack and cook,

and is made of 2 Membranes,

with longitudinal and latitudinal fibres.

The Liver is on its right,

the Spleen on its left,

the Heart above it.

lower Belly, under the Midriff, between the Liver and the Spleen: It consists of four Tunicks, or Coats, viz. a Nervous, Fibrous, Glandulous, and Membranous one; and its Office is, to ferment or digest the Meat.—1706. Kersey. *Stomachus* (in *Anat.*), is properly the left or upper Orifice of the *Ventricle* or Stomach, by which Meats are received into it; and not the whole Stomach, which is termed *Ventriculus*.—*Ibid.*

<sup>1</sup> On Will, see p. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Splen* or *Lien*, the Spleen or Milt, a Bowel under the left Short Ribs over against the Liver, being a Receptacle for the Salt and earthy Drege of the Blood; where, by the help of the Animal Spirits, they are refin'd, and returning to the Blood, promote its further Fermentation.—1706. Kersey.

\* sign. K. iv.  
The Stomach is  
long, like a gourd.

It holds about 2  
pitchers of water,  
and is liable to  
many diseases.

The Liver

does the second  
Digestion.

\* sign. K. iv, bk.

It has curdled  
blood,

he hath on the hinder parte, dissending of the partes of the backe, many Lygamentes, with the which he is \* bounde to the Spondels of the backe. The forme or figure of the Stomacke is long, in likenes of a gowrde, 4 crooked: and that both holes be in the vpper part of the body of it, is because there should be no going out of it vnadvisedly of those thinges that are receyueld into it. The quantitie of the stomacke commonly holdeth 8 two pitchers of water, and it maye suffer many passions; and the nether mouth of the stomacke is narrower then the vpper, and that for three causes: the first cause is, that the vpper receyueth meate great and boystrous 12 in substance, that there beeyng made subtile, it might passe into the nether: The second is, for by him passeth al the meates, with their chilositie, from the Stomacke to the Lyuer: The thirde is, for that through 16 him passeth al the drosse of the Stomacke to the guttea. And this suffiseth for the Stomacke, &c.

The Lyner<sup>1</sup> is a principal member, and official; and of his first creation, spermatike; complete in quantitie 20 of blood, of him self insensible, but by accident he is sensible, and in him is made the seconde digestion, and is lapped in a Senowy pannicle. And that he is a principall \* member, it appeareth openly by the Phi- 24 losophers, by Auicen and Galen. And it is official, as is the stomacke; and it is of spermatike matter, and senowy, of the which is ingendred his Veynea. And because it was little in quantitie, nature hath added to 28 it cruded blood, to the accomplishment of sufficient quantity, and is lapped in a senowy pannicle. And why the Lyuer is cruded, is, because y<sup>e</sup> Chile<sup>2</sup> which

<sup>1</sup> *Liver*, one of the noble Parts of the Body, and the thickest of all the Bowels; its office being to purify the Mass of Blood by straining.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Chyle*, a white Juice in the Stomach and Bowels, proceeding from a light dissolution and fermentation of the Victuals; which Juice, mingling and

commeth from the stomacke to the Lyuer, should be  
 turned into the colour of blood. And why the Lyuer  
 was ordeined, was, because that al the nutrimental  
 4 blood should be ingendred in him. The proper place  
 of the Lyuer is vnder the false Ribbes in the righte  
 side. The forme of the lyuer is gibbous<sup>1</sup> or bunchy on  
 the back side, & it is somewhat hollow, like the insyde  
 8 of an hande. And why it is so shapen, is, that it  
 should be plicable to the stomacke, like as a hande  
 dothe to an apple, to comforte her digestion; for his  
 heate is to the stomacke as the heate of the fyre is to  
 12 the Potte or Cauldron that hangeth ouer it. Also the  
 Lyuer is bounde with his pellickles to the Diafragma,<sup>2</sup>  
 and with strong Lygamentes. And also he hath Coly-  
 ganes<sup>3</sup> with the \*Stomack and the Intrals, and with  
 16 the Hart and the Raines, the Testicles, and other mem-  
 bers. And there are in hym fise Pellikles like fise  
 fingers. Galen calleth the Lyuer *Massasanguinaria*, con-  
 teyning in it selfe foure substances, Natural and Nutri-  
 20 mental. The naturals is sent with the blood to all  
 partes of the body to be ingendred and nourished.  
 And the nutrimentals be sequestrate, and sent to places  
 ordeyned for some helpinges. These are the places of  
 24 the humors: the blood in the Lyuer, Choler in the  
 chest of gal, Melancolie to the Splen, Flagme to the  
 Lunges and the Iunctures, the watery superfluities to  
 the Reynes and the Vesike.<sup>4</sup> And they goo with y<sup>o</sup>

and makes  
 nutritive blood.

It is bent so

as to fit the  
 stomack,  
 and comfort it.

The Liver is  
 bound to the  
 Diaphragm  
 and to the  
 Stomach, &c.

\* sign. L. L.

It has 5 pellickles  
 like fingers.

The 5 Humours  
 lie in places in  
 the body.

fermenting with the Gall and Pancreatick Juice, passes the Lactcal Veins, &c.,  
 and at last is embodied with the Bloud.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>1</sup> *Gibbous*, hunch-back'd, crump-shouldered, bossed, bunchy.—Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Diaphragm* (g. d. a Fence or Hedge set between), a Term us'd by Anatomists, for the Midriff, a large double Muscle which passes a-cross the Body, and separates the Chest, or middle Cavity, from the Belly or lower one: It is also sometimes call'd *Septum Transversum* and *Diaseptum*.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> Attachment, binding together. See p. 55, note 1.

<sup>4</sup> *Vesica Urinaria*, the Urine-Bladder, a Vessel shap'd like a Pen, which is appointed to receive the Urine separated in the Kidneys, and brought to it from the Ureters.—1706. Kersey.

## 70 *Natural Humours. Veins from the Liver.* [Ch. VIII.]

blood, and sometime they putrifie and make Fœces; and some be put out to the skin, and be resolved by sweat, or by akah, by Pushea, or by Impostumes. And these foure natural humours, that is to say, Sanguin, 4 Choler,<sup>1</sup> Melancoly, & Fleame, be ingendred and distributed in this maner: First ye shal vnderstande, that from the Spermatike matter of the Liuer inwardly, there is ingendred two greates veynes, of the whiche 8 the first and the greatest is called *Porta*, and commeth \* from the concautie of the Lyuer, of whom springeth al the smal veynes *Miseraices*;<sup>2</sup> and these *Miseraices* be to *Vena porta* as the braunches of a tree be to the 12 stocke or tree. For some of them be conteyned with the botome of the stomacke, some wyth *Duodenum*, some with *Icunium*, some with *Yleon*, & some with *Monoculus* or *Saccus*.<sup>3</sup> And from al these guttes they 16 bring to *Vena porta* the succositie of Chyley goeing from the stomacke, & distribute it into the substaunce of the Lyuer. And these veynes *Miseraices* be innumerable. And in these vaynes is begon the seconde 20 digestion, and ended in the Lyuer, like as is in the Stomacke the fyrst digestion. So it proueth that *Vena porta* and *vena Miseraices* serue to bring al the succositie of the meate and drinke that passeth the 24 Stomacke, to the Liuer, and they spreade them selues thorough the substaunce of the Liuer inwardly; and al they stretch towards the gibbos or bowing part of the Liuer, and there they meete and goe al into one vnitie, 28 & make the seconde great veine called *Venaculis*, or *Concana*, or *Vena ramosa*, al is one;<sup>4</sup> and he with his rootes draweth \* out al the blood ingendred from the

The 4 Natural Humours.

From the Liver spring the Portal Veins,

\* sign. L. 1. 11.

and the Mesenteric Veins, which are like the branches of a tree.

They bring Chyle to the Portal Veins, that is,

all the sacrosanct part of meat and drink.

They all unite in the great Vena Cavae of Concan.

\* sign. L. 11.

<sup>1</sup> *Choler*, a hot and dry yellow Humour, contain'd in the Gall-bladder, which is of great use for the Fermentation of the Juice nam'd *Chyle*, and bringing it to Perfection: In a Figurative Sense, it is taken for Passion, Anger, or Wrath. — 1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> See notes 6, 7, 8, p. 66.

<sup>3</sup> See p. 65.

<sup>4</sup> See note 4, p. 52.

3 *lye*  
*the*  
*the*  
*the*

## Ch. VIII.] *Of the Gall, and the Spleen or Milt.* 71

Lyuer, and with his branches ramefying vpwardes and downewardes, carieth and conueyeth it to al other members of the body to be nourished with, where is made perfect the thirde digestion. And also there goeth from the Lyuer, veines bearing the superfluities of the thirde digestion to their proper places, as it shal be declared hereafter.

The *Vena Cava* carries nutritive blood to all parts of the body.

8 Nowe to speake of the Gal, or the chest of the Gal: it is an official member, and it is spermatike and senowy, and hath in it a subtil wyl; and it is as a purse or a pannicular vesike<sup>1</sup> in the holownesse of the Lyuer, about the middle pericle or lobe, ordeyned to receyue the Cholerike superfluities which are ingendred in the Lyuer. The which purse or bagge hath three holes or neckes: by the fyrste, he draweth to him from the Lyuer the choler, that the blood be not hurt by the choler: by the seconde necke, he sendeth to the bottome of the stomacke, Choler to further the digestion of the stomacke: And by the third neck, he sendeth the choler regularly from one gutte to another, to clense them of their superfluities and drosse: and the quantitie of the purse may \*conteyne in it halfe a pinte, &c.

The Gall is like a purse in the hollow of the Liver.

This purse has 3 holes or necks, running to the Liver,

the Stomack,

and the Guts.

\* sign. L. II, bk.

And next is the Splen or the Milte,<sup>2</sup> the whiche is a spermatike member, as are other members, and official, and is the receptory of the melancolious superfluities that are ingendred in the Liuer. And his place is on the lefte side transuersely lincked to the stomacke, and his substaunce is thinne. And two causes I finde why he was ordeyned there: The first is, that by the melancolious superfluities that are ingendred of the Lyuer which he draweth to him, he is nourished with: The seconde cause is, that the nutritiue blood should by

The Spleen or Milt receives the melancholey superfluities of the Liver.

<sup>1</sup> *Vesica*, a Bladder: In *Anatomy*, a membranous or skinny Part, in which any Liquor or Humour is contained; as the Urine, Gall, Seed, &c.—1708. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> See note 2, p. 67.

him be made the more purer and cleane, from the drosse and thicking of melancolie, &c.

The Reins and Kidneys.

Kidneys cleanse the blood.

\* sign. L. H.

The Kidneys are brawny,

full of knots,

and cleanse the urine.

And next of the Raynes and Kidnes:<sup>1</sup> It is to be vnderstoode, that within the region of the Nutrites<sup>4</sup> backwardes, are ordeyned the Kidnes, to cleanse the blood from the waterie superfluities, And they haue ech of them two passages, or holes, or neckes: by the one is drawen the water from Venakelis by two veynes,<sup>8</sup> whiche are called *vena emulgentes*,<sup>2</sup> the length of a fynger of a man, and issueth from the Liuer: and by the other is sente the same water to the Bladder, and is called \**Poros vrithides*.<sup>3</sup> The substance of the Kidnes is 12 Lazartus<sup>4</sup> fleshe, hauing Longitudinal wyl.<sup>5</sup> And their place is behinde on each side of the Spondles, and they are two in number; and the righte Kidney lyeth somewhat hyer then the left, and is bounde fast to the 16 backe with Lygamentes. The Philosopher sayth, that mans kidneys are like to the kidnes of a Cowe, ful of harde knottes, hauing in him many harde concauities, and therefore the sores of them be harde to cure. Also 20 they are more harder in substaunce then any other fleshy member, and that for two causes: one is, that he bee not muche hurt of the sharpnesse of the vrin: The other is, that the same vrin that passeth from him 24 might the better be altered and cleansed through the

<sup>1</sup> *Reins* or *Kidneys*, certain Bowels of a fleshy Substance, whose Office is to strain the Urine into the *Pelues* or Beasons in the middle of their Body, and to cause it to run thro' the Vessels call'd *Ureters* into the Bladder.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Emulgent* (i. e. milking out, or stroking), a Term in *Anatomy*, as the *Emulgent Vessels*, i. e. two large Arteries and Veins, which arise, the former from the descending Trunk of the *Aorta*, or great Artery, the latter from the *Vena Cava*: They are both inserted to the Kidneys; so that the *Emulgent Arteries* carry the Blood with the Humour call'd *Serum*, to them, and the *Emulgent Veins* bring it back again, after the *Serum* is separated from it by the Kidneys.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Ureters* (*Gr.* in *Anat.*), two Conduits or Pipes that proceed from the Reins, and convey the Urine thence to the Bladder. *Celsus* calls them *The White Veins*.—1706. Kersey. See p. 76, below.

<sup>4</sup> *Lacertus*, brawny, muscled.

<sup>5</sup> See p. 47.

- same. Also there commeth from the harte to eche of the kyndes an Arteir, that bringeth with him blood, heate, spirite, and lyfe. And in the same maner there  
 4 commeth a veyne from the Lyuer, that bringeth blood to nourishe the kyndes, called 'blood nutrimental.' The grease of these kyndes or fatnes is as of other inwarde members, but it is an official member, made of thinne  
 8 blood, congeled & cruded \*through colde: and there is ordeyned the greater quantitie in his place, because it should receyue and temper the heate of the kyndes, which they haue of the biting sharpnesse of the water.  
 12 Nowe by the kyndes vpon the Spondels passeth *Venakelis*, or *venecaua*,<sup>1</sup> which is a veyne of a great substaunce, for he receyueth al the nutrimental blood from the Lyuer: and from him passeth many smal  
 16 pypes on euery side; and at the Spondel betweene the Shoulders, he deuideth him selfe whole into two great braunches; the one goeth into the one arme, and the other into the other, and there they deuide them selues  
 20 into many veynes and branches: as it is declared in the armes (p. 52).

The Kidneys are fed by an Artery from the Heart,

and a vein from the Liver.

\* sign. L. III, bk.

*Vena Cava* gets the nutritive blood from the Liver,

and branches between the Shoulders into each arm.

## [CHAPTER IX.]

### ¶ *The Anatomie of the*

#### 24 *Hanches and their parts.*

- T**HE Hanches are the lower parte of the wombe, ioyning to the Thies, and the secret members. And three thinges there are to be noted thereof: the  
 28 first is of the partes containing: the seconde is of the partes conteyned: and the thirde is of the partes \*proceeding outwarde. The partes conteyning out-  
 wardly be *Myrac* and *Sifac*,<sup>2</sup> the *Zirbus*, and the bones.  
 32 The partes conteyned inwardly, are the *Vexike*, or bladder, the spermatike vessels, the Matrix in women,

The Hanches

carries the centralls,

\* sign. L. iv.

the Bladder, the Womb in women, &c.

<sup>1</sup> See note 4, p. 57.

<sup>2</sup> See pp. 62, 63.



74 *The Hanches. Man has 30 Vertebrae.* [Ch. IX.]

*Longaon*, Nerves, Veynes, and Arteries dissending downwards. The partes proceeding outwards, are The Buttocks, and the Muscles dissending to the Thies, of whiche it is to be spoken of in order. 4

The Hanches have 3 real and 3 false Vertebrae.

Everybody has 30 Vertebrae,

hollow in the middle, through which the Spinal Cord passes.

\* sign. L. iv, bk.

Every Vertebra has holes to let Arteries and Veins through.

And first of the partes conteyning, as of Myrac, Sifac, and Zi:bus, there is ynough spoken of in the Anatomie of the wombe.<sup>1</sup> But as for the bones of the Hanches, There be of the partes of the backe, three Spondels of *Ossa sacri*,<sup>2</sup> or of the Hanches, and three *cartilaginis* spondels of *Ossa caude*,<sup>3</sup> called The tayle bonne. And thus it is proued, that there is in euery man, woman and childe .xxx. spondels; and thus they are to be 12 numbered: In the Necke .vij., in the Ridge .xij., in the Reynes .v., and in the Hanches .vj. And it is to be noted, that euery spondel is hollowe in the midst, through which holownesse passeth Nuca from the 16 Brayne, or the marowe of the backe. And some Authors say, that Mynuca is of the same substaunce that the \*Brayne is of, for it is like in substaunce, and in it selfe geneth to the Nerves both the vertue of 20 mouing and feeling. And also euery Spondel is holed on euery side, through the which holes both Arteries and veynes doo bring from the hart and the Lyuer both lyfe & nourishment, like as they doo to the 24 brayne: and from the pannicle of Minuca or the marowe of the backe, through the holes of the sides of the spondels, springeth forth Nerves motiues; and there they intermedle them selues with the strong Lygamentes 28

<sup>1</sup> p. 62.

<sup>2</sup> *Os sacri*. The great bone whereupon the ridge-bone resteth.—1611. Cotgrave. '*Sacrum Os* (in *Anat.*), the broadest of all the Bones of the Back, which bears up all the other *Vertebrae* or Turning-joints, and in shape somewhat resembles a Triangle: It consists of Five or Six Bones, which are plainly distinguishable in Infants, but cannot be so well discern'd in grown Persons.'—1706. Kersey.

*Os de la hancha*. The third part of *Os Ilium*; it selfe consisting also of three parts.—1611. Cotgrave.

<sup>3</sup> *Cauda* (*Lat.*), the Tail of a Beast, a Rump.—Kersey.

## Ch. IX.] *Spondels or Vertebrae. The Whirlbone.* 75

that be insensible; and so the Lygamentes receyue that feeling of the Nerue which the Nerue taketh of Mynuca.

And by this reason many Autors proue, that Mynuca  
4 is of the same substaunce that the Brayne is of, and the panicles of the Nuca<sup>1</sup> is of the substaunce of the pannikles of the Brayne, &c. And eche of these spondels be bounde fast one with another, so that one  
8 of them maye not wel be moued without another.

The Spinal Cord is of the same substance as the Brain.

And so al these spondles together, contained one by another, are called y<sup>e</sup> Ridgbone, which is the fundation of al the shape of the body. They, with the laste  
12 spondel, be conteyned or ioyned to the bones of the \*Hanches, and they be the vpholders of al the spondlea.

The Spondels form the Backbone.

\* sign. M. I.

And these bones be smal towards the tayle bone, and broade towards the Hanches, and before they ioyne  
16 and make *Os pectinia*.<sup>2</sup> And so they be brode in the partes of the Iles,<sup>3</sup> and therefore some Authors calleth it *Ilea*. And ech of these two bones toward the lyuer hath a great rounde hole, into the whiche is receyued  
20 the bone called *Vertebra*,<sup>4</sup> or The whorle bone; Also besides that place there is a great hole or way, through the which passeth from aboue Musculus, veynes and Arteirs, and go into the Theca. And thus it is to be  
24 noted, that of this bone *Pecten*, and the bone *Vertebra*, is made the iuncture of the Thya.<sup>5</sup>

The Vertebra or Whirlbone (see page 84).

<sup>1</sup> *Nucha*, the hinder Part, or Nape of the Neck, otherwise call'd *Cervix*.—Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Pectinis Os*, or *Pubis Os*, the Share-bone, which is the lower and inner, or the fore-part of the *Os Innom'atum*. The upper Part of this Bone is call'd its *Spine*, into which the Muscles of the lower Belly are inserted.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Fr. Iles*: m. The flanks; or the sides of the lower part of the bellie (so tearmed by Anatomists). *Os des Iles*. Is ioyned to the transuerse passages of the sacred bone; and diuided by Anatomists into three parts; the first whereof (being the highest, and broadest) retaines this name; th' other two are [*Os sacri* and *Os de la hanche*: see opposite].—1611. Cotgrave.

<sup>4</sup> *Vertebra*. A ioynt in the body, where the bones so meete that they may turne, as in the backe bone or chine.—1570. Cooper. See p. 85, note 3, below.

*Vertebra*, whyrlbone, 632/6. *Scia*, the whyrlbon, 610/11. 15th cent. Glossaries, in Wülker's *Gloss*.

<sup>5</sup> See *Ginglymus*, note 1, p. 85.

Now to speake of the parts contained: The first thing that commeth to sight is the Bladder, the which is an official member, compoude of two Neruous Pannicles, in complexion colde and dry, whose necke 4 is carnous, and hath Muscles to withholde, and to let go: And in men it is long, and is conteyned with the yard, passing through *Peritoneum*; but in women it is shorter, and is conteyned within the *Vulua*.<sup>1</sup> The 8 place of the bladder is \*betweene the bone of the Share and the tayle gutte called *Longaon*;<sup>2</sup> and in women it is betweene the foresayde Bone and the Matrix. And in it is implanted two long vessels comming from the 12 kidnes, whose names be *Torri vrichides*,<sup>3</sup> bringing with them the Urin or water from the kidnes to the bladder, whiche priuilly entreth into the holes of the pannicles of the bladder by a natural mouing betweene tunicle 16 and tunicle; and there the vrin fyndeth the hole of the nether tunicle, and there it entreth priuilly into the concauitie of the bladder; and the more that the bladder is filled with vrin, the straighter be the two tunicles 20 comprised together; for the holes of the tunicles be not euen, one agaynst another; and therefore if the bladder be never so ful, there may none goe backe agayne. The forme of it is rounde; the quantitie is 24 a pitcher full; in some, more; & in some, lesse, &c. Also there is founde two other vessels, called *vaza seminaria*, or the spermatike vessels.<sup>4</sup> And they come from *Venakelis*, bringing blood to the Testikles, as wel 28 in man as in woman, in the which, by his further digestion, it is made sparne or nature in men. They \*be put outwarde, for the Testikles be without; but

**The Bladder**  
has a neck,  
longer in men  
than in women.  
\* sign. M. 1, bk.

**Two long vessels**  
bring it Urine  
from the Kidneys.

**The Bladder is**  
round, and holds  
a pitcher full.

**The spermatike**  
vessels come from  
*Venakelis* or *Vena*  
*cava*.

\* sign. M. 2.

<sup>1</sup> *Vulva*, the Matrix, Mother, or Womb; also the Womb-passage, or Neck of the Womb; a Woman's Privities.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> The Rectum: see p. 66.

<sup>3</sup> Ureters. See note 2, p. 72.

<sup>4</sup> *Vasa seminaria*, or *Vasa spermatica*, those Arteries and Veins which pass to the Testicles.—1706. Kersey.

in women it abydeth within, for their Testicles stande within, as it shal be declared hereafter.

Next foloweth the Matrix in women: The Matrix  
 4 in woman is an official member, compounde and  
 Nerueous, and in complexion colde and dry. And it  
 is the felde of mans generation; and it is an instru-  
 8 ment susceptible, that is to say, a thing receyving or  
 and the gutte *Longaon*: the likenes of it is as it were  
 a yarde roursed or turned inwarde, hauing testikles  
 likewise, as aforesaid: also the Matrix hath two con-  
 12 cauities or selles, and no more; but al beasts haue as  
 many selles as they haue pappes heades. Also it hath  
 a long necke lyke an vrinall; & in euery necke it hath  
 a mouth, that is to saye, one within, and an other  
 16 without. The inner in the tyme of conception is  
 shutte, and the vtter parte is open, as it was before:  
 and it hath in the middest a Lazartus pannicle, whiche  
 is called in Laten *Tentigo*.<sup>1</sup> And in the creation of  
 20 this Pannicle is founde two vtilities: The first is, that  
 by it goeth forth the vrin, or els it should be shed  
 through\*out al the Vulua: The seconde is, that when  
 a woman doth set hir thies abroad, it altereth the ayre  
 24 that commeth to the Matrix for to temper the heat.  
 Furthermore, the necke that is betweene these two  
 foresayde mouthes, in her concauitie hath many in-  
 uolutions and pleates, ioyned together in the maner of  
 28 Rose leaues before they be fully spread or ripe, and so  
 they be shut togeather as a Purse mouth, so that  
 nothing may passe forth but vrin, vntil the time of  
 chylding. Also about the middle of this necke be  
 32 certain veynes in Maydens, the which in tyme of  
 deflouring be corrupt & broken.<sup>2</sup> Furthermore, in the

The Matrix in women

has 2 cells only,

and a long Neck, with 2 mouthes.

\* sign. M. H. bk.

This Neck has many folds or pleats.

In the middle of the Neck is the Hymen.

<sup>1</sup> *Tentigo*. A stiffenese.—1578. Cooper.

<sup>2</sup> *Hymen*, a fabulous Heathen Deity, presiding over Marriage: In *Anatomy* a folding of the inner Skin of the Neck of the Womb, which is commonly taken

sides of the viter mouth of the mouth are two testicles or stones, and also two vessels of sparne, shorter than mans vessels; and in time of coyt the womans sperme is shed downe into the bottome of the Matrix. Also 4

**Vaines come from the Liver to nourish the Arteries,** from the Lyuer there commeth to the Matrix many 1  
veynes, bringing to the childe nourishing at the time of a womans beeing with childe: and those veynes, at 2  
suche time as the Matrix is voyde, bring therto super-8  
fluties from certayne members of the body, whereof are ingendred womans flowres, &c.

**or to produce women.**

\* sign. M. H. \* And forasmuche as it hath pleased almightie God to geue the knowledge of these his mysteries and 12  
workes vnto his creatures in this present worlde, Here

**The Embryo** I purpose to declare what thing Embreon<sup>1</sup> is, and his 1  
creation. The noble Philosophers, as Galen, Auicen, Bartholomens, and diuers other writing vpon this 16  
matter, say, That Embreon is a thing ingendred in the mothers wombe, the original wherof is y<sup>e</sup> sparne of the man and the woman, of the which is made, by the 20  
might and power of God, in the mothers wombe a chylde, as hereafter more at large shal be declared.

**In the Matrix** First, the feelde of generation called the Matrix, or the 1  
mother, is knowen in the anatomie, whose place is properly betwixt the Bladder and Longaon in the 24  
womax, in which place is sowed, by the tillage of man, a couenable matter of kindly heate; for kindly heafe is cauce efficeens<sup>2</sup> bothe of dooing and working, and 28  
spirite that geueth vertus to the body, and gouerneth 23  
and ruleth that vertue: the which seeds of generation commeth from al the partes of the body, both of the

for a mark of Virginitie, and whose Fibres drawn together make the *Myrtiform Glandula*.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>1</sup> *Embryo, (Gr.)* a Child in the Mother's Womb, after its Members come to be formed, but before it has its perfect Shape.—1706. Kersey. See the curious account of the formation of the Embryo in the *Legendary or Lives of Saints*, in the E. E. Text Soc.'s volume for 1887, p. 319; and earlier in the late Thos. Wright's thin *Popular Treatises on Science*, 1841, p. 188-40. <sup>2</sup> L. Causa efficiens.

Ch. IX.] *Of the Embryo, and the Seed creating it.* 79

man and the woman, with consent & wyl of al  
members, and is shed into the place of concey<sup>u</sup>ing,  
where, through the vertue of Nature, it is gathered  
4 together in the selles of the matrix or the mother, in  
whom—by the way of the working of mans seede,  
and by the way of suffering of the womans seede  
mixte together, so that eche of them worketh in other,  
8 and suffereth in other—there is ingendred Embreon.  
And further it is to be noted, that this sparme that  
commeth both of man and woman, is made & gathered  
of the most best and purest drops of blood in all the  
12 body; and by the labour and chafing of the testikles  
or stones, this blood is turned into another kinde, and  
is made sparme. And in man it is hotte, white, &  
thicke, wherfore it may not spread nor runne abroade  
16 of it selfe, but runneth and taketh temperaunce of the  
womans sparme, which hath contrarie qualities; for the  
womans sparme is thinner, colder, and feebler. And as  
some Authors holde opinion, when this matter is gathered  
20 into the right side of the matrix, then it happeneth a  
male kinde; and likewise on the lefts, the female;  
and where the vertue is most, there it sauoureth most.  
And further it is to be noted, that lyke as the Renet<sup>1</sup>  
24 of the Cheese letteth by him selfe the \* way or vertue of  
working, so letteth the mylke by way of suffering: and  
as the Renet and mylke make the cheese, so doth the  
sparme of man and woman make the generation of  
28 Embreon, of which thing springeth, by the vertue  
of kindly her payne skinne or caule, into the  
which it lappeth selfe in, wherewith afterwarde it  
is tyed to the mothers wombe, the whiche couering  
32 commeth foorth with the byrth of the childe; and if  
it happen that any of the skinne remaine after the byrth  
of the childe, then is the woman in peril of her lyfe.

\* sign. M. iii, bk.

which is gathered  
into the womb-  
cells,

and engenders the  
Embryo.

The seed is made  
of the purest blood  
in the body.

\* sign. M. iv.

And as rennet  
curdles milk, and  
the two make  
cheese, so does  
the seed of man  
and woman make  
the Embryo,  
which is wrapt  
in a Caul.

And if this Pla-  
centa comes not  
away with the  
childe, the mother's  
life is in danger.

<sup>1</sup> Rennet, or Rennet, the Maw of a Calf, commonly us'd to turn Milk for  
Cheese-curds.—1700. p. 100.

## 80 *How the Fœtus is completed in 46 days.* [Ch. IX.

Furthermore it is sayde, that of this Embreon is ingendred the Hart, the Lyuer, the Brayne, Nerues, veynes, Arteira, Cordes, Lygamentes, Skinnes, Gristles, & Bones, receyuing to them by kindly vertue the 4 menstrual blood, of whiche is ingendred both fleshe and fatnes. And as wryters say, the fyrst thing that is shapen be the principals, as is the Harte, Lyuer, and Brayne. For of the Hart springeth the Arteira, of the 8 Lyuer the Veynes, and of the Brayne the Nerues: and when these are made, Nature maketh & shapeth Bones and grystles to keepe & saue them, as the bones of the head for the \* Brayne, the Brest-bones and the Ribbes 12 for the Harte and the Lyuer. And after these springeth al other member, one after another. And thus is the childe bred forth in four degrees, as thus: The first is, when the sayde sparne or seede is at the fyrst as it 16 were mylke: The seconde is, when it is turned from that kinde into another kinde, [it] is yet but as a lump of blood; and this is called of Ypocras, *Fœtus*:<sup>1</sup> The thirde degree is, when the principals be shapen, as 20 the Hart, lyuer, and Brayne: The fourth and laste, as when al the other members be perfectly shapen, then it receyeth the soule wyth life and breath; and then it beginneth to moue it-selfe alone. Nowe in these foure 24 degrees aforesayde, in the fyrst, as milke, it continueth vij. dayes: in the seconde, as *Fœtus*, ix. dayes: in the thirde, as a lump of fleashe ingendring the principals, the space of ix. dayes: and the fourth, vnto the tyme 28 of ful perfection of al the whole members, is the space of xvij. dayes: So is there xlvj. dayes from the day of conception vnto the day of ful perfection and receyuing of the soule, as God best knoweth. 32

The first things made, are the Heart, Liver, and Brain;

then the Bones;

\* sign. M. iv. bk.

then all other Limbs.

So a child is

1. sperm,

2. a lump of blood, *Fœtus*,

2. having a Heart, &c.

4. with all Limbs, and a soul.

It is milk for 7 days; *Fœtus* 9 days; getting a Heart, &c., 9 days;

perfect in 18 days:

46 days altogether.

<sup>1</sup> *Fœtus*. All things brought forth by the generation of man, beast, fish, &c.—1578. Cooper. '*Fœtus*, the Young of all kind of Creatures, especially Humane; but in a stricter Sense, it is a Young Child, whose Parts are perfectly formed in the Womb.'—1706. Kersey.

## Ch. IX.] *Of the Rectum, Anus, and the Yarde.* 81

Now to come agayne to the Anatomie <sup>• sign. H.</sup> of the Hanches: Then come we to *Longaon*,<sup>1</sup> otherwise called, <sup>The Hanches.</sup> The tayle gutte, whose substance is panniculer, as of  
 4 al the other bowels; the length of it is of a spanne long, stretching nigh to the Raynes; his nether parte <sup>The tail-gut's end is the Anus.</sup> is called *Annis*, that is to say, The towel.<sup>2</sup> And about him is found two Muscles, the one to open, the other  
 8 to shutte. Also there is founde in him five veynes or <sup>It has 5 Veins.</sup> braunches of veynes, called *vena emoraidales*,<sup>3</sup> and they haue coliganes<sup>4</sup> with the bladder; wherefore they are partners in their greenea. And when this Longaon is  
 12 raysed vp, then ye may see the veynes and arteirs, and senewes, howe they be braunched and bounde downe to the nether partes. The partes proceeding outwardly are, *Didimus*,<sup>5</sup> *Peritonium*, the Yarde, the Testikles,  
 16 and the Buttocks.

And fyrst it shal be spoken of the yarde, or of mans generatiue members, the which dureth vnto that  
 parte that is called Peritoneum, the which place is from  
 20 the Coddess vnto the Fundament, wherevpon is a seame. Wherefore sayth the Philosopher, Mans yarde is in the ende and terme of the share.<sup>6</sup> The yarde is an official <sup>The Yarde</sup> mem<sup>r</sup>ber, and the tyller of mans generation, compoude  
 24 and made of skinne, brawnes, Tendons, veynes, arteirs, senewes, and great Lygaments: and it hath in it two <sup>has 2 passages,</sup> passages or principal issues, that is to say, one for the <sup>a. for sperms;</sup> sparne, and another for the vrin. And as the Philoso-  
 28 phers say, the quantitie of a common yarde is viij. or <sup>a. for urine; and is 6 or 9 inches long.</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Longaon*. The arse gutte.—1578. Cooper. See p. 66, above.

<sup>2</sup> *Anus*, tuel, fundament. *Tuel*, (among Hunters) the Fundament of a Beast.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Hæmorrhoidal Veins* are twofold, viz. either Inward or outward: The former being Branches of the Mesenterick Vein, pass to the Gut *Rectum*, and thence to the Fundament; But the other arise from the Hypogastrick Vein, and sometimes from a double Branch of it, spreading about the *Sphincter* of the *Anus*.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>4</sup> Attachment, binding together: p. 55, n. 1.

<sup>5</sup> A Membrane: not *Didym*, Twins; also the Testicles of a Man.—Kersey.

<sup>6</sup> *Share* . . . a Man's Yarde or Groin.—Kersey.



ix. ynches, with mesurable bignes proportioned to the quantitie of the matrix. This member hath, as sayth Auicen, three holes; through one passeth incensible polissions<sup>1</sup> and wynde, that causeth the yard to ryse: 4 the other two holes be declared before. Also the yard hath a skinne; and about the head thereof it is double; and that men call *Prepusium*;<sup>2</sup> and this skinne is mouable, for through his consecration the spermatike 8 matter is the better and sooner gathered together, and sooner cast forth from the Testicles: for by him is had the more delectation in the dooing. And the foremost part of the head of the yard before is made of a 12 subtil brawny fleshe, the whiche, if it be once lost, it is neuer restored agayne, but it may wel be skinned, &c.

The Yard has a Prepuce.

\* sign. H. H.

The Cods.

The Testicles are in a purse.

They are of muscular flesh.

The Coddess is a compounde mem<sup>ber</sup> and an officiall; and though it be counted amongst the generatiue 16 members, yet it is called a principal member, because of generation. This purse was ordeyned for the custodie & comfort of the testikles and other spermatike vesselles. And it is also made of two partes, of the 20 inner and the vtter. The vtter is compound, and made of skinne and lazartus, longitudinal and transuersal, in like maner as is the Myrac.<sup>3</sup> The inner parte of the Coddess is of the substaunce of the Sifac,<sup>3</sup> and are in 24 similitude as two pockets drawen together by themselues, and they differ not from the Sifac: and there be two, bicause if there fal any hurt to the one, the other should serue. The Testikles or stones be two, made of 28 glandulus fleshe or curnelly fleshe. And furthermore, through the *Didimus* cometh to the Testicles, from the Brayne, Senowes; and from the Hart, Arteirs; and from the Lyuer, veynes, bringing vnto them both 32

<sup>1</sup> Pollutions, discharges of seed.

<sup>2</sup> *Preputium*, (in *Anat.*) the Fore-skin that covers the Nut or Head of a Man's Yard; also the fore-part of the *Clitoris* in Women.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> See ch. viii, p. 63, above.

Ch. IX, X.] *Groin, Hips. The Leg & its 3 Parts.* 83

feeling and steering, lyfe and spirite, and nutrimental blood, and the most purest blood of al other members of the body, whereof is made the sparne by the labour 4 of the Testicles, the which is \* put foorth in due tyme, as is before rehearsed.

They make Sperme of the parent blood.

\* sign. N. H. bk.

The Groynes be knowen: they be the amy(f) iunc- tures or purging place vnto the Lyuer; and they haue 8 curnelly fleshe in the plying or bowing of the Thyse.

The Groins.

The Hippes haue great brawny fleshe on them; and from thence dissende downwards brawnes, cordes, and lygaments, mouing and bynding together the thies with 12 the Haunches themselves.

The Hips.

[CHAPTER X.]

¶ *The Anatomie of the*

Thyse, Legges, and Feet.

16 **T**HE Legge reacheth from the Ioynt of the Thie vnto the extremitie of the Toes; and I wyl diuide it in partes, as the armes were deuided. One parte is called *Coxa*, or Thigh, and that is al that is 20 conteyned from the ioynt of the Haunche vnto the knee: The seconde part is called *Tibia*; and that reacheth from the Knee to the Ankle: The thirde is the little foote, and that is from the Ankle vnto the 24 end of the Toes. And here it is to be noted, \* that the Thigh, Legge, and Foote are compounde and made as the great arme or hande, with skinne, fleshe, veynes, arteirs, senewes, brawnes, tendons, and bones, whereof 28 they are to be spoken of in order. Of the skinne and fleshe there is ynough spoken of before. And as of veynes and arteirs, in their descending downewardes, at the laste spondels they be deuided into two partes, 32 whereof the one parte goeth into the right Thye, and the other into the left; and when they come to the Thye, they be deuided into other two great branches:

The Leg is of 3 Parts.

1. *Coxa* (or Femur), Thigh,

2. *Tibia* (with the Fibula),

3. Foot,

\* sign. N. H.

all made of skin, flesh, &c.

The Veynes and Arteries diuide and run down each leg.

in 3 branches,

one inside, and      the one of them spreadeth into the inner side of the  
 one outside,      Legge, and the other spreadeth into the vttar syde, and  
 to the ankles,      so braunching, dissende downe the Legge to the ankles  
 forming 4 veins      & feete, and be brought into foure veynes, which be 4  
 used for bleeding.      commonly vsed in letting blood,<sup>c</sup> as hereafter foloweth.  
 One of them is vnder the inner ankle towards the heele,  
 called *Soffena*;<sup>1</sup> and another vnder the vttar ankle,  
 called *Siattica*;<sup>2</sup> and another vnder the hamme, called *8*  
*Poplitica*,<sup>3</sup> the fourth betweene the little Toe and the  
 next, called *Kenalis*.<sup>4</sup> And it is to be noted of these  
 foure great veynes in the legges, of the manyfolde  
 daungers that mighte <sup>e</sup> fal of them, as oft it happeneth. 12  
 There be many other braunches which a Chirurgeon  
 nedeth not much to passe vpon.

The Sinewes      The Senewes spring of the last spondel, and of  
                                  *Os sacrum*, and passeth through the hole of the bone of 16  
 run downwards      the Hippe, and dissendeth to the Brawnes, and moueth  
                                  the Knee & the ham; and these dissende downe to  
 and move the foot.      the ankle, and moue the foote: and the brawnes of the  
                                  feete moue the Toes, in lyke maner as is declared in the 20  
                                  bones of the handes. The first is called *Coxa*, that is,  
                                  The thye bone, and he is without a fellowe,<sup>5</sup> and is ful  
 The top or head      of marow, and is round at eyther ende: The roundnes  
 of the thigh-bone,      that is at the vpper ende is called *Vertebrum*, or Whurle 24  
 or Femur, is called      bone, and boweth inwardes, and is receyued into the  
*Vertebrum*;      boxe or hole of the hanche bone: And at the lower

<sup>1</sup> *Saphena* (*Gr. in Anat.*), the Crural Vein, a Vein that goes down under the Skin of the Thigh and Leg, and turns towards the upper part of the Foot, where it sends forth several Branches, some of which go to the great Toe.—Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> *Sciatick Vein*, a Vein seated above the outward part of the Ancla.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>3</sup> *Poplitick*, belonging to the Ham, as *The Poplitick Vein or Muscle*. *Poplitica Vena*, the Vein of the Ham, which takes rise from the *Iliacl* Branches of the *Vena Cava*, and sometimes reaches down the back of the Leg, even to the Heel.—1706. Kersey. *Poples, poplitic*, The hamme of ones leg behynde the knee.—1578. Cooper.

<sup>4</sup> *Chenalis*!

<sup>5</sup> The Femur is a single bone, and also the biggest in the body.

[end] & towards the Knee, there it hath two roundes, which be receyued into the concauities<sup>1</sup> of the bone of the legges at the knee, called the great Fossela.<sup>2</sup> There is also at the knee a rounde bone called The knee panne.<sup>3</sup> Then followeth the legge, wherein is two bones called *Focile maior* and *Focile minor*;<sup>4</sup> the bygger of them passeth before, making the shape of the shinne, and it is called the shinne bone, and passeth \*downe, making the inner ankle. The lesse passeth from the knee backwardes, dissending downe to the vtter ankle, and there formeth that ankle, &c.

It is 2 lower ends (or condyles) fit into the knee Fossela. Here, too, is the Knee-pan or Patella.

The Leg has 2 bones, Tibia and Fibula.

\* sign. N. iv.

- 12 The bones of the foote are xxvj., as thus: Fyrst, next the ankle bone is one, called in Laten *Orobalistus*.<sup>5</sup> next vnder that towards the Heele is one called *Calcany*.<sup>6</sup> and betweene them is another bone called *Os nauculare*.<sup>7</sup> In the seconde warde there be foure bones, called *Raceti*,<sup>8</sup> as be in the handes. In the thirde and fourth warde be xiiij., called *Digitori*,<sup>9</sup> and .v. called *Pectens*,<sup>10</sup> at the extremities of the Toes next to the

The Foot has 25 bones;

7 in the Tarsus, and 19 in the Metatarsus;

<sup>1</sup> *Ginglymus*, (*Gr.*) a joyning of Bones, when the Head of one is receiv'd into the Cavity or Hollow of another, and again the Head of the latter into the Cavity of the other; as the joynting of the Thigh-bone with the *Tibia*, and of the Shoulder-bone with the *Ulna*.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> See note 3, p. 52.

<sup>3</sup> *Patella*, (*Lat.*) a deep Dish, with broad Brims: Among *Anatomists*, the round, broad Bone at the joynting of the Thigh and Leg; the Whirle bone of the Knee.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>4</sup> *Tibia*, (*Lat.*) a Pipe, Flute, or Flagelet . . . In *Anatomy* the Leg, or Part betwixt the Knee and the Ankle, consisting of two Bones, one outward, nam'd *Focile minus* [*Fibula*], another inward and larger, which has usurp'd the Name of the whole, and is termed *Tibia*, but others call it *Focile Major*, and *Canna Major*.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>5</sup> *Astragalus*, the Huckle-Bone: Also the first principal Bone of the Foot, which with other little ones, makes up that Part which immediately succeeds the Leg, and is call'd the Pastern in Beasts.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>6</sup> *Calcaneus*, or *Os Calcis*, (*in Anat.*) the Heel-bone, or bone of the *Tarsus*, which lies under the *Astragalus*, and is united to them by the Joynting call'd *Ginglymus*.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>7</sup> *Navicular Os*, (*in Anat.*) otherwise call'd *Cymbiforme*, the third Bone of each Foot, in that part of it which immediately succeeds the Leg.—Kersey.

<sup>8</sup> The Cuboid bone, and the Internal, Middle and External Cuneiform bones.

<sup>9</sup> The Metatarsal bones.

<sup>10</sup> The Phalanges.

86 *Thirty Bones in Leg and Foot. Notes.* [Ch. X.

nayles. And thus be there in the foote xxvj. bones,  
 with 3 in the Leg, with the Legge from the Ankle to y<sup>e</sup> Knee, two in the  
 Knee, and one rounde and flat bone, and in  
 the Thye one. And thus shal you 4  
 finde in the whole Legge and  
 Foote .xxx. bones. And this  
 sufficeth for young 8  
 Practitioners.

FINIS.

¶ Imprinted at London  
 by Henry Bamforde,

1577.

12

p. 20, 67. *Wyl. Fr. Fibres*: f. The small strings, or haire-like threads of roots; also, the fibers, threads, or strings of muscles, & veines; in Lincolnshire they are tearmed Cheyres.—1611. Cotgrave.

p. 36. *Secundyns* is probably the choroid or pigmented coat of the Eye.—D'Arcy Power.

p. 36. *Unia* (for *Uves*). Culpepper's translation of Riolanus, 1671, Lond. p. 138, says: 'The *Uves* or Grape skin Coat, and its open hole, which makes the Pupilla or sight of the Eye: the external Face or Circle of the Pupilla is termed Iris, or the Rain bow.'—D'Arcy Power.

p. 42. *Casualtes*. ! Ital. *Causale*, casual, subject to chance. *Casuals*, casual, by fortune.—1598. Florio.

p. 43. *Gwidge*. It. *Guidogi*, the names of certeine veines in the throte. 1598. Florio. *A Worlde of Wordes*. *Gwidge* must be the jugular vein.—D'Arcy Power.

p. 48. *Icinon* is the *Isthmus*, of which Kersey's *Phillips* says: 'In Anatomy it is taken by some for that part which is between the Mouth and the Gullet; also the Ridge that separates the Nostrils.'

p. 48. *Vena organices*: ! *Vena carotidis*, the Carotid Artery.—D'A. P.

p. 62, 64, 74. *Zirbus* or *Omentum*. Ital. *Zi do*, the Cauce wherein the bowels are lapt, as *Oment*, a fat pannicle, caule, sewet, rim or couering, which, being inserted with manie veines springing in branches from *Vena porta*, representh the forme of a net. Properly the caule or sewet, rim or kall, wherein the bowels are lapt. Also the rinde or thin skin inwrapping the braine, called *Pia Matre*, or *Matre pia*. 1598. Florio. *A Worlde of Wordes*.

p. 75, &c. *Spondela*. It. *Spondili*, any small bones, namely, <sup>1</sup> the spondila, the knuckles or turning joints of the back-bone or chine. Also spindle-wherues. Also a kind of Serpent. Also a kind of great Oyster like an Assee-hoofe. 1611. Florio, condensd from ed. 1598; as for 'spindle-wherues,' ed. 1598 has 'a wherue of wood or stone to put on a spindla.'

p. 85. *Os nauiculare*. Ital. *Oss. nauiforme*, a bone next to the ankle in the inside, called in English the 'ship, or betelike bone.' 1611. Florio. *Queen Anna's New World of Wordes*. Not in ed. 1598.

<sup>1</sup> especially.

## APPENDIX OF DOCUMENTS, EXTRACTS, ETC.

	PAGE
<b>I. Grants to Vicary by Kings and Queens:—</b>	
a. Posts of Serjeant of his Surgeons, and Chief Surgeon to Himself, by Henry VIII (29 April, 1530) ... ..	89
b. 21 Years' Lease, from 25 March 1539, of the Tithes and Glebe of the Rectory of Boxley, and the House and 10 pieces of Land in Boxley, Kent; by Henry VIII ... ..	91
c. Bailiffship of Boxley Manor, &c., and 2 Annuities of £10 each, for the joint and separate lives of Thos. Vicary and his son William, by Henry VIII (5 Oct. 1542) ... ..	93
d. Arrears of his Annuity under (a), by Queen Mary (20 Oct. 1553) ...	95
e. Bailiffship of Boxley Manor, &c., and 2 Annuities of £10 each for his Life, by Philip and Mary (23 Jan. 1555) ... ..	96
<b>II. Payments to Vicary and other Surgeons, &amp;c. by Kings and Queens:—</b>	
f. £20 Quarterly, by Hen. VIII (1523-31, from the Record Office) ...	99
g. £20 Quarterly, by Hen. VIII (1538-41, from Arundel MS. 97) ...	103
h. £20 Quarterly, by Hen. VIII (1543-4, from Philipps MS. 3352) ...	110
i. 40 Marks (£26 13s. 4d.) by Hen. VIII, 1538-8; by Ed. VI, 1551; by Eliz., 1560-1 (from the Record Office) ... ..	111
j. £20 Yearly: last payments to M. de la More; first and other to Vicary (from the Record Office) ... ..	113
k. £20 Quarterly, by Edw. VI (1547, 1552-4, from the Record Office) ...	117
l. £20 Yearly, by Elizabeth (1559-61, from the Record Office) ...	121
<b>III. Extracts from the City Repertories, &amp;c. at Guildhall:—</b>	
1. As to the Foundation of Bartholomew's Hospital, and to Vicary ...	123
2. Supplementary Extracts as to Bartholomew's ... ..	147
3. As to Barbers, Unlicens'd Surgeons, and the Plague ... ..	155
4. London Street-Scenes in Vicary's Days ... ..	168
<b>IV. Vicary's Bailiff's Accounts of Boxley Manor ... ..</b>	<b>179</b>
<b>V. Thos. Dunkyn's £100 Mortgage to Vicary of Watsole, and 60 acres in Boxley, and Wyldes, 18 acres, in Stowting, Kent (March 1557-8) ... ..</b>	<b>181</b>
<b>VI. Vicary's Will (27 January 1560-1) ... ..</b>	<b>187</b>

	PAGE
VII. Henry VIII's Statutes relating to Surgeons ... ..	195
<i>m.</i> 3 Hen. VIII, ch. 11, requiring their Examination and Licensing, and forbidding unlicenst folk to practise ... ..	197
<i>n.</i> 5 Hen. VIII, ch. 6, discharging them from serving as Constables, &c. ...	198
<i>a.</i> 22 Hen. VIII, ch. 18, declaring Alien Surgeons not to be Handi- craftsmen ... ..	200
<i>p.</i> 32 Hen. VIII, ch. 40, empowering Physicians to practise Surgery ...	202
<i>q.</i> 32 Hen. VIII, ch. 42 (A.D. 1540), uniting the Barbers and Surgeons ...	202
<i>r.</i> 34 & 35 Hen. VIII, ch. 8, empowering unlicenst folk to treat simple diseases, without Liability under ( <i>m.</i> ), 3 Hen. VIII, ch. 11 ...	208
VIII. Supplement to the Statutes; from the Guildhall Re- cords	
City Orders as to the Exemption from Watch, &c. of Surgeons and Physicians (not Barbers): and the Compromise with the Barber- Surgeons as to Service on Inquests, &c. ... ..	210
IX. Ten Recipes by Henry VIII and his Physicians, with a Poem 'What Veins to Bleed in' ... ..	220
X. Payments by Henry VIII and Princess Mary to Sur- geons other than Thomas Vicary, in 1529-43 ... ..	231
XI. Pay of Army and Navy Surgeons to Henry VIII ... ..	236
XII. Some of Henry VIII's payments to Holbein, and to Players ... ..	238
XIII. The 185 Freemen of the Barber-Surgeons' Company in 1537, with the numbers of the other City Companies ... ..	243
XIV. Ordinances of the Barber-Surgeons of London, A.D. 1529 ... ..	247
The Wardens of the Surgeons and Barber-Surgeons, 1488-91 ...	260
The Barber-Surgeons' right to the 17th Place in the City Companies ...	261
XV. Ordinances of the Barber-Surgeons of York, A.D. 1592 ...	269
The Fresh Ordinances of 1614, as to the Master of Anatomy, &c. ...	279
Later Ordinances, 1676-1768 ... ..	283
XVI. The Corporation of London's Order for the Govern- ment of St. Bartholomew's Hospital, A.D. 1552 ... ..	289

## I.

## GRANTS TO VICARY BY KINGS AND QUEENS.

- a. 20 April, 1530. Grant by K. Henry VIII to Thomas Vicary, his Surgeon, (for his past and future services) of the post of Serjeant of the King's Surgeons, and Chief Surgeon to the King, with its pay of 40 Marks a year, after the death or resignation of Marcellus de la More [1536], appointed Serjeant, 6 Aug. 1513.

Patent Roll. 22 Henry the Eighth. Part 22.  
membrane (23) 13.

*Domino Thoma* Rex Omnibus ad quos & cetera,<sup>1</sup>  
*Vicarie.* salutem.

Cum nos, per literas nostras patentes  
 datas apud Westmonasterium, sexto die Augusti Anno  
 regni nostri quinto, dederimus & concesserimus dilecto  
 seruianti nostro Marcello de la More, Principali Cirur-  
 gico nostro, Officium seruiantis Cirurgicorum nostrorum,  
 Habendum, occupandum officium predictum dicto serui-  
 enti nostro durante vita sua, cum feodis & vadiis, tam  
 de Hospicio nostro, quam aliter ab antiquo debitis &  
 consuetis Habendum & percipiendum modo & forma  
 ante tunc visitatis, simul cum omnibus allocationibus,  
 tam le bouge the Courte, quam vini, ceri, & aliorum  
 requisitionum pro curia, & cum omnimodis preemu<sup>2</sup>nen-  
 ciis, auctoritatibus, proficiis, commoditatibus & auanta-  
 giis dicto officio pertinentibus siue spectantibus, in tam  
 largo & amplo modo & forma, prout aliqua alia persona,  
 tempore celibris [sic] memorie Edwardi, nuper Regis  
 Angliæ quarti, aut aliorum progenitorum nostrorum,  
 dictum officium perantea habens, habuit & percepit in &  
 pro exercitacione eiusdem, prout in eisdem literis paten-  
 tibus plenius continetur. Cum quo etiam nos, per alias  
 literas nostras patentes, datas apud Westmonasterium  
 Tercio die Nouembris, Anno regni nostri septimo, dederi-  
 mus & concesserimus prefato Marcello de la More, per

As Ws, on Aug. 6,  
1513.

made Marcellus de  
la More, Serjeant  
of our Surgeons,  
for his life,

with customary  
 fees

and Bouge of  
 Court,

as in Edw. IV's  
 time;

And as Ws, on  
 Nov. 3, 1513,

gave the said M.  
 de la More

<sup>1</sup> &c. — has literas nostras pervenerint.

<sup>2</sup> = is used for i in *prefatus* below.



90 App. I. a. 1530. *Vicary, Serjeant of Surgeons, &c.*

<p>an Annuity of 40 marks,</p> <p>payable at Michaelmas and Easter,</p> <p>now We (for his good service to Us)</p> <p>make Thomas Vicary</p> <p>Serjeant of our Surgeons,</p> <p>and also our Chief Surgeon, for his life,</p> <p>with wages, bouge of Court, wine, wax, and requisites for ours,</p> <p>as soon as M. de la More shall die, or resign or forfeit his post,</p> <p>and with all fees and benefits</p>	<p>nomen 'dilecti Magistri Marcelli de la More, seruientis nostri &amp; principalis Chirurgici nostri,' quandam annuitatem, siue quendam annualem redditum, quadraginta marcarum sterlingorum, Habendum &amp; annuatim percipiendum eidem Marcello, a festo Pasche Anno regni nostri sexto, durante vita eiusdem Marcelli, ad duos anni terminos, videlicet, ad festa sancti Michaelis Archangeli, &amp; Pasche, per equales porciones, ad Receptam Scaccarij nostri, per manus Theaurarij &amp; Camerarij nostrorum ibidem pro tempore existentium, prout in eisdem literis patentibus plenius continetur, Sciatis, quod nos, de gratia nostra speciali, ac ex certa sciencia &amp; mero motu nostris, ac in consideracione boni &amp; fidelis ac diutini seruicij nobis, per dilectum seruientem nostrum, Thomam Vicarie, ante hec tempora impensi, &amp; impostorum impendendi, dedimus &amp; concessimus, ac per presentes damus &amp; concedimus, prefato Thome Vicarie, predictum officium seruientis Chirurgicorum nostrorum, ac officium Principalis Chirurgici nostri, Necnon ipsum Thomam, seruientem Chirurgicorum nostrorum ac Principalem Chirurgicum nostrum, constituimus, ordinauimus, deputauimus, fecimus &amp; nominauimus, ac per presentes constituimus, ordinamus, deputamus, facimus, &amp; nominamus; ac vadia, feoda, regarda &amp; allocaciones, tam le bouge the Courte de Hospicio nostro, quam vini, ceri, &amp; aliorum requisitorum pro curia, cum omnibus &amp; omnimodis proficiis, commoditatibus, preeminenciis, auctoritatibus, &amp; auantagiis, dicto officio qualitercumque pertinentibus, siue spectantibus, damus &amp; concedimus per presentes, immediate &amp; quacumque officia predicta, per mortem dicti Marcelli de la More, sursum reddicionem literarum patentium predictarum, cessionem, forisfacturam, seu quouis alio modo vacare contigerint, Habendum, occupandum, &amp; gaudendum, dictum officium seruientis Chirurgicorum nostrorum, ac officium Principalis Chirurgici nostri, prefato Thome, durante vita sua, immediate &amp; quacumque dictum officium seruientis Chirurgicorum nostrorum ac officium Principalis Chirurgici nostri, per mortem prefati Marcelli de la more, sursum reddicionem literarum patentium predictarum, cessionem, forisfacturam, seu quouis alio modo vacare contigerint, vel in manibus nostris quouismodo extiterint, cum omnibus &amp; omnimodis vadiis, feodis, regardis, allocacionibus, proficiis, commoditatibus, preeminenciis, auctoritatibus, &amp; auantagiis, dictis officiis, seu eorum altero ab antiquo debitis &amp; consuetis, &amp; in tam amplis modo &amp; forma prout aliquis alius, siue aliqui alij, officia</p>
---	---

App. I. a. 1530. *Vicary's Chief Surgeoncy ; b. Lease.* 91

*predicta*, seu eorum alterum perante habens, occupans, siue exercens, aut habentes, occupantes, vel exercentes, habuerunt vel perceperunt, de & pro occupatione & exercicione eorundem, vel eorum vtriusque. Et vltorius, de vberiori gratia nostra *predicta*, dedimus, & concessimus, ac per presentes damus & concedimus, prefato Thome Vicarie, durante vita sua, *predictam* quandam annu[i]tatem, siue quendam annualem redditum quadraginta marcarum sterlingorum, immediate & quamcito dictum officium seruientis Chirurgicorum nostrorum ac officium Principalis Chirurgici nostri, per mortem prenominati Marcelli de la More, sursum reddicionem literarum patencium *predictarum*, cessionem, forisfacturam, aut quouis alio modo in forma *predicta* vacare contigerint, vel in manibus nostris aliter aliquo modo deuenire extiterit, ac habendum & annuatim percipiendum dictam annuitatem, siue annualem redditum quadraginta marcarum sterlingorum, eidem Thome Vicarie, immediate & quamcito officia *predicta* vacare contigerint, in forma *predicta*, durante vita ipsius Thome Vicarie, ad festa Pasche & sancti Michaelis Archangelis, equis portionibus, ad Receptam Scaccarij nostri *predicti* Soluendam, permanus Thesaurarii Camerarii eiusdem Scaccarij nostri pro tempore ibidem existentibus, Absque compoto, vel aliquo alio, inde nobis vel heredibus nostris reddendo, soluendo, seu faciendo. Eo quod expressa mencio de vero valore annuo, aut de certitudine premissorum, vel de aliis donis siue concessionibus per nos prefato Thome Vicarie ante hec tempora factis in presenti minime factis existit, aut aliquo statuto, ordinacione, prouisione, siue restrictione, inde incontrarium factis, editis, ordinatis, prouisis siue restrictis, aut aliqua alia re, causa, vel materia quacumque non obstante. In cuius & cetera. Teste Regis apud Westmonasterium, xxix die Aprilis.

per breve de priuato sigillo, &  
de dato, & cetera.

that have ever  
been held with  
the said posts.

And further, of  
our more abound-  
ing grace, We  
grant to Thomas  
Vicary, for his  
life, that Annuity  
of 40 marks,—  
so soon as M. de  
la More shall die,  
or resign or forfeit  
it,—

to be paid to him  
at Easter and  
Michaelmas,

without deduc-  
tion.

Witness the King,  
at Westminister,  
29 April 1530.

b. A.D. 1539. Henry VIII's 21-years' Lease to Vicary, of the Tithes, Glebe, and House of the Rectory of Boxley, Kent, with 10 pieces of Land there.

(Court of Augmentations, Inrolments of Leases, Vol. 210, f. 71.  
30 Henry VIII.)

Hee Indentura facta inter excellentissimum Principem et Dominum, Dominum Henricum Octauum, Dei gracia, etc', ex vna parte, et Thomam Vycary, vnum Chirurgi-

This Indenture  
made between  
Henry VIII and  
Thos. Vicary

92 App. I. b. 1539. *Vicary's Lease of Boxley Land, &c.*

witnesses that the King lease to

Vicary the Tithes of Grain, Globe-lands, and

chief House, of the Rectory of Boxley, Kent;

Also 10 pieces of land, Boxley Field, Squyers and Carters crofts, Harpole, Wheat part, Blackland, the Hale, Richett, and Hoyton Meadow.

(Except all big trees and woods, and the Advowson of Boxley parish Church.)

To hold the same to Thos. Vicary for 21 years from 25 March 1539,

at the rent of 20s. that is,

for the Tithes and Globe 25s. 12s. 4d.,

and for the Rectory House and 10 pieces of land, 21s. 6s. 4d.,

half yearly, at Michaelmas and Lady Day.

The King covenants that Vicary shall hold the premises free from other charges.

coram dicti Domini Regia, ex altera parte, Testatur, quod idem Dominus Rex, per aduisamentum et consensum Consilij Curie Augmentacionum reuencionum Corone sue, tradidit, concessit, et ad firmam dimisit, prefato Thome, omnes et omnimodas decimas granorum et terras glebas Rectorie de Boxley in Comitatu Kancie, nuper Monasterio de Boxley in eodem Comitatu, modo dissoluto, spectantes et pertinentes; Ac totum Capitale Mesuagium, ac omnia orrea, stabula, domos, et edificia, dicte Rectorie spectantia et pertinentia; Necnon omnes illas decem pecias terre arabilis, prati, et pasture vocatas Boxley feldle, Squyers croft, Carters croft, grete Harpole, lyttell Harpole, le Whete parke, Blackeland, le Hale, Rysshett, et Hoyton medow, cum pertinen-<sup>1</sup>is, in Boxley predicta, dicto nuper Monasterio spectantes et pertinentes: Exceptis tamen premissorum,<sup>1</sup> et dicto Domino Regi, hereditibus, et successoribus suis omnino reseruatis, omnibus grossis arboribus et boscis premissorum, ac aduocacione vicarie ecclesie parochialis de Boxley predicta: Habendum et tenendum omnia et singula premissa cum pertinentiis, exceptis preexceptis, prefato Thome et assignatis suis a festo Anunciacionis beate Marie Virginis vltimo preterito vique ad finem termini et per terminum viginti et vnus annorum extunc proximo sequencium et plenarie compendiorum: Re lidenlo inde annuatim dicto Domino Regi, hereditibus, et successoribus suis quadraginta libras legalis monete Anglie; videlicet, pro predictis decimis granorum et terris glebis dicte Rectorie viginti sex libras, tresdecim solidos, et quatuor denarios; Et pro predicto Mesuagio, orreis, stabulis, domibus, et edificijs, ac predictis decem pecijs terre arabilis, prati, et pasture, tresdecim libras, sex solidos, et octo denarios; ad festa Sancti Michaelis Archangeli et Anunciacionis beate Marie Virginis, vel infra vnum mensem post virumque festum festorum illorum, ad Curiam predictam per equales porciones soluendos durante termino predicto. Et predictus Dominus Rex vult et per presentes concedit, quod ipse, heredes, et successores sui dictum Thomam et assignatos suos de omnibus redditibus, pensionibus, porcionibus, et denariorum summis quibuscumque de premissis seu de aliqua inle parcella exeuntibus seu soluendis, preterquam de redditu superius reseruato, versus quascumque personas de tempore in tempus,<sup>2</sup> exonerabunt acquietabunt et defendent, ac omnia domos et edificia pre-

<sup>1</sup> Sic.

<sup>2</sup> There is an obvious omission of several words here; the omitted words are supplied from similar leases in the same volume.

missorum, tam in maeremijis quam in cooperturis tegularum et 'slate', de tempore in tempus] tociens quociens necesse et oportunum fuerit, bene et sufficienter reparari, sustentari, et manuteneri facient durante termino [predicto]. Et predictus Thomas concedit per presentes, quod ipse et assignati sui cooperturam straminis ac omnes alias necessarias reparaciones reparaciones <sup>1</sup> premissorum, preter maeremium, tegulas, et 'slate' predicta, de tempore in tempus tociens quociens necesse et oportunum fuerit, bene et sufficienter reparabunt, sustentabunt, et manutenebunt durante termino predicto. Et predictus Dominus Rex ulterius vult, et per presentes concedit, quod bene licebit prefato Thome et assignatis suis de tempore in tempus capere, percipere, et habere da, in, et super premissis competens et sufficiens hedgebote, fyrebote, ploughbote, et cartebote, ibidem et non alibi annuatim expendendum et occupandum, durante termino predicto. In cuius rei testimonium vni parti et cetera, alteri vero parti et cetera. Data apud Westmonasterium, \_\_\_\_\_<sup>2</sup> Anno regni dicti Domini Regis \_\_\_\_\_<sup>3</sup>

Vicary commands that he'll keep the buildings in good repair, and will thatch them with straw, but not shingle, tiles, or slate.

The King grants to Vicary

sufficient wood for hedges, firing, and repair of ploughs and carts,

Date blank.

c. 5 Oct., A.D. 1542. Henry VIII's Grant to Vicary and his son William, of the post of Bailiff of Boxley Manor, with 2 Annuities of £10 each.

(Court of Augmentations; Inrolments of Leases; Vol. 235, f. 98.  
34 Henry VIII.)

Rex, Omnibus ad quos et cetera, salutem. Sciatis quod nos, in consideracione boni, veri, et fidelis seruicij quod dilecti seruientes nostri, Thomas Vycary, Chirurgicus noster, et Willelmus Vacary,<sup>1</sup> filius ipsius Thome, ante hec tempora nobis fecerunt, de gracia nostra speciali, ac ex certa sciencia, et mero motu nostris, dedimus et concessimus, ac per presentes damus et concedimus eisdem Thome et Willelmo, officium Balliuatus Manerii nostri de Boxley, in Comitatu nostro Kancie, Ac omnium Maneriorum, terrarum, tenementorum et hereditamentorum nostrorum quorumcumque, cum pertinenciis tam in Boxley et alibi vbicumque in dicto Comitatu Kancie, quam alibi vbicumque infra regnum nostrum Anglia, que nuper Monasterio de Boxley in eodem Comitatu nostro Kancie, quam alibi vbicumque, dicto nuper Monasterio spectabant siue pertinebant.<sup>2</sup> Ac ipso Thomam et Willelmum Balliuos Maneriorum, terrarum, tenementorum, possessionum, et hereditamen-

For the good service done to Us by Our Surgeons, Thos. Vicary, and his son William,

We grant them the office of Bailiff of Our Manor of Boxley in Kent, and all other Manors

lands belonging to Monastery of Boxley;

<sup>1</sup> Sile.

<sup>2</sup> Blank.

<sup>3</sup> "spectas et pertinen" is an error for "spectabant et pertinebant"—R. Kirk.

94 App. I. c. 1542. *Vicary's Boxley-Manor Bailiwick.*

And we make  
Thos. and Wm.  
Vicary, Keepers  
of Our woods;  
to hold and exer-  
cise the said  
offices personally  
or by deputy,

from 25 March  
1542,

for the life of the  
longest liver of  
them.

And We grant  
the said Thoms  
and Wm. Vicary  
as for £10 a year

out of the said  
Manor, &c.,

from March 25,  
1542, for the  
life of the longest  
liver of them,

payable at  
Michaelmas and  
Lady Day.

And Further, We  
grant to Thos.  
and Wm. Vicary

a 2nd Annuity of  
£10 out of the  
said Manor, &c.,

for the life of the  
longest liver of  
them,

payable at  
Michaelmas and  
Lady Day.

Witness, Sir  
Richard Riche,  
at Westminster  
Oct. 5, 1542.

torum predictorum, Ac Custodes boscorum predictorum,<sup>1</sup>  
facimus, ordinamus, et constituimus per presentes: Ha-  
bendum, exercendum, et gaudendum officia predicta, ac  
eorum utrumque, prefatis Thome et Willelmo, tam per  
se quam per sufficientem deputatum siue deputatos suos  
sufficientes, a festo Annunciationis beate Marie Vir-  
ginis ultimo preterito, ad terminum et pro termino vite  
ipsorum Thome et Willelmi et eorum alterius diucius  
viventis. Et ulterius, de vberiori gracia nostra, damus  
et per presentes concedimus prefatis Thome et Willelmo  
pro exercicio officiorum predictorum, quoddam annuale  
feodum siue vadia decem librarum sterlingorum, exeun-  
cium et exiturarum de Manerija, terris, et tenementis  
predictis: Habendum, gaudendum, et annuatim per-  
cipiendum easdem decem libras eisdem Thome et Wil-  
lelmo, a dicto festo Annunciationis beate Marie Virginis  
ultimo preterito ad terminum et pro termino vite pre-  
dictorum Thome et Willelmi, et eorum alterius, vt pre-  
fertur, diucius viventis, de exitibus et reuencionibus et  
proficiis Maneriorum predictorum et ceterorum premis-  
sorum, tam per manus suas proprias, quam per manus  
Receptorum, firmariorum, tenencium, siue occupatorum  
eorundem pro tempore existentium, ad festa Sancti  
Michaelis Archangeli et Annunciationis beate Marie  
Virginis per equales porciones soluendas. Et ulterius,  
de vberiori gracia ac pro consideratione predicta, per  
presentes concedimus prefato Thome et Willelmo quan-  
dam aliam annuitatem siue annualem redditum decem  
librarum sterlingorum, annuatim exeuncium et exitura-  
rum de Manerija, terris, et tenementis predictis: Hab-  
endum, gaudendum, et annuatim percipiendum easdem  
decem libras prefatis Thome et Willelmo, et eorum  
assignatis, ad terminum vite predictorum Thome et  
Willelmi, et eorum alterius diucius viventis, tam per  
manus suas proprias quam per manus Receptorum,  
tenencium, firmariorum, seu aliorum occupatorum dic-  
torum Maneriorum, terrarum, tenementorum, et here-  
ditamentorum predictorum pro tempore existentium, de  
exitibus et reuencionibus eorundem, ad festa Sancti  
Michaelis Archangeli et Annunciationis beate Marie  
Virginis per equales porciones soluendas. Eo quod ex-  
pressa mencio et cetera. In cuius rei et cetera. Teste  
Ricardo Riche, Milite, apud Westmonasterium, quinto  
die Octobris, Anno regni nostri tricesimo quarto.

per breue de priuato Sigillo,  
virtute Warranti regij.

<sup>1</sup> This shows that something has been omitted above. Compare with  
Patent Roll, 1 & 2 Philip and Mary.—R. Kirk.

<sup>2</sup> See.

d. 20 Oct. 1553. Queen Mary's Order that Thomas Vicary shall be paid the arrears of his Annuity of 20 Marks since the death of Marcellus de la More, under Henry VIII's Grant of 29 April, 1530 (p. 89).

Patent Roll, 1 Mary, part 14, membrane 19 (25).

Regina etc' Thesaurario et Camerarijs suis qui nunc sunt, et qui pro tempore erunt, salutem. Cum Dominus Henricus, nuper Rex Anglis octauus, pater noster, per literas suas patentes, gerentes datam vicesimo nono die Aprilis anno regni sui vicesimo secundo, dederit et concesserit dilecto seruienti suo Thome Vicarie officium Seruientis Cirurgicorum suorum, ac officium principalis Cirurgici sui, necnon ipsum Thomam Seruientem Cirurgicorum suorum ac principalem Cirurgicum suum constituerit, ordinauerit, deputauerit, fecerit, et nominauerit per literas suas predictas, ac vadia, feoda, regarda, et allocationes, tam le bouge the Courte de Hospicio suo, quam vini, ceri, et aliorum requisitorum pro curis, cum omnibus et omnimodis proficiis, commoditatibus, preeminencijs, auctoritatibus, et aduantijs dicto officio qualitercumque pertinentibus siue spectantibus, dederit et concesserit per literas predictas, immediate et quam cito officia predicta, per mortem Marcelli de la More (tunc habentis officia predicta), sursum reddicionem literarum patencium eidem Marcello de la More inde antea confectarum, cessionem, forisfacturam, seu quouis alio modo vacare contingerent: Habendum, occupandum et gaudendum dictum officium Seruientis Cirurgicorum suorum, ac officium principalis Cirurgici sui, prefato Thome durante vita sua, immedietate<sup>1</sup> et quamcito dictum officium Seruientis Cirurgicorum suorum, ac officium principalis Cirurgici sui, per mortem prefati Marcelli de la More, sursum reddicionem literarum patencium predictarum, cessionem, forisfacturam, seu quouis alio modo, vacare contingerent, vel in manibus dicti patris nostri quouismodo existerent, cum omnibus et omnimodis vadiis, feodis, regardijs, allocationibus, proficiis, commoditatibus, preeminencijs, auctoritatibus, et aduantijs dictis officijs, seu eorum altero, ab antiquo debitis et consuetis; Et vltius dederit et concesserit, per literas predictas, prefato Thome Vicarie, durante vita sua predicta, quandam annuitatem, sine quandam annualem redditum, quadraginta marcarum sterlingorum, immediate et quamcito dictum officium Seruientis

Pro Thome Vicarie, de Har-  
ate.

As Henry VIII, by  
Patent of 29  
April, 1530,

made Thos. Vicary  
Sergeant of his  
Sargeons, and  
Chief Sargeon to  
Himself,

and gave him the  
wages, bouge of  
Court, wine, wax,  
and requisites  
for curres,

pertaining to  
these posts,

so soon as Mar-  
cellus de la More  
(who then held  
them) should  
surrender or  
vacate them,  
or die,

(To hold the said  
posts to the said  
Thos. Vicary,  
with all their  
profits, after the  
same become  
vacant);

And as Henry  
VIII also gave to  
Thos. Vicary  
during his life  
an Annuity of  
40 Marks,

<sup>1</sup> Sic.

as soon as the said Post should be received by the said Marcellus de la More,

To hold and take the said Annuity to the said Thos. Vicary

(as soon as it became payable)

by equal half-yearly payments at Easter and Michaelmas,

free from all deductions;

And as Marcellus de la More is dead

We bid you, our Treasurer and Chamberlaine, to pay Thos. Vicary all arrears of his said Annuity of 40 marks,

and also all future payments of it during his life, half-yearly,

you taking his Receipts for the same.

20 Oct. 1553.

Cirurgicorum suorum ac officium principalis Chirurgici sui, per mortem prenominati Marcelli de la More, sursum reddicionem *litterarum* patencium *predictarum*, cessionem, forisfacturam, aut quouis alio modo in forma *predicta*, vacare contingerent, vel in manibus ejusdem patris nostri, aut aliquo alio modo deuenire existerent; Ac *habendum et annuatim percipiendum* dictam annuitatem siue annua'em redditum quadraginta marcarum *sterlingorum* eidem Thome Vicarie, immediate et *quacumque* officia *predicta* vacare contingerent in forma *predicta*, durante vita ipsius Thome Vicarie, ad festa Pasche et Sancti Michaelis Archangeli, equis porcionibus, ad receptam Scaccarij sui soluendarum, per manus Thesaurarij et Camerariorum ejusdem Scaccarij sui pro tempore ibidem existentium, absque compoto vel aliquo alio inde dicto patri nostro, vel hereditibus suis, reddendo, soluendo, seu faciendo; prout in eisdem *litteris* plenius continetur: Et quia *predictus* Marcellus de la More diem clausit extremum, vt pro certo intellexerimus: Vobis mandamus, quod eidem Thome id quod ei a retro est de *predicta* annuitate siue annuali redditu quadraginta marcarum, a die mortis *predicti* Marcelli, et eandem annuitatem siue annua'em redditum quadraginta marcarum exnunc singulis annis, durante vita ipsius Marcelli<sup>1</sup> Vicarie, ad festa *predicta*, de Thesauro nostro ad receptam *predictam*, de tempore in tempus soluatis, iuxta tenorem *litterarum* *predictarum*, recipientes a prefato Thoma, de tempore in tempus, *litteras* suas acquietancie de tempore in tempus huiusmodi soluciones vestras testificantes, que pro nobis sufficientes fuerint in hac parte. Teste Regina apud Westminsterium, xx die Octobris. [1553.]

e. 28 January, 1555. Grant by Philip and Mary, to Thomas Vicary for Life, of the post of Bailiff of Boxley Manor, &c.; and of Two Annuities of £10 each.

Patent Roll, 1 & 2 Philip and Mary, part 11, m. 5 (23).

De concessione pro Thoma Vicary, ad vitam.

For Thos. Vicary's faithful service to Hen. VIII and Edw. VI,

Rex et Regina, Omnibus ad quos, etc.,<sup>2</sup> salutem. Sciatis quod nos, in consideracione boni, veri et fidelis seruicij quod dilectus seruicus noster, Thomas Vycarye, seruicus, siue senior et principalis Chirurgus noster, tam preclarissimis Principibus, Henrico Octauo et Edwardo Sexto, nuper Regibus Anglie, quam nobis, ante hec

<sup>1</sup> So, by mistake for 'Thome.'

<sup>2</sup> etc. = hae litterae nostrae pervenerint.

tempora impendit, de gracia nostra speciali, ac ex certa sciencia, et mero motu nostris, dedimus et concessimus, ac per presentes, pro nobis, heredibus et successoribus nostris, damus et concedimus eidem Thome, officium Balliatus Manerij nostri de Boxley in Comitatu nostro Kancie, ac omnium Maneriorum, terrarum, tenementorum et hereditamentorum nostrorum quorumcumque, cum pertinenciis, tam in Boxley, et alibi vbicumque in dicto Comitatu Kancie, quam alibi vbicumque infra regnum nostrum Anglie, que nuper Monasterio de Boxley, in eodem Comitatu nostro Kancie, modo dissoluto, dudum spectabant et pertinebant, ac parcelle terrarum, tenementorum, et possessionum inde exstebant; Ac officium Custodis omnium boscorum nostrorum tam in dicto Comitatu nostro Kancie, quam alibi vbicumque, dicto nuper Monasterio spectantium siue pertinencium; Ac ipsum Thomam Ballium Maneriorum, terrarum, tenementorum, possessionum, et hereditamentorum predictorum; Ac Custodem boscorum predictorum, facimus, ordinamus, et constituimus per presentes; Habendum, exercendum, et gaudendum officia predicta, et eorum vtrumque, prefato Thome, tam per se quam per sufficientem deputatum siue deputatos suos sufficientes, ad terminum et pro termino vite ipsius Thome. Et ulterius, de vberiori gracia nostra, damus, et per presentes, pro nobis, heredibus, et successoribus nostris, concedimus prefato Thome Vicarye, pro exercicio officiorum predictorum, quoddam annuale feodum, siue vadia, decem librarum sterlingorum, exuncium et exiturarum de Maneriis, terris, et tonementis predictis: Habendum, gaudendum, et annuatim percipiendum easdem decem libras eidem Thome, a Festo Sancti Michaelis Archangeli, Anno regni nostri dicte Regine primo, a quo tempore officia predicta et eorum vtrumque exercuit, ad terminum et pro termino vite naturalis ipsius Thome, de exitibus, reuencionibus, et proficuis Maneriorum predictorum, et ceterorum premissorum, per manus suas proprias, vel per manus receptorum, firmariorum, tenementorum, siue occupatorum eorundem, siue de Thesauo nostro ad receptam Scaccarij nostri Westmonasterij, heredum, et successorum nostrorum, per manus Thesaurarij et Camerariorum nostrorum, heredum, et successorum nostrorum, ibidem pro tempore existencium, ad festa Annunciationis beate Marie Virginis et Sancti Michaelis Archangeli, per equales porciones soluendas. Et ulterius, de vberiori gracia nostra, ac pro consideratione predicta, pro nobis, heredibus, et successoribus nostris, per pre-

VICARY.

We grant to the said Thos. Vicary

the post of Bailiff of Our Manor of Boxley in Kent,

and all other Manors belonging to the dissolved Boxley Abbey;

and the post of Keeper of our Woods there,

to hold and exercise the said posts, to the said Thos. Vicary, personally or by deputy, during his life.

And further we give the said Thos. Vicary, for his said post,

one Annuity of £10,

from Michaelmas, 1555, (since

when he has sld the said posts.)

out of the profits of the said Manors,

or from our Treasurer,

at Lady Day and Michaelmas.

And further We grant to the



98 App. I. e. *Vicary's Bailiwick of Boxley Manor* (2).

said Thos. Vicary  
another Annally  
of 216

out of the said  
Manors,

from Michaelmas,  
1558, for his H<sup>is</sup>,

either from the  
Receivers of the  
said Manors,

or our Treasurer.

Witness the King  
and Queen at  
Westminster,  
Jan. 28, 1566.

sentes concedimus prefato Thome Vycarye quandam  
aliam annuitatem, siue annualem redditum, decem libra-  
rum sterlingorum, annuatim exeuncium et exiturarium  
de Maneriis, terris, et tenementis predictis: Habendum,  
gaudendum, et annuatim percipiendum easdem decem  
libras prefato Thome Vicarie, a dicto Festo Sancti  
Michaelis Archangeli, Anno regni nostri dicte Regine  
primo, ad terminum vite sue, per manus suas proprias,  
vel per manus receptorum, tenencium, firmariorum, seu  
aliorum occupatorum dictorum Maneriorum, terrarum,  
tenementorum et hereditamentorum predictorum, de ex-  
itibus et revencionibus eorundem Maneriorum et ceter-  
orum premissorum, siue de Thesauro nostro, ad receptam  
Scaccarij nostri Westmonasterij, heredum, et successor-  
um nostrorum, per manus Thesaurarii et Camerariorum  
nostrorum, heredum, et successorum nostrorum, ibidem  
pro tempore existencium, ad dicta festa Annunciacionis  
beate Marie Virginis et Sancti Michaelis Archangeli,  
per equales porciones soluendas. Eo quod expressa  
mencio etc'. In cuius rei etc'. Testibus Rege et Regina  
apud Westmonasterium xxviij die Januarij.  
per breve de priuato sigillo.

p. 93. *hedgebote, &c.* Hedgebote, Is necessary Stuff to make *Hedges*, which  
the Lessee for Years &c. may, of common Right, take in his ground leased.—  
Jacob, *Law Dict.*

*Firebote*, Fuel for *Firing* for necessary Use, allowed by Law to Tenants out  
of the Lands &c. granted them. See *Estovers* (Fr. *Estover*, from the Verb  
*Estoffer*). It signifies to supply with Necessaries; and is generally used in the  
Law for Allowances of Wood made to Tenants, comprehending *House-bote*,  
*Hedge-bote* and *Plough-bote* for Repairs &c.—Jacob.

*Plow-bote*, a Right of Tenants to take Wood to repair *Ploughs*, Carts and  
Harrows; and for making *Bakes*, Forks, &c.—Jacob, *Law Dict.*

## II.

PAYMENTS TO VICARY AND OTHER SURGEONS, &c.,  
BY KINGS AND QUEENS.

Payments by Henry VIII to his Physicians, Surgeons,  
Apothecaries, Barber, &c., from Christmas, 1528 to  
Lady Day, 1531.

(From Bryan Tuke's MS. Accounts presented to the Record Office by Sir  
W. C. Trevelyan.)

Quarter Wages due at Cristmas anno xx<sup>mo</sup> [A.D. 1528].

(lf. 8, bk.) Item, for Anthony Chabo, surgion, fee	...	...	x li
Item, for Doctour Bentley, <sup>1</sup> phisicion, fee	...	...	x li
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phisicion, fee	...	...	xxv li
*(lf. 10) Item, for Thomas Vicary, surgion, wages	...	...	v li

(lf. 12, bk.) Rewardes geuen on Wedenesdaye, Newyeres day,  
at Grenewich, anno xx<sup>mo</sup> [1529].

Item, to Iohn Penn, Barbour, in Rewardes	...	...	xl s
(lf. 15, bk.) Item, to Doctour Bentley seruante	...	...	vj s viij d
Item, to Doctour Chambrs seruante <sup>2</sup>	...	...	xij s iij d

(lf. 22, bk.) Yet quarter wages due at our Lady day (a<sup>o</sup> xx<sup>o</sup>,  
A.D. 1529).

Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicion, fee	...	...	x li
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phisicion, fee	...	...	xxv li
(lf. 26, bk.) Item, for Iohn Penn, Barbour <sup>3</sup>	...	...	lxvj s viij d
*(lf. 27) Item, for Thomas Vicary, surgion, wages	...	...	v li

(lf. 28, bk.) Yet halfe yeres Wages due at our Lady [day,  
25 March, an. 21<sup>mo</sup>. 1529].

Item, for Iohn Clemente, phesicion, fee	...	...	x li
Item, for Nicholas Simpson, <sup>3</sup> fee	...	...	ls

<sup>1</sup> For Bentley, Buttes, Chambrs, Harman, Penn, Simpson, &c., see the cut  
from Holbein's Picture in the *Forerunners*.

<sup>2</sup> ? Divines :

Item, to Doctour Stokeleles seruante	...	...	xij s iij d
Item, to Doctour Rawson's seruante	...	...	xij s iij d

<sup>3</sup> For the liveries of damask, budge, velvet, cotton cloth, fustian, canvas,  
&c., for the robes of John Penn, Nicholas Simpson, and Edmund Harman, in  
27 Hen. VIII, see Sir Andrew Windsor's account in the *Miscellaneous Books*,  
Augmentation Office, No. 455, leaf 81 back. (We see none in No. 456.) Also  
for Jn. Penn's liveries under the Warrant of Nov. 22, 1526 (an. xvij<sup>mo</sup>), see  
Wardrobe Accounts, Exch. of Receipts, Parcel 1, a. 11, shelf 293, leaf 9.

For Henry VIII's books, pictures, clothes, utensils, &c., see the excellent

100 App. II. *Henry VIII's Payments to Vicary, &c.*

(*lf. 20, bk.*) Quarter waigis due at Midsomer a° xxj<sup>mo</sup> [A.D. 1529].

(*lf. 40*) Item, for Anthony Skabo, surgion, fee ... .. x ti  
 Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicion, fee ... .. x ti  
 Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicion, fee<sup>1</sup> ... .. xxv ti  
 (*lf. 41*) Item, for Iohn Pen, Barbour ... .. lxvj s viij d  
 \*(*lf. 41, bk.*) Item, for Thomas Vicary, surgion, wagis<sup>2</sup> ... C s

(*lf. 22, bk.*) Quarter Wagis due at Michelmas, anno xxj<sup>mo</sup> [A.D. 1529].

Item, for Anthony Shabo, surgion, fee ... .. x ti  
 (*lf. 54*) Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicion, fee ... .. x ti  
 Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicion, fee ... .. xxv ti  
 \*(*lf. 55*) Item, for Thomas Vicary, surgion, fee ... .. v ti

(*lf. 26*) Half yerres Wagis due at Michelmas, a° xxj<sup>mo</sup> [A.D. 1529].

(*lf. 56, bk.*) Item, for Iohn Clement, phesicion, fee ... .. x ti  
 Item, for Nicholas Sampson, fee<sup>3</sup> ... .. l s

(*lf. 67*) Quarter Wagis due at Cristmas, a° xxj<sup>mo</sup> [A.D. 1529].

Item, for Anthony Schobo, surgion, fee ... .. x ti  
 Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicion, fee ... .. x ti  
 Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicion, fee<sup>4</sup> ... .. xv v ti  
 (*lf. 68*) Item, for Iohn Pen, Barbour ... .. lxvj s viij d  
 \*(*lf. 68, bk.*) Item, for Thomas Vicary, surgion, fee ... .. v ti

(*lf. 72*) Rewardes geuen on Saterday, Newyeres daye, as folowith, at Grenewiche, anno xxj<sup>mo</sup> [A.D. 1530] as hath byn accustummyde.

Item, to Iohn Penn, Barbour ... .. xl s  
 (*lf. 73*) Item, to Doctor Bentleys seruante ... .. vj s viij d  
 Item, to Doctour Chambers seruante ... .. xiiij s

MS., signed by Henry on leaf 1, *Royal Household Book*, temp. Hen. VIII and Edw. VI, *Miscellaneous Books*, Augmentation Office, No. 160: a MS. which ought to be printed. We sadly want a Record-Office-Document printing Society, not to say half-a-dozen of them.

<sup>1</sup> (*lf. 40, bk., and 54, bk.*) Item, for Barnardyne de bolle, myllynar, wages ... .. vj li xx d

(*lf. 41*) Item, for M<sup>r</sup> Whittington, soolmaster to thenixmen ... v li

<sup>2</sup> On *lf. 44 bk., 60 bk.* Dr Sampson, Dean of the King's Chapel, occurs.

<sup>3</sup> Item, for bastard Falconbridge, fee [*occurs elsewhere*] ... .. x li

Item, for Lodwicus Vives, [author] fee ... .. x li

<sup>4</sup> Item for Piro, the frenche coke, fee [*and elsewhere*] ... lxvj s viij d

App. II. *Henry VIII's Payments to Vicary, &c.* 101

(*lf. 84, bk.*) Quarter Wagis due at our Lady Day [25 March, an. 21, 1530].

( <i>lf. 85</i> ) Item, for Anthony Skabo, surgion, fee ...	...	...	x	ti
Item, for Doctour Bentley, phisicion, fee ...	...	...	x	ti
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phisicion, fee ...	...	...	xxv	ti
( <i>lf. 86</i> ) <sup>1</sup> Item, for Iohn Penn, barbour ...	...	...	lxvj s	vij d
<sup>2</sup> ( <i>lf. 86, bk.</i> ) Item, for Thomas Vicarie, surgion, fee ...	...	...	v	ti

(*lf. 87, bk.*) Halue yerres wagis due at our Lade day [an. 21, A.D. 1530].

( <i>lf. 88</i> ) <sup>3</sup> Item, for Iohn Clement, Phisicon, fee ...	...	...	x	ti
Item, for Nicholas Sampson, fee ...	...	...	l	s

(*lf. 88*) Yet paymentes in Maye, anno xxij<sup>do</sup> [A.D. 1530].

( <i>lf. 99, bk.</i> ) Item, more paid the said x <sup>th</sup> day of maye to Anthony Chabo, the kingis Surgion, by the kingis warraunte datid at Windesour, xvij <sup>th</sup> April, anno xxij <sup>th</sup> , xl ti sterling, vpon an obligacon takin of the same Anthony to repaye the said xl ti to the Treasurer of the chamber for the tyme being, to the kingis vse, in maner & forme folowing, that is to say, at Ester next cumyng, x ti, and so yerly after at the said feast of Easter, x ti, till the said summe of xl ti be paid. <sup>4</sup>	} xl li

(*lf. 100*) Quarter Wagis due at Mydesmer [an. 22, A.D. 1530]

Item, for Anthony Skabo, Surgion ...	...	...	x	ti
Item, for Doctour Bentley, phisicion, fee ...	...	...	x	ti
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phisicion, fee <sup>4</sup> ...	...	...	xxv	ti
( <i>lf. 107, bk.</i> ) Item, for Iohn Penn, barbour ...	...	...	lxvj s	vij d
<sup>5</sup> Item, for Thomas Vicary, surgion, fee ...	...	...	C	s

(*lf. 124*) Yet Quarter wagis [Michelmas] anno xxij<sup>do</sup> [A.D. 1530].

( <i>lf. 123, bk.</i> ) Item, for Anthony Scabo, surgion, fee ...	...	...	x	ti
Item, for Doctour Bentley, phisicion, fee ...	...	...	v	ti
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phisicon, fee ...	...	...	xxv	ti

<sup>1</sup> Item, for Anthony Annesley, tenesplay-keper ... vjs vij d  
 Item, for Master Whittington, schoolmaster of Thauxmen ... C s  
 These payments are repeated elsewhere in the MS.

<sup>2</sup> Item, for Iodowicus Vives, annuities ... x li

<sup>3</sup> On leaf 103 Anthony Toto and Barthilmewe Peane, paynters of Florence, get a quarterly payment (£18 15s.) of their wages of £25 a year each, during the King's pleasure. On *lf. 145* they get £12 10s.

<sup>4</sup> Item, for Piro, the frenche coke, fee ... lxvj s vij d

102 App. II. *Henry VIII's Payments to Vicary, &c.*

(lf. 124, bk.) Item, for Iohn Penne, barbour ... .. lxvj s viij d  
 \*(lf. 125) Item, for Thomas Vicary, surgion) ... .. v li

(cf. 125) Halue yeres wagis due at Michelmas a° xxij<sup>do</sup> [1530].

(lf. 126, bk.) Item, for Iohn Clement, phisicon, fee ... .. 1 s

(cf. 125) Quarter Wages due in December [an. 22, A.D. 1530].

Item, for Anthony Scabo, Surgion, fee ... .. x li

Item, for Doctor Bentley, phisicion, fee ... .. x li

Item, for Doctour Buttes, phisicion, fee ... .. xxv li

(lf. 144, bk.) Item, for Iohn Peyn, barbour ... .. lxvj s viij d

\*Item, for Thomas Vicary, chirurgan, fee ... .. v li

(cf. 144, bk.) Paymentes in Januari, Anno Regni Regis Henrici octavi xxij<sup>do</sup> [A.D. 1531].

Rewardes geuen on Sondag, Neweyeres day at Grenewiche, as hathe ben accustomde<sup>1</sup>

(lf. 147, bk.) Item, to Doctor Bentlis seruauant ... .. vjs viij d

Item, to Doctor Chambers seruauant<sup>2</sup> ... .. xij s iij d

(cf. 147) Quarter wagis due at our Lades Annunciacon [25 March, an. 22, A.D. 1531].

Item, for Antony Skabo, Surgion, fee ... .. x li

(lf. 159, bk.) Item, for Doctour Bentley, phisicon, fee ... .. x li

Item, for Doctour Buttes, phisicion, fee ... .. xxv li

\*(lf. 160, bk.) Item, for Thomas Vicarie, Surgion, fee ... .. v li

(cf. 161, bk.) Halfe yeres wages due at our lades annunciacon [25 March, 1531].

Item, for Iohn Clement, phisicion, fee ... .. x li

Item, for Nicholas Sampson, fee ... .. 1 s

In a thin volume of scraps of Wages of Hen. VIII's household, Record Office, B. v. 4, the only entry on our subject is in An. 12,

'Item, for Doctour Farnande, p<sup>r</sup> quenes fysician, xxxij li vjs vij d —per annum, lxvj li xij s iij d.

<sup>1</sup> Item to Master Crane, for playing before the Kinges grace with the children of the Kinges chapell ... .. vj li xij s iij d

(lf. 149) Item to the Kinges plaiers, for plaieng befor his grace vj li xij s iij d

Item to the princesse plaiers, for plaieng befor his grace ... .. iij li

Item to one that gave the king a nightingall singing ... .. xx s

Item to the gardynar of Wansted that gave the King two hecchocks } v s

[? hedgehogs or heathcocks ?] ... .. }

Other payments to Players occur; and the Musicians get monthly wages, &c.

<sup>2</sup> Item, to Doctor Wolman seruauant ... .. xij s iij d

1538-41. Henry VIII's Quarterly and other Payments to his Surgeons (including Thos. Vicary), Physicians, Apothecaries, and Barbers, from the Arundel MS 97, in the British Museum.

Payments in March 1538 (a°. 29).

(leaf 6, back), Item, paide to Thomas Ashe, poticary, . . . for certain medicines, by doctour Cromer and other phesicions, and by the poticarye employed for the releif and conseruacion of the helth of lady Marget Douglass, <sup>1</sup> during the tyme of her beings in the Towre of London, & also sins the same	}	xiiij li iiij d
--	---	-----------------

(leaf 9) Quarter Wages at our Lady day, anno vt supra (March 25, 1538)

Item, for Anthony Chabo, surgion	...	...	x li
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicon, fee	...	...	xxv li
Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicion <sup>2</sup>	...	...	x li
(If 9, bk) Item, for Iohn Penn, Barbour	...	...	lxvj s viij d
* (leaf 10) Item, for Thomas Vicary, Surgion	...	...	Cs
(If 10, bk) Item, for Doctour Mighel, phesicion	xvj li	xiiij s iiij d	
Item, for Iohn Sodo, poticary to the lady Mary	vj li	xiiij s iiij d	
(If 11) Item, for Iohn Alif, Surgion	...	...	Cs
(leaf 11, back) Item, for Austen de Augustyns, <sup>4</sup> phesicion	...	...	xxv li

(leaf 24, back) Quarter Wages at Midsomer, anno xxx° (1538).

Item, for Anthony Chabo, surgion	...	...	x li
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicon	...	...	xxv li
Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicion <sup>2</sup>	...	...	x li
Item, for Iohn Penn, Barbour	...	...	lxvj s viij d
* Item, for Thomas Vicary, Surgion	...	...	Cs
(leaf 26, back) Item, for Doctour Mighel de la	}	xvj li. xiiij s. iiij d	
so [1 Delasco], phesicion to the lady Marye			
Item, for Iohn de Sodo, poticary to y <sup>e</sup> lady Mary	vj li.	xiiij s. iiij d	
Item, for Iohn Aylif, Surgion, fee	...	...	v li

<sup>1</sup> She gets £20 for necessaries on Oct. 1, 1539, an. 30; leaf 40, back.

<sup>2</sup> See the extract from Brewer's Calendar in the Forewords.

<sup>3</sup> (leaf 9, back) Item, for Master Whittington, scholemaster to thenxmen v li. See Holbein's Picture for Penn, Butts, Bentley, Ayliff, &c.

<sup>4</sup> Agostino degli Agostini, Physician to Cardinal Wolsey.

<sup>5</sup> (leaf 26) Item, for Master Whittington, scholemaster to thenxmen v li

104 App. II. *Henry VIII's Payments to Vicary, &c.*

(leaf 36, back) Quarter Wages at Mighelmas, anno vt supra (1538).

Item, for Anthony Chabo, surgion	...	...	x ti
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicion, fee	...	...	xxv ti
Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicion	...	...	x ti
(leaf 37, back) Item, for Iohn Penn, barbour, wagis	...	lxxvj s viij d	
*Item, for Thomas Vicary, Surgion, fe	...	...	v ti
(leaf 38, back) Item, for Doctour Mighel, phesi- cion to my lady Mary...	...	...	xvj ti xiijs iiij d
Item, for Sodo, poticary to the saide lady Mary	...	vj ti xiijs iiij d	

(leaf 39, back) Yet half yeres wages at Michelmas, Anno xxx° (1538).

Item, for Iohn Clement, phesicion, fee	...	x ti
Item, for Austyn de Augustyns, phesicion	...	xxv ti

(leaf 47, back) Yet paymentes in December, anno xxx° (1538).

Item, payde to Anthony Chabo, the kinges surgion, vpon his obligacion of his half yeres wages beforehande, after the rate of xl ti by yere, which half yere is accompted to begyn at <i>Christmas</i> now, and shall ende and be fully ronne at Midsommer next commynge, the somme of ...	}	xx ti
Item, paid to Augustyne de Augustinis, phesicion, in advancement of his half yeres wages, which shalbe fully ronne at the Anunciacion of our Lady next, after the rate of L ti by yere		
...		xxv ti

(leaf 48, back) Quarter Wages at *Christemas*, Anno vt supra (1538).

Item, for Anthony Chabo, surgion, fee	...	x ti
Item, for Doctour Buttes, Phesicion, fee	...	xxv ti
Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicion, fee <sup>1</sup>	...	x ti
Item, for Iohn Penn, Barbour, wagis	...	lxxvj s viij d
*(leaf 51, back) Item, for Thomas Vycary, Surgion	...	v ti
(leaf 52, back) Item, for doctour Mighell de la so, phesicion to y <sup>e</sup> lady Mary	}	xvj ti xiijs iiij d
Item, for Iohn de Sodo, poticary to the sayde lady		
Item, for Iohn Aylif, Surgion, fee	...	vj ti xiijs iiij d
Item, for Iohn Aylif, Surgion, fee	...	v ti

(leaf 53) Rewardes geuen on Wensday, Newyeres day, at Grenewiche, anno vt supra (xxx°: A.D. 1539).

Item, to Iohn Penn, Barbour, in rewarde	...	xl s
Item, to Edmund <sup>2</sup> , Barbour, in rewarde	...	xl s

<sup>1</sup> (leaf 51) Item, for Master Whittington, scholemaster to thenxmen v li  
<sup>2</sup> ? Edmund Harman.

App. II. *Henry VIII's Payments to Vicary, &c.* 105

(lf 53, bk) Item, to Doctour Augustin, phesicion, *seruaunt*<sup>1</sup> ... x s  
 Item, to doctour Bentley *seruaunt* ... vjs viij d  
 Item, to doctour Chambre *seruaunt*<sup>2</sup> ... xij s iiij d

(leaf 66, back) Yet quarter Wages at our Lady day, anno xxx°  
 (1539).

Item, for Iohn Penn, Barbour ... lxvjs viij d  
 \*Item, for Thomas Vicary, Surgion ... v ti  
 (leaf 67) Item, for Doctor Tragonnell, fee ... x ti  
 (leaf 67, back) Item, for doctour Mighell, phi- } xvj ti xij s iiij d  
                   scicon to y<sup>e</sup> lady Mary ... }  
 Item, for Iohn de Sodo, poticary to the lady Mary vj ti xij s iiij d

(leaf 68, back) Yet half-yeres Wages at our Ladyday, anno  
 xxx° (1539).

Item, for Austen de Augustins, phe- } nil, quia prius in decembre  
                   sicion ... } nil, quia prius in decembre

(leaf 78) Yet paymentes in June, Anno xxxj° (1539).

Item, to Thomas Bill, doctour of phisicke, by the kingis  
 Warraunte, dated primo Aprilis, anno xxx° (1538) for the  
 yerly payment to him of his yerly annuitie of x ti by yere,  
 to be yerely paide to him from the feast of the natiuitie of  
 our lorde last, quarterly, by even porcions, v li for twoo  
 quarters fully ronne at the feast of the Natiuite of saint  
 Iohn Baptist, anno tricesimo primo ... } Cs  
 Item, paid to Robert Huicke, Doctour of phisicke, by  
 warraunte dated primo Aprilis, anno xxx domini Regis  
 nunc, for his yerely annutie of x ti by yere, to be paide  
 vnto him from the feast of Christmas last, quarterly, by  
 even porcions, the somme of v ti, for ij quarters fully ronne  
 at the natiuitie of saint Iohn Baptiste, Anno xxxj° ... } Cs

(leaf 79, back) Quarter wages in June, Anno ut supra, (1539).

Item, for Anthony Chabo, surgion ... m t [= nil<sup>3</sup>]  
 Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicion ... xxv ti  
 Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicion ... x ti  
 \* (leaf 80, back) Item, for Thomas Vicarie, Surgion ... v ti  
 (leaf 81, back) Item, for doctour Mighel de la } xvj ti. xij s. iiij d  
                   Soo, phesicion ... }  
 Item, for Iohn de Sodo, poticary ... vj ti. xij s. iiij d

<sup>1</sup> (leaf 54) Item, to doctour Lupton [a divine] *seruaunt* ... xij s iiij d

<sup>2</sup> (leaf 55, back) Item, to Bastard Falconbridge *seruaunt* ... vjs viij d  
 Item, to Bartlet [Berthelet], the kinges printer *seruaunt*,  
 that broght the king a boke couered with crimosen satin } vjs viij d  
 embredred ... }

<sup>3</sup> See leaf 91 back, 89, 82, 68 back, &c.



106 App. II. *Henry VIII's Payments to Vicary, &c.*

(leaf 91, back) Quarter Wages, Anno vt supra (Sept. 1539).

Item, for Anthony Chabo, surgion	...	...	...	nñ
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicion, fee	...	...	...	xxv ti
Item, for doctour Bentley, phesicion	...	...	...	x ti
(leaf 92) Item, for Iohn Penn, Barbour, <i>wagis</i> ...	...	...	...	lxvj s. viij d.
* (leaf 92, back) Item, for Thomas Vicary, Surgion	...	...	...	v ti
(leaf 93, back) Item, for Doctour Mighell de la	...	...	...	} xvj ti. xiijs. iiij d.
Soo, phesicion	...	...	...	
Item, for Iohn de Sodo, poticary	...	...	...	vj ti xiijs. iiij d.
Item, for Iohn Aylif, Surgion, <i>wagis</i>	...	...	...	v ti

(leaf 102) Yet paymentes in Decembre, Anno xxxj° (1539).

Item to Doctour Augustyne, in aduancement of his half	}	xxv ti
[yeres] <i>wagis</i> beforehand; which half yere is accompted to begynne primo Octobris, Anno xxxj° [1539], and shall ende vltimo Marcij then next folowinge		
Item, prested [advanced] to Anthony Chobo, the kingis Surgion, in aduancement of his half yeres <i>wagis</i> beforehande; which half yere is accompted to begynne primo Ianuarij, Anno xxxj° [1540], and shall ende vltimo Iunij then next followinge		} xx ti
Item, payde to Nicholas Alcocke, Surgion, by the kingis warraunt, dated the xx day of Novembre, Anno xxxj° [1539], for the yerely payment to him of x ti by yere, quarterly, by even porcions, from Mychaelmas dicto Anno xxxj° duringe his lyf, the somme of 1s for one quarter fully ronne vltimo Decembris dicto Anno xxxj°	}	1s

(leaf 104, back) Quarter Wages a Cristumas, anno vt supra (1539).

Item, for Anthony Chabo, surgion	...	...	...	x ti
(leaf 105) Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicion	...	...	...	xxv ti
Item, for doctour Bentley, phesicion	...	...	...	x ti
(leaf 105, back) Item, for Iohn Penn, barbour	...	...	...	lxvj s. viij d.
* Item, for Thomas Vycary, surgion	...	...	...	v ti
(leaf 106, back) Item, for Doctour Mighell de la Soo, phesicion	...	...	...	} xvj ti xiijs. iiij d.
Item, for Iohn de Sodo, poticarye	...	...	...	
(leaf 107. Item, for Hans Holbyn, paynter	...	...	...	vj ti xiijs. iiij d.
Item, for Iohn Aylif, Surgion	...	...	...	v ti
Item, for doctour Hyll, phesicion	...	...	...	1s

(leaf 108) Rewardes geuen on Thursday, Newyeres day, at Grenewiche, as hathe be accustomed. Anno tricesimo primo (1540).

Item, to Iohn Penn, Barbour, in rewarde	...	...	...	xl s
---	-----	-----	-----	------

App. II. *Henry VIII's Payments to Vicary, &c.* 107

Item, to Edmund <sup>1</sup> , barbour, in rewards <sup>2</sup> ...	...	xl s
Item, to doctour Bentleis <i>seruant</i> , in rewards ...	...	vjs viij d
Item, to doctour Chambre <i>seruant</i> , in rewards ...	...	xij s iij d
Item, to doctour Augustine <i>seruant</i> <sup>3</sup> ...	...	xs
(leaf 109) Item, to doctour Cromer <i>seruant</i> ...	...	vjs viij d

(leaf 122, back) Quarter wagis at our Lady day, Anno vt supra  
(xxxj<sup>o</sup>, A.D. 1540).

Item, for Anthony Chobo, surgion ...	...	nil
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicion ...	...	xxv ti
Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicion ...	...	x ti
* (leaf 124) Item, for Thomas Vicary, Surgion ...	...	v ti
(leaf 125) Item, for Nicholas Alcocke, surgion ...	...	ls
Item, for Iohn Aylif, surgion ...	...	v ti
(leaf 125, back) Item, for Thomas Bill, phesicion ...	...	ls
Item, for doctour Huic, phesicion ...	...	ls
Item, for Doctour Augustyn ...	} nil, quia solvitur primam diem iij Decembris vltimo	

(leaf 126) Quarter wagis a Midsomer, Anno xxxij<sup>o</sup> (1540).

Item, for Anthony Chabo, surgion ...	...	nil, quia prius
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicon, fee <sup>4</sup> ...	...	xxv ti
Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicion ...	...	x ti
* (leaf 136, back) Item, for Thomas Vycary, surgion ...	...	v ti
(leaf 137, back) Item, for Doctour Mighell de la Soo, phesicion ...	} xvj ti. xiijs. iij d	
Item, for Iohn Sodo, poticary ...	...	vj ti. xiijs. iij d
Item, for Nicholas Alcocke, surgion ...	...	ls
Item, for Iohn Alif, Surgion ...	...	v ti
Item, for Thomas Bill, phisicion ...	...	ls
Item, for Doctour Huic, phesicion ...	...	ls

(leaf 140, back) Quarter wagis at Michelmas, Anno vt supra  
(xxxij<sup>o</sup>, 1540).

Item, for Anthony Chobo, surgion ...	...	x ti
Item, for doctour Buttes, phesicion, fee ...	...	xxv ti
Item, for doctour Bentley, phesicon, <sup>5</sup> ...	...	x ti
* (leaf 150) Item, for Thomas Vicary, Surgion ...	...	v ti
(leaf 151) Item, for doctour Mighel de la so, phesicon ...	} xvj ti xiijs iij d	
Item, for Nicholas Alcock, surgion ...	...	ls

<sup>1</sup> ? Edmund Harman.

<sup>2</sup> (lf 109) Item, to doctour Luptons *seruant*, in rewards ... xiijs iij d

<sup>3</sup> (leaf 109) Item, to doctour Lee *seruant* [? Dr. of Divinity] ... xij s iij d

(leaf 111) Item to Cornelie Hays, that gave a shavingleoth wrought with gold ... } vjs viij d

<sup>4</sup> (lf 136) Item for Basterd Falconbridge ... x li

<sup>5</sup> (leaf 150) Item, for Iohn Haywood, playour on y<sup>e</sup> virginalles 1s. Also on other pages of the MS.

108 App. II. *Henry VIII's Payments to Vicary, &c.*

Item, for Iohn Aylyf, surgion	...	...	v li
(leaf 151, back) Item, for Thomas Bill, phesicon	...	...	1 s
Item, for Doctour Huic, phesicon	...	...	1 s
(leaf 152) Item, payd to Thomas Alsop, gentilman <sup>1</sup> poticary <sup>1</sup> to the kyngis maiestie, by the kyngis warraunt, datid primo Septembria, Anno xxxij <sup>o</sup> [1540], for the yerely payment to him of xxvj li xiijs iiij d, at iiij termes of the yere, by even porcions, from the feast of Midsomer dicto Anno xxxij <sup>o</sup> , during the kyngis pleasur, the first part thereof to be made to him at this terme of Michelmas, vj li xiijs iiij d for one quarter due to him by vertue of the saide warraunt at this present feast of sainte Michaell.	...	vj li. xiijs. iiij d	

(leaf 161) Quarter wagis at Cristunmas, Anno vt supra (xxxij<sup>o</sup>: 1540).

Item, for Anthony Chobo, surgion, fee	...	...	x li
(leaf 161, back) Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicon, fee	...	...	xxv li
Item, for Doctour Bentley, phesicon, fee <sup>2</sup>	...	...	x li
* (leaf 162) Item, for Thomas Vicary, surgion	...	...	v li
(leaf 163) Item, for Doctour Mighell de la Soo, phesicon	...	...	xvj li. xiijs. iiij d
Item, for Iohn de Sodo, poticary to y <sup>e</sup> lady Mary	...	...	vj li. xiijs. iiij d
Item, for Nicholas Alcock, Surgion	...	...	1 s
Item, for Iohn Alyf, Surgion, wagis <sup>3</sup>	...	...	v li
Item, for Thomas Bill, phesicon	...	...	1 s
(lf 163, back) Item, for Thomas Alsopp, gentleman potycary	...	...	vj li xiijs iiij d

(leaf 164, back) Rewardes geuen on Saterdag, Newyeres day, at Hamptoncourte, Anno xxxij<sup>o</sup> (A.D. 1541).

Item, for Iohn Penn, Barbour, in rewarde	...	...	xls
Item, to Edmonde <sup>4</sup> , Barbour, in rewarde <sup>4</sup>	...	...	xls
(leaf 165, back), Item, to Doctour Bentley, phesicon, seruaunt	...	...	vjs viij d
Item to doctour Chambre seruaunt	...	...	xiijs iiij d
(leaf 166) Item, to doctour Augustine seruaunt <sup>5</sup>	...	...	xs

<sup>1</sup> This 'gentleman poticary' is, we take it, in contrast with John Emmingway, the 'yoman poticary' who appears at pages 109, 113, 114, 117, 118, below.

<sup>2</sup> (leaf 161, back) Item, for Iohn Haywood, playour of y<sup>e</sup> virginalles 1 s

<sup>3</sup> (leaf 163) Item, for Rauff Stannowe, scholemaster to the xxmen v li

<sup>4</sup> Edmund Harman.

<sup>5</sup> (leaf 165) Item, to Anthony Tote, seruaunt, that brought the King a table [picture] of the storye of Kinge Alexander } vjs viij d

(leaf 165, back) Item, to Bartlet, the king's printer seruaunt vjs viij d

<sup>6</sup> (leaf 166) Item, to doctour Le [? a divine] seruaunt, in rewarde xlijs iiij d

## App. II. *Henry VIII's Payments to Vicary, &c.* 109

(leaf 180) Quarter wagis at our Lady day, anno vt supra  
(1541).

Item, for Anthony Chabo, surgion	...	...	...	x ti
Item, for doctour Buttes, phesicion, fee	...	...	...	xxv ti
Item, for doctour Bentley, phesicion	...	...	...	x ti
* (leaf 180, back) Item, for Thomas Vicary, Surgion	...	...	...	C s
(leaf 181, back) Item, for doctour doctour [so]	...	...	...	xvj ti. xiiij s. iiij d
de la Soo, phesicion	...	...	...	
Item, for Iohn de Sodo, poticary to y <sup>e</sup> lady Mary	...	...	...	vj ti. xiiij s. iiij d
Item, for Nicholas Alcock, surgion	...	...	...	ls
Item, for Iohn Aylif, Surgion	...	...	...	C s
(leaf 182) Item, for Thomas Bill, phesicion, fee	...	...	...	ls
Item, for Doctour Huic, phesicion	...	...	...	ls
Item, for Thomas Alsop, gentleman poticary <sup>1</sup>	...	...	...	vj ti. xiiij s. iiij d

(leaf 182, back) Quarter wagis at Midsomer anno ut supra  
(xxxiiij<sup>o</sup>: 1541).

Item, for Anthony Chobo, Surgion, fee	...	...	...	v ti
Item, for doctour Buttes, phesicion, fee	...	...	...	xxv ti
Item, for doctour Bentley, phesicion <sup>2</sup>	...	...	...	x ti
* (leaf 194) Item, for Thomas Vycary, Surgion	...	...	...	C s
(leaf 195) Item, for doctour Mighet, phesicion	...	...	...	xvj ti. xiiij s. iiij d
to the lady Mary	...	...	...	
Item, for Iohn de Zoda, poticary to the lady Mary	...	...	...	vj ti. xiiij s. iiij d
Item, for Nicholas Alcock, surgion	...	...	...	ls
Item, for Iohn Aylif, Surgion	...	...	...	C s
Item, for Thomas Bill, phesicion	...	...	...	ls
(leaf 195, back) Item for doctour Huic, phesicion	...	...	...	ls
Item, for Thomas Alsop, gentilman poticary	...	...	...	vj ti. xiiij s. iiij d
Item, for Iohn Emmyngway, yoman poticary	...	...	...	lv s. vij d. ob.
[55a. 7 $\frac{1}{2}$ l.] <sup>3</sup>	...	...	...	

<sup>1</sup> (leaf 182, back) Item, for bastard Falconbridge x li. This entry is on other pages too.

<sup>2</sup> leaf 194: Item, for Iohn Haywood, playour on the Virginalles C s

<sup>3</sup> Item, for Thomas Sperin and his son, *sergiantes of the beeres* [bearwards] lvij s *quadrante dimidium*. (Was this half-farthing a joke?)

In this MS. we notice that for the words 'rat-catcher and mole-catcher,' 'rattaker and molletaker' are used.

(leaf 6) in March 1538 (a<sup>o</sup>. 29).

Item, paide John Willis, the Kingis rattaker for his wagis } lxx s. viij d  
after iiij by day (from Sept. 8 to April 1) ...

(leaf 151, back) Michaelmas, 1540 (a<sup>o</sup>. 32).

Item, for Iohn Wylke, rattaker ... lxx s. xd

(leaf 170: Feb. 1541) Item, for Iohn Whatson, molletaker ... lxx s. iiij d

(leaf 182, back: Lady Day 1541) Item for Iohn Wylly, rattaker lxx s. xd

(leaf 193: June 1541) Item, for Iohn Whatson, molletaker ... x s

110 App. II. *Henry VIII's Payments to Vicary, &c.*

1543-4. Further Quarterly Payments to Vicary, &c.

(From the Phillipps MS, No. 3852.)

The following payments of Henry to his Surgeons and Physicians, from Christmas 1543 to Michaelmas 1544, are taken from the late Sir Thomas Phillipps's MS, No. 3852, at Thirlestone House, Cheltenham, by his grandson Mr. T. Fitzroy Fenwick, who, we are glad to say, inherits his grandfather's care for MSS, and has been good enough to send us these entries:—

Receipts and Expenses of Hen. VIII, from Oct. 35th year, to Oct. 36th year, A.D. 1543-4.

Quarter wagis for *Cristmas anno Regni Regis Henrici tricesimo quinto* (A.D. 1543)

[Under this head, among other entries, occur the following]

Item, for Anthony Chabo, Surgeon	...	...	...	x li
Item, for Doctour Buttes, Phisicion	...	...	...	xxv li
Item, for Doctour Benteley, phisicion	...	...	...	x li
*Item, for Thomas Vicary, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs
Item, for Nicholas Alcock, Surgeon	...	...	...	Ls
Item, for John Ayliff, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs
Item, for Thomas Billa, phisicion	...	...	...	xii li xs
Item, for Doctour huic, phisicion	...	...	...	Ls
Item, for Richard fferrye, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs

Quarter Wagis for our lady day, Anno Regni Regis Henrici octaui tricesimo quinto (A.D. 1544)

Item, for Anthony Chabo, Surgeon	...	...	...	x li
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phisicion	...	...	...	xxv li
Item, for Doctour Banteley, phisicion	...	...	...	x li
*Item, for Thomas Vicary, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs
Item, for Nicholas Alcock, Surgeon	...	...	...	Ls
Item, for John Ayliff, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs
Item, for Thomas Billa, phisicion	...	...	...	xii li xs
Item, for Doctour Huyck, phisicion	...	...	...	Ls
Item, for Richard fferrye, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs
Item, for Richard Asser, Surgeon	...	...	...	xlvs vid

Quater Wagis for Midsomer, Anno Regni Regis Henrici 'viii,' xxxvi<sup>to</sup> (A.D. 1544)

Item, to Anthony Chabo, Surgeon	...	...	...	x li
Item, to Doctour Buttes, phisicion	...	...	...	xxv li
Item, to Doctour Benteley, phisicion	...	...	...	x li

## App. II. *First Payment of V.'s 40-Marks' Annuity.* 111

*Item, to Thomas Vicary, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs
Item, to Nicholas Alcock, Surgeon	...	...	...	Ls
Item, to John Ayliff, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs
Item, to Thomas Bille, phisicion	...	...	...	xii li xs
Item, to Doctour huyck, phisicion	...	...	...	Ls
Item, to Richard fferry, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs

### Quarter Wagis at Mighelmas, Anno Regni Regis, Henrici octavi, xxxvi<sup>to</sup> (A.D. 1544).

Item, for Anthony Chabo, Surgeon	...	...	...	x li
Item, for Doctour Buttes, phesicion	...	...	...	xxv li
Item, for Doctour Benteley, phesicion	...	...	...	x li
*Item, for Thomas Vicary, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs
Item, for Nicholas Alcock, Surgeon	...	...	...	Ls
Item, for John Ayliff, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs
Item, for Thomas Bille, phisicion	...	...	...	xii li xs
Item, for Doctour Huick, phisicion	...	...	...	Ls
Item, for Richard fferry, Surgeon	...	...	...	Cs
Item, for Cornelius Zefridus <sup>1</sup> , doctour of phesik	...	...	...	} xi li xiii s iiiij d
to the Lady Anne of Cleves	...	...	...	

### Earliest<sup>2</sup> and Latest Payments of Vicary's Annuity of 40 Marks (£26 13s. 4d.), granted by Henry VIII on 29 April, 1530.

Tellers' Roll (Exchequer of Receipt), 27-28 Hen. VIII, No. 89.

<sup>2</sup> Easter, 28 Hen. VIII (A.D. 1536).

Thome Vycary, capitali Cirurgico Domini Regis, de Annuitate sua ad xxvj li. xiiij s. iiiij d. per annum, sibi debita a viij

<sup>1</sup> ? MS. Refridus.

<sup>2</sup> This is the last payment to Marcellus de la More in the Tellers' Rolls of the Exchequer:—

N<sup>o</sup>. 88. Easter, 27 Hen. VIII. (1535.)  
To Marcellus de la More, &c., by his own hands, by writ current (for the half year) ... .. £13 6s. 8d.

N<sup>o</sup>. 89. Mich. 27 Hen. VIII. (1535.)  
Nothing as to De la More in this and the following half-years down to Easter, 30 Hen. VIII. (1538.)

[Can this one half-year's pay, Easter to Michs. 1535, be the *arrears* of this Annuity which Q. Mary ordered to be paid to Vicary on 20 Oct. 1553?—F.]

In the Exchequer of Receipt, Auditors' Patent Books, vol. ii. ff. 198, 199, are entries of the payment of the Annuity of 40 Marks (£26 13s. 4d.) to Marcellus de la More, the King's Surgeon, granted him for life. The statements of payments made to him half-yearly run from Michaelmas, 19 Hen. VIII. (1527) to Easter, 25 Hen. VIII. (1534), when the Record stops. Most of the payments, including the last, are stated to have been made 'to his own hands.'

<sup>3</sup> Easter is not reckoned in these rolls according to the day on which the

## 112 App. II. *Payment of Vicary's 40-Marks' Annuity.*

die Septembris, Anno xxvij<sup>mo</sup> Regis nunc Henrici viij<sup>th</sup> [A.D. 1535], vsque festum Pasche extunc proximo sequens, accidens xv<sup>to</sup> die Aprilis, Anno xxvij<sup>mo</sup> [A.D. 1536], scilicet, pro CCxix diebus, juxta Ratam predictam, *Receptis denariis per manus proprias, per breus currens* xv li. xix s. iiij d.

Tellers' Roll, 28-29 Henry VIII, No. 90.

Michaelmas, 28 Hen. VIII. (1536.)

Thome Vycary, Capitalis Cirurgico Domini Regis, de Annuitate sua ad xl marcas per annum, sibi debita pro festo Michaelis, Anno predicto, *Receptis denariis per manus proprias, per breus currens* ... .. xiiij li. vj s. viij d.

Easter, 29 Hen. VIII. (1537.)

——<sup>1</sup> Vekery, surgiant<sup>2</sup> Domini Regis, de feodo<sup>3</sup> suo ad xl marcas per annum, sibi debito pro medietate anni, finita ad festum Pasche nunc, per breus currens, *Receptis denariis per manus Roberti Game* ... .. xiiij li. vj s. viij d.

Tellers' Roll, 29-30 Henry VIII, No. 91.

Mich. 29 Hen. VIII. (1537.)

Thomas Vicary 'surgiant' to the King, &c., by the hands of John Swalowe ... .. xiiij li. vj s. viij d.

Easter, 30 Hen. VIII. (1538.)

Thomas Vecary 'surgiant,' &c., by the hands of Anthony Alyngton ... .. xiiij li. vj s. viij d.

The payments doubtless run on regularly, half-year by half-year, but the rolls are very voluminous, and take a long time to go through. I therefore take further entries only from two of Edward VI, and the last ones of Elizabeth.

Tellers' Roll (Exchequer of Receipt), 5-6 Edw VI, No. 100.

Michaelmas, 5 Edw. VI. (A.D. 1551.)

Thome Vicarie, scruiens<sup>1</sup> Chirurgorum Domini Regis, de feodo suo ad xxvj li. xiiij s. iiij d. per annum, sibi debito ad festum Michaelis anno v<sup>to</sup> regni Regis Edwardi vj<sup>th</sup>, *receptis denariis per manus proprias, per breus dormans* ... .. xiiij li. vj s. viij d.

Easter, 6 Edw. VI. (A.D. 1552.)

A similar entry.

festival occurred, which varied so much as sometimes to cause two Easters to fall in one of the years of this reign; but to avoid that inconvenience, Easter is here considered to be in the regnal year, following that in which the preceding Michaelmas occurred.—R. K.

<sup>1</sup> Blank.

<sup>2</sup> MS. surgiat<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> MS. de feodo de feodo.

App. II. *Vicary's Annuities of 40 Marks & £20.* 113

Tellers' Rolls, 2 and 3 Elizabeth, No. 109.

Michaelmas, 2-3 Elizabeth. (1560.)

Thome Vicarie, de feodo suo ad xl<sup>li</sup> marcas per annum, sibi [debito] pro dimidio anni finito in festo Sancti Michaelis Archangelii, Anno secundo regine Elizabethæ, receptis denarijs per manus proprias ... .. xiiij li. vjs. viij d.

<sup>1</sup>Thome Vicare predicto, de Annuitate sua ad xx li. per annum, sibi debita pro dimidio anni finito in festo Sancti Michaelis Archangelii, Anno secundo regine Elizabethæ, receptis denarijs per manus proprias ... .. x li.

(m. 66) Easter, 3 Eliz. (1561.)

Similar entries to the above. The moneys were due at Lady Day.

There is no Tellers' Roll for 3-4 Elizabeth. (1561-2)

Tellers' Roll, 4-5 Elizabeth, No. 110. (1562-3.)

The portion of this Roll relating to Michaelmas term 4-5 Eliz. (1562) has been searched, but I do not find anything as to Vicary. He no doubt died late in 1561, or early in 1562.—R. G. Kirk.

Vicary's Annuity of £20 for Wages and Medicines: its last Payments to Marcellus de la More; with its first and some later payments to Thomas Vicary, under a fresh Grant (not yet found) of Sept. 20, 1535.

(From the Wardrobe and Household Books, Exchequer, Queen's Remembrances, Ancient Miscellanea, &c., in the Public Record Office.)

¶ 17-18 Hen. VIII, 30 Sept. an. 17, A.D. 1525, to 30 Sept. an. 18, A.D. 1526.

Account of Sir John Shirley, Cofferer of the Household.

(leaf 5 from end)

Warantum Regia.

Marcello de La More, Capitali Cirurgico Hospicij Domini Regia, In Denariis virtute Warranti dicti Domini Regia, cuius datum est apud Wyndesour ij<sup>da</sup> die Ianuarii anno Regni sui quinto [1514], durante beneplacito soluendum, pro vadiis & Medicinis eidem Marcello, prout in eodem plenius continetur, infra tempus huius Compti, xx li.

¶ 20-21 Hen. VIII, 30 Sept. 1528, to 30 Sept. 1529.

Account of Sir Henry 'Guldeforde,' Comptroller of the Household. Marcellus de la More's Annuity is on the back of leaf 3 from end.

<sup>1</sup> This is Vicary's £20 annuity, or one of them, as to which see the entries following, on p. 114—122.



114 App. II. *Vicary's Annuity of £20 (1535 Grant).*

ψ 30 Sept., 22 Hen. VIII, A.D. 1530, to 30 Sept., 23 H. 8, A.D. 1531.

Marcellus de la More's Annuity is on leaf 3 from end.

ψ 25-26 Hen. VIII, 30 Sept. 1533, to 30 Sept. 1534.

Marcellus de la More's Annuity is on the back of leaf 3 from end.

This is the last payment found to Marcellus de la More in this set of Books. In ψ 26-27 Hen. VIII, † incomplete, there is no payment of annuities; nor is any in Book ψ.

---

The first payment found in these Books, to Thomas Vicary, is in Book

†† 28-29 Hen. VIII, 30 Sept. 1536, to 30 Sept. 1537.

Account of Sir Wm. Paulet, Controller.

(back of leaf 4 from end) Warrantum Regie.

Thome Vicars, Capitalis chirurgico hospicii Domini Regis, in denariis ei solutis vertute warranti dicti Domini Regis, cuius datum est xx<sup>mo</sup> die Septembris apud Byshopswaltham, anno Regni sui xxvij<sup>mo</sup> [A.D. 1535], durante vita dicti Thome, soluendum pro vadiis et medicinis eidem Thome per dictum Warrantum annuatim concessum, prout in eodem warranto plenius continetur, infra tempus huius Computi, xx li.

The reader will see that this Annuity of £20 for Wages and Medicines, is not made under the original Grant of 29 April 1530 (p. 89), but under a fresh Grant of Sept. 20, 1535. As it is like Marcellus de la More's in being 'for Wages and Medicines,' we suppose that More must have disappeared after receiving his last £13 6s. 8d. at Easter 1535 (p. 111 above, note 2), and that Vicary got a fresh Grant from Henry on Sept. 20, 1535, to save him the trouble of proving More's death, or resolve not to come back to England, or otherwise act as Serjeant of the Surgeons. We presume that this Annuity was in substitution of the £5 a quarter which Vicary had as one of the Surgeons to the King during More's life (see Forewords); but it may have been an extra one. Readers must judge for themselves.

We go on with the Exchequer Q. R. Anc. Misc. extracts:

†† Controller's Account, A small Part of the grant to Thomas 'Vicars' of £20, is on back of leaf 4 from end.

## App. II. *Vicary's Annuity of £20 (1535 Grant).* 115

†† Cofferer's Account, 30-31 Hen. VIII, 30 Sept. 1538, to 30 Sept. 1539. Vicary's £20 is on back of leaf 3 from end; and in ‡‡, the Book of the Controller Sir W<sup>m</sup>. Kynngston for the same Period, on leaf 2 from end.

‡‡ Exch. Q. R. Anc. Misc. Wardrobe and Household. Anno xxxj Regis Henrici Viii<sup>ti</sup> (A.D. 1539-40).

Computus Edwardi Pekham, armigeri . . . ab ultimo die mensis Septembris, Anno dicti domini Regis xxxj<sup>mo</sup> vsque vltimum diem mensis Septembris, Anno eiusdem domini Regis xxxij<sup>ti</sup> . . .

Thomas Vicary's Annuity of £20 for Wages and Medicines (under Warrant of Sept. 20, an. 27, A.D. 1535) is on the back of the 3rd leaf from the end. It is also in ‡‡, the Controlment book of Sir Wm. Kynngston, at the back of leaf 3 from the end:—

### Warranta Regia.

Thome Vicarie, Capitali Chirurgico hospicii domini nostri Regis, in denariis ei solutis, virtute warranti dicti domini Regis, cuius Datum est xx<sup>o</sup> Die Septembris, apud Bysshopese Waltham, anno Regni sui xxvij<sup>mo</sup> [1535], durante vita dicti Thome, per dictum warrantum annuatim concessum, prout in eodem warranto plenius continetur, infra tempus huius Computi, xx ti /

1540-1. The like payments to Vicary of this £20 Annuity are in Sir E. Peckham's Account-book, *Exch. Q. Rem., Anc. Misc., Wardrobe and Household*, for 32-3 Hen. VIII (30 Sept. 1540-1), ‡‡ (at the back of the last leaf but 3), and in the Controlment Book for the same year, ‡‡, on the third leaf from the end.

Then for 1541-2 comes (Ex. Q. R. Anc. Miscell. Wardrobe and Household ‡‡) the

### 1541-2.

Account of Sir Edmund Peckham, Cofferer of the Household, from the year Sept. 30, an. 33 (A.D. 1541) to Sept. 30, an. 34 (A.D. 1542), back of leaf 5 from end.

Thome Vycarye, Capitali Chyrurgico hospicii Domini Regis, in Denariis ei solutis virtute Warranti dicti Regis, cuius Datum est xx<sup>mo</sup> Die Septembris apud Bishope Waltham, Anno Regni sui xxvij<sup>mo</sup> [A.D. 1535], durante vita dicti Thome, soluendis pro Vadiis & Medicinis eidem Thome per dictum Warrantum Annuatim concessum, prout in eodem Warranto plenius continetur, infra tempus huius Computi xx ti /

116 App. II. *Vicary's Annuity of £20 (1535 Grant).*

¶. In the Book of Controlment of Sir Jn. Gage, Controller of the Household for the same year, Oct. 1, 1541, to Sept. 30, 1542 (an. 33-4), Vicary's Annuity of £20 is at the back of the last leaf but one of the MS. More than half the lower part of every leaf has perisht. For the next year, 1542-3, we have

Ex. Q. R. Anc. Misc. Wardrobe and Household 3<sup>e</sup>, 34-35 Hen. VIII. Account of Sir Edmund Pekham, Cofferer and Keeper of the Great Wardrobe of Henry VIII, for one year from Oct. 1, an. 34 [A.D. 1542], to Sept. 30, an. 35 [A.D. 1543], 4th leaf from end.

*Warranta Domini Regis.*

Thome Vicarie, Capitali Chirurgico hospicii Domini Regis, in denariis ei solutis, virtute Waranti dicti domini Regis, cuius Datum est apud Bussoppes Waltham, xx<sup>mo</sup> die Septembris, anno Regni sui, xxvij<sup>mo</sup>, durante vita dicti Thome, soluendis pro vadiis & medicinis, eidem Thome, xx li

In 3<sup>e</sup>, the Book of Controlment of Sir John Gage, Controller of the Household for the same Period, Oct. 1, an. 34 [1542] to Sept. 30, following [1543], the same payment is entered on leaf 4 from the end :—

[A.D. 1542-3] *Warranta Domini Regis.*

Tome Vicarie, Capitali Chirurgico Hospicii domini Regis, in denariis ei solutis virtute warranti dicti Domini Regis, cuius datum est apud Bishoppes waltham, xx<sup>o</sup> die Septembris, Anno Regni sui xxvij<sup>o</sup>, durante vita dicti Thome, soluendis pro vadiis et medecinis eidem Thome annuatim concessis, prout eodem warranto plenius continetur, infra tempus huius Computi, xx li.

The next book (the Cofferer's) is of like kind, 7<sup>e</sup>, for the year 1545-6, Sir Edmund Peckham's Account; and in it, Vicary's annuity of £20 is on the back of leaf 4 from the end (not counting the Indentures fastend to the back of the last leaf). In the Controller Sir John Gage's book for the same year (Oct. 1, 1545, to 30 Sept. 1546), 7<sup>e</sup>, Vicary's payment is at the back of the 5th leaf from the end. And in the next and last book, 7<sup>e</sup>, of the Cofferer, Sir E. Peckham, from Oct. 1, 1546, 38 Hen. VIII, to March 31, of 1 Edw. VI, 1547, Vicary's half-year's payment is on the back of the 4th leaf from the end, partly on an ensure, 'viz. infra tempus huius Computi, x li.'

App. II. *Edward VI's Payments to Vicary, &c.* 117

Edward VI's Payments to his Physicians, Surgeons, Apothecaries, &c., from Midsummer to Christmas, 1547.

(Accounts of Sir W<sup>m</sup> Cavendish, Treasurer of the King's Chamber. *Misc. Books*, Augmentation Office, No. 439, leaf 26, back.)

Quarters wages for Midsomer, anno Regni Regis Edwardi sexti Primo. [A.D. 1457.]

per Cade <sup>1</sup>	Item, to Doctor Bentley, Phisicion	...	...	x li	exr.
per Knot	Item, to Doctor Huicke, Phisicion	...	...	1 s	exr.
per Cade	{ Item, to Cornelis zifridus, Docter of Phisicke with the Lady Anne of Cleves <sup>2</sup>	...	...	xj li xij s iiij d	exr.
per Cade	Item, to Iohn de Sodo, Potycary	...	...	vj li xij s iiij d	exr.
	Item, to Thomas Alsop, Potycary	...	...	vj li xij s iiij d	exr.
	Item, to Iohn Emyngwey, yoman potycary	...	...	lvs vij ob.	exr.
* per Knot	* Item, to Thomas Vycary, Surgeon	...	...	Cs	exr.
	Item, to Iohn Ailiff, Surgeon	...	...	vij li xvs	exr.
[leaf 27]	Item, to Richard Ferres, Surgeon	...	...	Cs	exr.
per Knot	Item, to Nicholas Alooke, Surgeon	...	...	1 s	exr.
per Cade	Item, to George Hollonde, Surgeon	...	...	1 s	exr.
	Item, to Thomas Gemynous, Surgeon <sup>3</sup>	...	...	1 s	exr.

[leaf 43] Quarters Wages for Michaelmas, anno Regni Regis, Edwardi vj<sup>o</sup> Primo. [A.D. 1547.]

per Cade	Item, to Doctor Bentley, phisicion	...	...	x li	exr.
per Knot	Item, to Doctor Huicke, phisicion	...	...	1 s	exr.
per Cade	{ Item, to Cornelis zifridus, Docter of Phisicke to the Lady Anne of Cleves	...	...	xj li xij s iiij d	exr.
per Cade	Item, to Iohn de Sodo, Potycarye	...	...	vj li xij s iiij d	exr.
per Knot	Item, to Iohn Emyngeway, yoman potycarye	...	...	lvs vijd ob.	exr.
per Cade	* Item, to Thomas Vicary, Surgeon	...	...	Cs	exr.
	Item, to Iohn Aylif, Surgeon	...	...	vij li xs	exr.
per Knot	Item, to Thomas Alsop, potycary	...	...	vj li xij s iiij d	exr.
[if 63, bk.]	Item, to Richard Ferres, Surgeon	...	...	Cs	exr.
	Item, to Nicholas Alcocke, Surgeon	...	...	1 s	exr.
Per Knot	Item, to George Hollande, Surgeon	...	...	1 s	exr.
	Item, to Thomas Gemynous, Surgoun <sup>4</sup>	...	...	1 s	exr.

<sup>1</sup> Cade and Knot were the men who took the fees for, or handed them to, the Officers. 'exr' means 'examinatur,' when the account was checked.

<sup>2</sup> I leave out here Nicholas Crasler, astronomer, Cs, in all the entries.

<sup>3</sup> On leaf 27, back, are

per Cade Item, to Anthony Totto, Painter ... .. vj li vs exr.  
 Item, to Barthilmewe Penne, Painter ... .. vj li vs exr.  
 Item, to Misteris Ievyn Terling, Paintrix ... .. xlii exr.

<sup>4</sup> Near the foot of the page is "Item, to Sir Thomas Paston, knight, for keping of the long gallery at Greenwich xvj li xij s iiij d exr." On page 44, the

118 App. II. *Edward VI's Payments to Vicary, &c.*

[leaf 62] Yet Quarters Wages for Christemas, anno Regni  
Regis Edwardi sexti Primo [A.D. 1547].

	Item, to Doctor Benteley, Phisicion ... ..	x ti	enz.
	Item, to Doctor Huicke, Phisicion ... ..	ls	enz.
per Knot	Item, to Cornelis zifridus, Doctor of Fisike with the Ladye Anne of Cleves ... ..	xj ti xiijs iiij d	enz.
	Item, to Iohn de Sodo, Potycarye ... ..	vj ti xiijs iiij d	enz.
per Cade	Item, to Thomas Alsop, Potycarye ... ..	vj ti iijs iiij d	enz.
Per Knot	Item, to Iohn Emyngwey, yoman Potycary ... ..	lvs vij d	enz.
	* Item, to Thomas Vycary, Surgeon ... ..	Cs	enz.
per Cade	Item, to Iohn Aylif, Surgeon ... ..	vij ti xs	enz.
	Item, to Richard Ferres, Surgeon ... ..	Cs	enz.
per Knot	Item, to Nicholas Alcocke, Surgeon ... ..	ls	enz.
per Cade	Item, to George Hollande, Surgeon ... ..	ls	enz.
	Item, to Thomas Gemynous, Surgeon ... ..	ls	enz.
per Knot	Item, to Henry Forest, Surgeon ... ..	x ti	enz.
	Item, to Henry Makereth, Surgeon ... ..	x ti	enz.

(On leaf 62, back, the painters Anthony Totto and Barthilmewe Penna, get their £6 5s. each, and 'Misteris Levyn Terling, paint-  
rixz' her £10. And the MS. enda.)

Vicary's Annuity of £20 for the half-year, Sept. 1552, to  
March 1553; in Nov. 1552, and in Jan.—July 1554.

In 'The Boke of the Copies of the Certificat made to the Kinges  
Maiesties Counsell' from 19 Feb. 37 Hen. VIII [1546], to 2 and 3  
Phil. and Mary [July 1553-6], given to the Record Office by Sir W.  
C. Trevelyan, Vicary's name occurs on p. 142, as entitled to his old  
wages of £20 a year. On p. 136 is the heading:—

Vltimo Septembris, Anno E[dwar]di vj<sup>to</sup> sexto (A.D. 1552).

The office of the Thresourer of y <sup>e</sup> Kinges maiesties Chambre	The Declaracion made the day and yere above written, by sir William Cavendyshe knighte, Thresourer of y <sup>e</sup> kinges Maiesties Chambre, To y <sup>e</sup> right reverende father in god, Thomas Bysshop of Norwyche, Sir Robert Bowys, and sir Walter Myldemay, knightes, and other y <sup>e</sup> kinges maies- ties Commyssioners / of all the ordenary pay-
--	---

former payments are repeated to the painters, Anthony Totto and Barthilmewe Penna, & the paintrixz, Misteris Levyn Terlyn. On lf 44, bk, 'James Taillor, late son of the Kinges olde Waterman' gets 35 s. 5 d.

mentes payable within his sayde office, for one hole yere ended at the Feaste of S<sup>t</sup> Mychaell TharchaungeH, in the fyfte yere of y<sup>e</sup> Raigne of our saide soveraigne lorde [A.D. 1551]. The particularytes whereof more playnely hereafter is declared.

(page 142) phesycons & Astronomers	<sup>mortuus</sup> { Doctor Thomas Bylle, per annum, l ti. Doctor Huycke, x ti. Cornelius Zefridus, <sup>1</sup> xlvi ti xiijs iiij d. Nicholas Crasyer, As- tronomer, xx ti }	{ Cxxvj ti xiijs iiij d }
Potycaryes	<sup>mortuus</sup> { Iohn de Zodoe, per annum, xxvj ti xiijs iiij d. Thomas Alsop, xxvj ti xiijs iiij d. Iohn Emyngwaye, xj ti ijs vj d }	{ lxxiiij ti ix s ij d }
Surgeons	* { Thomas Vicary, per annum, xx ti. Iohn Ay- lyffe, xxx ti. Richard Ferrers, lx ti. Henry Forreste, xli ti. George Hollande, x ti. Thomas Gemynus x ti }	{ Clxx ti }

There are earlier estimates of payments to Physisians, Apothecaries, Surgeons, grouped with other officers, on pages 95, 101, 109, 123; and on p. 150 (8 Nov. 6 Ed. VI, 1552) are the entries

To phisicions and Astronomers ... ..	lxxvj ti xiijs
To potecaryes ... ..	xxxviij ti xv s x d
To Surgeons ... ..	Clxx ti

for payments due for the year ending at Michaelmas, 6 Ed. VI, 1552.

On p. 153 is this heading (and on p. 159, Vicary's name):—

xx<sup>mo</sup> die Novembris, Anno sexto Regis Edwardi vj<sup>to</sup> (1552).

Here after is declared the names of all suche officers, men of Seyence, Artyficers, Craftismen, and other mynistres that arre payable within the saide office of Treasurer of the kinges maiesties most honorable Chambre, with their severall Feeze and wages, devidinge them in suche sorte as they, in their severall romes doo serve or mynistre, with the Bordewages, Ridinge Chardges, reparacions, and other expences not certeyn, but as they happen; As also suche Anuyties as are paid within the saide office, aswell to Inglysh men as to straungers, separatynge those that haue y<sup>e</sup> saide Anuyties Dueringe their Lyves, from them that haue dueringe the kinges maiesties plesure, as by this declaracion hereafter followeing shall appeare:

<sup>1</sup> 'Y<sup>e</sup> lady Anne Cleves house' is written above his name.

120 App. II. *Edward VI's Payments to Vicary, &c.*

Officers & others mynis- ters	Phisicions & Astronomers	Doctore Huycke, phisicion, x ti.	} xxx ti
		Nycholas Crasyer, Artestrono- mer, xx ti	
	Potecaryes	Thomas Alsop, potecarye, xxvj ti	} xxxvj ti
		xiiij s iij d. Iohn Emyngway, Potecarye, xj ti ijs vjd	
	Surgeons	* Thomas Vicarye, Surgeoun, xx ti.	} CC ti
		Iohn Aylif, xxx ti. Richarde	
		Ferres, lx ti. Henry Forreste,	
		xl ti. George Hollande, x ti.	
		Thomas Geminus, x ti <sup>1</sup>	

On p. 173 we find

The Office of the Thresourer of the kinges Maiesties } A Brieff Abstract or an estymate what ys due within the Thresurers office of the chamber at the feaste of Midsomer, Anno vij<sup>m</sup> Regni Regis Edwardi sexti [28 Jan. to 6 July, 1553]

(p. 174) Ordynary paymentes payable } To phisicions and Artstronymers ... lxx ti  
quarterly and } To potycaries ... nihil quia solvuntur  
half-yearly } To Surgeons [sum right now] ... Cclxx ti<sup>2</sup>

(leaf 179) Vij<sup>m</sup> Marcij, Anno primo Marie Regine [1554].  
The Office of the Thresaurour of the Quenes Maiesties } Brieffe Abstracte or estymate, what is due within the said offyce at the feaste of Thannuncyacion of our Blessed Lady the Virgen, next cemynges Chamber } [25 March 1554]

(lf 178) Ordinary pay- } To phisicons and Artstronymers ... xxij ti xvs  
mentes payable } To potycaries ... xxj ti xiijs vjd ob.  
quarterly and } To Surgeons ... ... CClxvij ti x s  
half-yearlie }

(p. 202) Phisicion & } Doctor Huycke, phisicion, x ti } xxx ti  
Artstronomer } Nicholas Crasyer, Artstronymer, xx ti }

<sup>1</sup> On page 163, among the 'Annuyties of englithe men during plesure,' are Nycholas Baekon, x li; Nycholas Vdall, xiiij li vjs viij d.; and among 'The lady Anne Cleves graces howsehold duriage plesure' is her doctor 'Cornelis Zifridus, xlvj li xiijs liij d.'

<sup>2</sup> On p. 175, is a payment of £331 7s. 4d. to 'Sir gilbert Dethick, knight, Chester harrolde at Armes & rouge dragon purysawnt at armes, for their dyette and poste money' (repeated on p. 179 and 180); and on p. 176, £160 'To the harrolde at armes, for their Dyettes in the progress.'

App. II. *Q. Elizabeth's Payments of V.'s Annuity.* 121

potycaryes	{ Thomas Alsop, potycary, xxvj ti xiijs } xxxvj ti { iiij d. John Emyngewaye, potycary, xj ti } xv s { ijs vjd } x d
Surgeons	* { Thomas Vycary, Surgeon, by yere, xx ti. { John Aileffe, xxx ti. Richard Farres, lx ti. <sup>mortuus</sup> { Henry Forest, xli ti. George Hollande, } Clxx ti { x ti. Thomas Gemynous, x ti <sup>1</sup> }

Vicary's Annuity of £20. Its last payments in  
1559-1561.

Book 7, 1-3 Eliz., *Exchequer, Queen's Remembrancer, Ancient Miscellanea, Wardrobe and Household.* 30 Sept. 1559 (1 Eliz.) to 30 Sept. 1560 (2 Eliz.).

Computus Thome Weldon, Armigeri, Cofferarii, et Custodis Magne garderobe Hospicii Serenissime, invictissime principis, Domine nostre Elizabeth, Dei gracia, Anglie, Francie, et Hibernie Regine, Fidelis Defensoris, &c., tum de omnibus et singulis Denariorum summis super expensis Hospicii predicti oneratis, quam de allocacionibus et solucionibus eorundem factis per vnum Annum Integrum, videlicet, ab ultimo Die Septembris Anno primo finiente, vsque primam Diem Octobris Anno iij<sup>o</sup> incipiente, prout in libro sequente plenius continetur.

In this Cofferer's Account, the Annuity of £20 "Thome Vicars" is on leaf 5 from the end. And in the Controller's Account for the same period, 7, Vicary's £20 is also on leaf 5 from its end.

The last payment of this 1535 annuity of £20 to Vicary is that of 1560-1.

In the Cofferer's (titleless) Account, 7, 1 Oct. 1560, to 30 Sept. 1561, Vicary's Annuity is on the back of leaf 7 from end; and in the Controller's Account (also titleless) for the same Period,—Oct. 1, 1560 to 30 Sept. 1561, 2-3 Eliz. 7, Ex. Q. Rem. Anc. Misc. Wardrobe and Household,—it is on the back of leaf 6 from end:—

Warranta Regine.

Thome Vicars, Capitali Chirurgico hospicii domine nostre Regine Elizabeth, in denariis ei solutis, virtute warranti Domini Regis Hen-

<sup>1</sup> Among the Annuities on p. 207 are Nicholas Backon xlii, and Nicholas Vdall xliij li vijs vijd again; and on p. 208, Doctor Cornelys has the m for mortuus over his name, though the sum xlii li xlijs lijd follows it.

<sup>2</sup> '79 upon 1' this seeming fraction is said.



122 App. II. *Q. Elizabeth's Payments of V.'s Annuity.*

rici viij sancte memorie defuncti, Cuius datum est apud Bysshops Waltham, xx<sup>o</sup> die Septembris, Anno Regni dicti Domini Regis xxvij<sup>o</sup>, durante vita dicti Thome solvendis, pro vad<sup>is</sup> et medicinis eiusdem Thome, per predictum warrantum Annuatim Concessis, prout in eodem warranto plenius Continetur, infra tempus huius Computi, xx li //

The Book for 3 and 4 Eliz, Oct. 1, 1561 to Sept. 30, 1562 is unluckily missing; tho' in it we should hardly find the wonted *mortuus* when a payee died after the Account was made up, as Vicary must have died late in 1561, or early in 1562.

In the Account for 4 and 5 Eliz, Oct. 1, 1562, to 30 Sept. 1563, Vicary's name is of course not among the Annuitants on the back of leaf 6 from end, and on leaf 5 from end. His Will was proved on April 7, 1562.

## III.

EXTRACTS FROM THE CITY OF LONDON REPERTORIES,  
JOURNALS, &c. AT THE GUILDHALL.1. *Those relating to the Foundation of Bartholomew's, and to Vicary,  
and to his Governorship of the Hospital.*

The Act 37 Hen. VIII, ch. 28, past on Feb. 4, 1536, gave the King all the small Monasteries, &c. whose land was not worth above £200 a year. After this, the larger Monasteries, &c. were gradually surrendered to him more or less voluntarily. The Act 31 Hen. VIII, ch. 13 (of the Parliament held, 28 April to 28 June, 1539), vested in the King the lands of all Monasteries, &c. theretofore<sup>1</sup> or thereafter dissolv'd. The Priory and Hospital of St. Bartholomew's, &c. were surrendered to Henry VIII on Oct. 25, 1539.<sup>2</sup> Foreknowing this, the City of London saw that it would be left without any houses for its poor, well or ill, and accordingly askt the King to give them some.

1539, Feb. 11. The City Petition to Henry VIII for the  
Hospitals, &c.<sup>3</sup>

(Repert. 10, lf. 79, bk.) *Martis, xj februaris, anno 30 H. 8. (A.D. 1539).*

Forman. [*Present*] Mayor [William Forman, haberdasher], Ro-  
[Mayor] corder, Waren [Ralph, mercer], Gresham, Denham, Paget,  
Bowyer [draper], Laxton [grocer], Tolos,<sup>4</sup> Sadler, Aleyne,  
Wylford . . . .

<sup>1</sup> 645 abbeys, 152 colleges, and 129 hospitals.—Toone.

<sup>2</sup> Dugdale does not say expressly when the Hospital was surrendered to Henry; but as it was originally 'given to the neighbouring priory, and was in many things subject to it,' tho' it had a distinct estate (*Monast. Angl.* vol. vi, pt. 2, p. 626, col. 1), we assume that it past to the King with the surrender of the Priory by Robert Fuller on Oct. 28, 1539, 31 Hen. VIII.—*Monast. Angl.* vi. 11, 291, col. 2.

<sup>3</sup> This first Petition to Henry VIII is (we find) printed from the City's Journal 14, leaf 129, as the Appendix No. I to the "Memoranda . . relating to *The Royal Hospitals*," 1863, p. 1—4, and in the Charity Commission Report, No. 32, 1840, Part VI, p. 344.

<sup>4</sup> John Tholouse, sheriff in 1543.

124 App. III. 1. *City Petition for Bartholomew's, &c.*

London Item, that a suplication shalbe made, yn the name of  
for y<sup>e</sup> the mayer & cominalty of london, to the kinges high-  
Freres of nesse, for the iiij howses of fryers, that ys to say,  
London Augustynes, blakke Freres, Grey Freres, & whyte Freres,  
& also for the iij hospitalles, that ys to say, saynt bar-  
tylmew yn smythfeld, saynt Mary hospytall without  
bysshoppesgate, & saynt Thomas spytell yn Suthwerk.

1539. (Repert. 10, lf. 81, bk.) Sabbati, 23 februarii, 30 H 8.

Forman [*Present*] Mayor, Recorder, Waren, Gresham, Denham,  
[Mayor] Dormer, Cotes, Dauncy, Bowyer, Laxton, Hamcotte,  
Tolos, Aleyn, Wylford . . . .

London Item, the booke devysed for the iiij freres, whyte,  
blakke, grey & Augustynes, & also iij hospitalles—saynt  
Mary without bysahoppes gate, seynt Thomas yn Suth-  
werk, & seynt bartylmew spytell,—was Redde; &  
agreed that my lorde mayer, master Waren, master  
Gresham, master Recorder, master Dormer, & master  
Rauf Aleyn, shall knowe<sup>1</sup> whyther the sayd booke shalbe  
exhybytted vnto the kynges highnesse by the Right  
honourable lorde pryve seale / by my lorde Mayer / or  
by some other of the Cytya.

This Book or Petition sent to the King, is enterd in Journal 14,  
leaf 129, between an entry of 4 March, 1539, and another of 6  
March, 1539, so that we may perhaps date the presentation of it,  
5 March, 1539. It is printed in the *Memoranda* relating to *The  
Royal Hospitals* 1836, and its reprint of 1863, Appendix, p. 1, where  
its date is given as 1538, without any note of 'old style.'

1539. (Repert. 10, lf. 96, bk.) Jouis, xxiiij die Aprilis, anno 30  
[i. e. 31]<sup>2</sup> H. 8. [A.D. 1539].

Forman [*Present*] Mayor, Waren, Gresham, Denham, Dormer  
[mercier], Paget, Cotes, [John, salter], Kyteon, Bowyer,  
Dauncy, Laxton [grocer], Heberthorn [merchant-tailor],  
Bowes [goldsmith], Tolos, Sadler, Aleyn, Wylford . . . .

Freres Item, that the kynges highnesse, & lorde pryve seale, &  
other of the kinges most honourable counsayll, be moved  
for the iiij places of Freres.

For 5 years Henry did not move: see below. (The next 3  
entries refer to Vicary, and not to Barta.)

<sup>1</sup> know or learn whether. The MS. is awkward. Dr. Reginald Sharpe  
kindly read it for us.

<sup>2</sup> The 30th year of Hen. VIII ends on 21 April 1539. Leaf 97 of the Re-  
pertory is rightly dated 26 April 'a° 31 H 8', that is, 1539.

App. III. 1. *Vicary's demand for a Felon's body.* 125

1540. Vicary and other Surgeons demand a Felon's dead body for Dissection.<sup>1</sup>

(Rep. 10, lf. 186) *Adhuc Martis. 14. Decembris, Anno 32 H 8.*

(A.D. 1540)

Roche  
[Mayor]  
Felons, &  
other that  
suffer death  
by the lawes,  
have not  
to be buried  
by the  
Shreves of  
London)

Item, yt ys Agreyd, Att the request & petycion of the right worshipfull *Master Laxton* & *Master Bowes*, nowe Shreves of this Citye of London, made vnto this Court for & concernyng the buryall of suche Felons As nowe be, & hereafter shalbe, comytted or Atteynted of Felony, Murdre or treson within this Citye of London, or the Shere of *Middlesex*, that the bodies of all suche persones, & namely<sup>2</sup> of them that shalbe nowe next putt in execucion of dethe att Tyburn, in the sayd Countye of *Middlesex*, shall eyther be buried by the inhabitauntes of the Tounshipe of *Padynghon*, Or els the same ded bodies to be suffred to hange there styll, &c./

For the  
delyuerye  
of A dead  
bodye by  
the Shreves  
to [Thos.  
VICARY &]  
the Surgeons,  
&c.

Item, *Master Laxton* & *Master Bowes*, Shreves of this Citye, prayed the Advyse of this howse for & concernyng the Delyuerye ouer of one of the dedde bodies of the Felons of late condemned to dethe within this Citye, And requyred of the seyd *Master Shreves* by *Master Vycary* & other the Surgeons of this Citye for Annotamye, Accordyng to the fourme of An Acte of parlyament therof lately made / And Agreyd that the same Acte be first seen / & then *Master Shreves* to worke ther after, &c./

24 March, 1542. Vicary (as Warden of the Surgeons) before the Common Council.

(Repertory 10, lf. 239) *Martis 24 / 3 / Anno 33<sup>e</sup> H 8 / (A.D. 1542)*

*Dormer, Mayor.*

[*Present*] *Mayor* [Sir Michael Dormer, mercer], *Warden* [mercier], *Gresham*, *Denham*, *Cotes*, *Bowyer* [draper], *Dauntsey*, *Laxton*, *Bowes*, *Hamcotes* [fishmonger], *Tolos*,<sup>3</sup> *Sadler*, *Wylford*, *Lewen*, & *Judde* [skinner] / . . . . .

(lf. 240, bk.)  
Surgeons

Item, yt ys Agreyd that the Wardeyns of the Surgeons be warnyd to be here the next Court day, Aswell for the Stey of theyr sute in the Eschequer Ageynst *John Margetson*, *Bruer*, As Also for & concernyng the certificat of the peryll & Jeopardye of *Richard Pygott*,

Under the Statute, p. 203, below.

<sup>2</sup> Specially.

<sup>3</sup> John Tholouse, sheriff in 1542.

126 App. III. 1. *Vicary advises the Lord Mayor.*

Vyntener, to be made to my lorde Chaunceler; whyche Pygott was lately hurte & woundyd by one Thomas Eton, yoman, nowe beyng in warde within thys Cytye for the same.

1542. (Repertory 10, lf. 241) Jouis / 26 / 3 / Anno 33° H 8.  
Dormer. [26 March, 1542]

[Present] Mayor [Sir Michael Dormer], Recorder, Waren, Gresham, Forman, Cotes, Bowyer, Daunsaye, Laxton, Bowes, Hamcotes, Tolos,<sup>1</sup> Sadler, Wylford, Lewen, Judde /  
[VICARY] Att thys Courte came Master Vycars, seriaunt of the  
Pygott & Surgeons, & declaryd to thys Courte, that As towchyng  
Eton the certificat to be made by my lorde Mayer vnto my lorde Chaunceler, for the hurte done vnto one Rychard Pygott, Vintener, by one Thomas Eton, yoman / that he wolde not advyse my seyd lorde mayer to make eny suche certificat as yett / for he doth sum-what doute of the Reconuerie of the seyd Pygott; And that he wyll so declare & report hym self vnto master Bryan, master vnto the seyd Eton /

For 5 years after the above City Petition or Petitions of 1539 (p. 124), nothing was done by Henry in answer to them. Then he issued Letters Patent of 23 June 1544, creating a new Bartholomew's Hospital, a Corporation of a Master (a priest) and 4 Chaplains, to whom he gave the site, buildings, and church of the old Hospital of St Bartholomew's the Less, and all its jewels, goods, and chattels, but without any other endowment. (The englisling of these Letters Patent of 23 June 1544 is printed as Appendix II to the *Royal Hospitals*, (1836, and) 1863, p. 4—7. The Patent itself is in the Patent Rolls of 36 Hen. VIII, part 2, membrane 41.

The City of course wanted its Hospitals endowed, in part at least. On Nov. 23, 1545, Parliament met, and by the Act 37 Hen. VIII, ch. 4, confirmd all Surrenders of Monasteries, &c. made to the King, set aside all fraudulent and other grants, leases, &c. of Monastery lands, and empowered his Commissioners to enter and seize such lands. In Dec. 1545, the City appointed a Poor-Relief Committee. In 1546 they agreed to endow the Hospitals jointly with the King. In 1547, they got the work well under way; and in 1548 appointed their first Surgeon-Governor of Barts, Thomas Vicary, who soon became Resident Governor, and (practically) Chief Surgeon.

App. III. 1. *A City Poor-Relief Committee.* 127

1545. Appointment of a Hospital-Committee, or Governors, for the Relief of the Poor : 10 Dec. A.D. 1545.<sup>1</sup>

(Journal 15, leaf 213.) Bowes Maiore.

Common Council  
of 10 Dec. 1545.

*Comune Consilium tentum decimo Die Decembris Anno regni Regis Henrici viij<sup>m</sup> xxxvij<sup>m</sup>, coram Martino Bowes, Milite, Maiore Ciuitatis Londonie, Roberto Broke armigero, Recordatore eiusdem Ciuitatis, Radulpho Waren, Milite, Ricardo Gresham, Milite, Johanne Cotes, Willmo Laxton, militibus, Henrico Hoberthorn, Johanne Toloe, Johanne Gresham milite, Johanne Wylford, Rolando HyH, Milite, Thoma Lewyn, Andrea Judd, Ricardo Dobbes, Ricardo Jerves, Thoma White, Roberto Chertesey, Willmo Lok ; & Georgio Barne & Radulpho Aley<sup>n</sup> vicecomites<sup>2</sup> / ac maiore parte Communiariorum de communi consilio Ciuitatis prelicte existentis &c. / . . . .*

(leaf 213, back)  
Provyayon  
for the  
Releif of  
the poore

Item, Thomas Barthelett, Stacyoner, John Wyseman, Skynner, Humfrey Pakyngton mercer, Thomas Bacon, Salter, John Royce, mercer, William Garrett, haberdasher, Stevyn Kyrtyn merchawnttailor, And Augustyn Hynde, at this day nominatt by the said hole Commone counsell here assemblyd, to ioyn with my lorde Maire and suche iij of his worshipfull brethern, thaldermen, as his lordshipe and his said brethern, thaldermen shaH therunto name & apoynt, for the inuentying & devysyng of somme good, charitable, & godly wayes & meanea, wherby the very pore, indigent, syke & weke persons of this Cittie, not able to lyve of themselves<sup>3</sup> may charitably be ayded, comforted, & relevvyd, by the deuocyon and charitable Almes of the good & well disposed Citizens & inhabitauntes of the same Cittie, in suche wyse that they or eny of theym shalnot haue eny iuste cause or nede hereafter to begge or aske eny Almes openly, either in churches or elleswhere within the said Cittie, as they now vse to do ///

<sup>1</sup> They continued to act till Vicary's appointment on Sept. 23, 1548, and then some retired. See p. 132 below.

<sup>2</sup> sheriffs.

<sup>3</sup> Though these words are general, yet the next entry below shows that the present provision was meant mainly for St. Bartholomew's, or the House of the Poor in West Smithfield.

128 App. III. 1. *The City agrees to endow Barts.*

1546. Acceptance of Henry VIII's Offer of the Hospitals and 500 Marks a year, on the City finding another yearly 500 Marks (13 April 1546).

(Journal 15, leaf 244.) Bowes [Mayor].

Common Council  
of 13 April 1546.

*Commune Consilium tantum xiiij<sup>o</sup> die Aprilis, Anno Regni Regis Henrici viij<sup>ti</sup> xxxviij<sup>o</sup> [A.D. 1546], coram Martino Bowes, Milite, Maiore Ciuitatis Londonie, Radulpho Wareñ [rest blank]*

(leaf 245.) Bowes Maiore

London for }  
the poore }  
As Henry VIII  
gave the City some  
Poorhouses,  
and endowed them  
with 500 marks a  
year,

on condition that  
the City gave 500  
marks more,

We enact

that the City shall  
covenant to pay  
this fresh yearly  
500 marks.

<sup>1</sup>Item, forasmuche as it hath pleased the Kynges highnes, of late, of his most vertuous & godly disposicioun, not only frely to gyve & graunte to this Cittie certeyne convenyent places for the Receyte, comforte & lodgyng of the pore people of the said Cittie / but also to indowe the same places towardes the mayntenaunce & Relseif of the said poore people with londes & tenementes to the clere yerely value of D. merkes, vppon condicioun that the Citizens of the said Cittie wylbe bounden yerely foreuer to gyve other D. merkes to the said vse & intent / It ys therfore enacted, clerely assentyd & agreyd, by the said comen Counsell, & by thauctoryte of the same, That the said Citizens & their Successours, by their Wrytyng sufficient in lawe, vnder their comen seale, shalbe bounden for the yerely payment of the said som of D merkes to the vse afore-said accordyngly, &c /

The long Deed of Covenant made (in pursuance of the Resolution above) between Henry VIII and the Mayor, Commonalty and Citizens of London, respecting the Hospitals, and bearing date the 27 Dec. 38 Hen. VIII, A.D. 1546, is printed in the *Royal Hospitals* (1836), Appendix IV, p. 8—21 (1863, App. IV, p. 8—19), and is abstracted in the Charity Commission Report, No. 32, 1840, Pt. VI.

1546. *Martis, quinto die Octobris, Anno xxxviiij<sup>o</sup> H. 8.*

(Repertory 11, ff. 310, ink, bk., 237 pencil, bk.)

Bowes  
[Mayor]

[Present] Mayor, Recorder, Rooche, Forman, Cotes, Laxton, Wylford, Judde, Dubbys, 'HyH, Barne, Chertsey, Lok, Hynde, Turke; Ac Jerys, vnus vicecomes /

<sup>1</sup> This is (we find) printed also in the *Royal Hospitals*, ed. 1863, Appendix III, p. 8.

App. III 1. *The Preparation of Barts Hospital.* 129

[leaf 311 or 328]  
The newe  
Condytes &  
Hospytall  
for the pore.

Item, this day my lorde Mayer, for the very good love that he baryth to this Cytie, Att the hartye desyer of the hole court here, dyd Agree & graunted / to take payne wyth such othere of my Maistres the Aldermen & Comeners As beyn Alredy Apoyntyd, & with Maister Sturgeon, huberdasher, both to Fynyssh the Newe Condytes, & also Aboute the ereccion & consumacion of the newe hospytall in Smythfeld for the pore, Asweh after the tyme of his Maryalte, As he hath hytherto dona.

The completion of  
Barts.

5 Oct. 1546. 'The City not in complete possession of Bartholomew's.

(Repertory 11, ff. 310 ink, bk., or 237 pencil, bk.) Martie, quinto die Octobris, Anno xxxvij<sup>o</sup> H. 8 / (A.D. 1546).

[ff. 311, or 328  
pencil]  
Paladye

Item, the letters of the ryght honourable lorde pryve Seale & other, dyrectyd to this Court, in the Fauour of Rychard Paladye for the Stuardshipe of lytle seynt Barthilmewes in Smythfeld were red: And therupon Aunswere made hym, that when the Cytie shalbe perfytyl in possessyon of the seyde howse, they wyll make hym a further Aunswer therin /

Then come the very long second Letters Patent of Henry VIII, 13 Jan. 1547, containing the endowd Grant and Establishment of Bartholomew's and the other Hospitals, turning the churches and parishes of St. Nicholas and St. Ewin's into the new pariah of the church of *Christ* within Newgate, &c., printed as Appendix V in the *Royal Hospitals*, 1836, p. 22—49; 1863, p. 20—45, and abstracted in the Charity Commission Report, No. 32, 1840, Pt. VI.

26 April, 1547. Henry VIII's Letters Patent for Bartholomew's brought into the City Court.

(Rep. 11, ff. 345, bk.) Martie, xxvj<sup>te</sup> die Aprilis, Anno primo Edwardi vj<sup>ti</sup> [A.D. 1547].

[leaf 316, ink;  
323 pencil]  
Hoberthorn  
Mayor.

The kynges  
letters pa-  
tentis of  
Thospytall in  
Smythfeld

VICARY.

Item, sir Martyn Bowes, Knyght, brought in this day in-to the Court here, the lettres patentis of our late soueraygne lorde, kyng Henry the viij<sup>th</sup>, of the foundacion & newe ereccion of the hospytall in Smythfelde, & of Crystchurche wythin Newgate; whiche lettres were forwyth Delyuered ouer to the sauffe Custody of Master Chamberleyn / And Agreyd that the seyde Master Bowes shalbe truly recom- pensed, wyth thanks, of & for all suche money As

K



130 App. III. 1. *Henry VIII's Endowment-Deed.*

he hath dysbursed Aboute the pryces of the seyd letters & others the assayers of this Cytie; And Further, that there shalbe An especiall Court here holden vpon Fryday comme sevy[n] nyght, for the herynge & perusynge of the seyd letters patentes.

6 May, 1547. The Hospital-Indenture of Henry VIII and the City, brought in. Its provision as to the Beadles' pay varied.

(Repertory 11, ff. 349, bk., ink; 325, bk., pencil) Veneris, vj<sup>to</sup> die Maij, Anno primo Edwardi vj<sup>ti</sup> [A.D. 1547].

Hob[er]thorn [Mayor] [*Present*] Mayor, Recorder, Waren, Laxton, Bowes, Tolos, Wylford, Judde, Dobbys, Barne, White, Hynde, Lyon; ac Jervys, vicecomes (Sheriff). . . .

London: the late grey Fryers & lytle seynt Bartholomewes Item, this day the indenture made hytwene our late soueraygne lorde, kyng Henry the viij<sup>th</sup> & the Mayer & Cominalty & Cytezeins of this Cytie, of & for the howse of the late grey Fryers & the hospytall of lytle seynt Bartholomewes, was red; And Agreyd

In[tratur] that sir Martyn Bowes, knyght, & thother Aldermen & Cominers hertofore Apoynted to travayll therein, shall take the paynes to abridge<sup>1</sup> both the yerely revenues & profyttes of the seyd howse & hospytall, & also the yerely charges apoynted to be borne out of the same, & to make reporte therof to this Court with As convenyent spede as they can in wryting<sup>2</sup>.

Bedylls for the pore. Item, yt is orderyd & Agreyd, that euery of the viij bedylls that be apoynted to Attende vpon the house of the pore, & the syke & impotent people therof,

Camerarius. shall yerely haue of the Chamber of this Cytie, in lieu, stede, & recompence of there v markes whiche they are apoynted to haue yerely by the Indenture concernyng the fundacion of the seyd howse for the pore / iiij nobles in redy money, one lyuerye gowne, & one Carre rome<sup>2</sup> to be occupied with-in the seyd Cytie & the lybertyes therof by their deputies or assignes / wyth as moche lybertye as any other person or persones doth enioye the lyke rome, during the tyme that they shall contynue in their seyd romes & offyces.

Beadles to have 4 Nobles a year, a Livery Gown, and standing for 1 Car.

Next is the Grant by the Common Council, on 29 Sept. 1547, of one half of a Fifteenth on the Citizens and Inhabitants of the

<sup>1</sup> Make a list or short statement, abridgement, of them.

<sup>2</sup> Room for the standing of a Car or Cart.

App. III. 1. *Barts to have 2 City Churches.* 131

City towards the Maintenance of the Poor in St. Bartholomew's, with power to raise this tax or levy by distress. This is printed from the City's *Journal* 15, leaf 325 back, in Appendix VI to *The Royal Hospitals* (1836), p. 49—50; 1863, p. 45—6.

3 Nov., 1547. (Journal 15, leaf 317.) Huberthorne, *Maiores*. Tercio die Nouembria, Anno primo Edwardi vj<sup>ti</sup> (A.D. 1547) [entry of a Bond; then on the back].

[leaf 317, back]

The disposicion  
& bestowinge  
of seynt Nich-  
olas church  
and seynt  
Ewyns com-  
mytted to the  
lorde Mayere  
& other /

the Governors of  
Bartholomew's,

who may manage, sell,  
or let these Churches

and their sites,

which Henry VIII

in 1547

gave the City,

for the Hospital poor.

Item, Att this comen counsell yt ys ordeynyd, enactyd, Assentyd and Agreed by the Auctorytye of the same comen counsell, that the lord Mayer and Aldermen of this citee that now are, or the more of theym, with the Advice & consent of suche Alldermen and comeners of the seyd citee as are hertofore, that ys to sey, at and by the comen counsell here holden the x<sup>th</sup> daye of December, Anno 37 Henrici .8. [A.D. 1545] Assygned and Appoyntyd to be of counseyll with the pore within the hospitall of the pore lately foundyd and estab- lyshyd in west smythfield in the suburbs of the seyd citee by our late most redowtyd souereygn lorde, Kinge Henrye the viij<sup>th</sup>, and Surveyours of the revenues of the same hospytall, shall fullye and hoolye haue the orderynge, bestowinge, sellinge, dymysyng, or otherweyse by their good and sage wysdomes and discreccions, bothe of the late parishe churches of seynt Nicolas in the shambles, and of seynt Ewyns within Newgate of the same cytye, And also of the Sights or Soyles wher- uppon the same ij churches Are nowe sett and buyldyd; which ij churches, with All the londes and Tennementes to theym and either of theym belongynge, with all their Appurtenaunces, our seyd late souereigne lorde Kyng Henrye the viij<sup>th</sup>, by his most gracyouse *lettres patentes* berynge date the [thirteenth] daye of [January] in the [thirty- eighth] yere of hys most noble reigne, [A.D. 1547] Amonge diuerse and manye other londes, tene- mentes and possessiouns, gave and grauntyd to the Mayer, Cominaltye and Citezens of the seyd cytye and to theyr successours, for the charytable Ayed and Relyff of the pore with-in the seyd hospitall for the tyme beinge, and for the Maynteynaunce of dyuerse other godlye vses and intentes within his highnes seyd *lettres patentes* mencyned and expressyd /

[*Continuance to 1548, and Future Election, of the Hospital  
Governors of Dec. 10, 1545.*]

Counsellors  
& Surveyours  
of the pore in  
the hospitall  
of The Pore //  
and of the  
revenues of  
the same.

The old ones shall  
continue for 1 year.

After that, 2 Alder-  
men and 4 Commeners  
shall be chosen yearly,

to act with the Lord  
Mayor as Alders of  
the Hospital-pore,  
and Surveyours of  
Revenues;

all working gratis.

And yt ys also enactyd and Agreed by the seyd  
Auctoryte, that the lorde Mayere of this cytye for  
the tyme beyng, and those Aldermen and com-  
myners that were Assygnd and Appoyntyd at and  
by the seyd comen counseyll holden the seyd x<sup>th</sup> daye  
of December in the xxxvij<sup>th</sup> yere of the reigne of our  
seyd late soueraygn lorde Kyng Henrye the viij<sup>th</sup> [A.D.  
1545]<sup>1</sup> to be Ayders and of counseyll for the pore  
with-in the seyd hospitall, & Surveyours of the  
revenues of the same / shall, for and by the space of  
one hole yere now next ensuyng, stond, remayne  
and contynue in the same their rome and office /  
And that frome thenasforthe there shall yerlye be  
newlye electt and chosen by the comen counseill of  
the seyd cytye, ij Alderme[n] and iiij Commeners of  
the same cytye / which, with the lorde Mayer of the  
seyd cytye for the tyme beyng, shall Allweyes  
duelye, iustlye, and dyligently, use, execute and  
exercyse the seyd rome and office of Ayders &  
counsellors of and for the pore within the seyd  
Hospitall for the tyme beyng, and be Surveyours of  
the Revenues of the same for ever, all Franklye &  
frelye wilkwt anye maner of thinge or thinges  
claymyng or demaundyng for any their labours or  
paynes by theym, or anye of theym, at anye tyme  
herafter to be takyn or susteynyd by reason of the  
exercysyng, vsyng & execution of the same theyr  
seyd office and rome /

15 Nov. 1547. City Committee on the Bill in Parliament  
for St. Bartholomew's Property.

(Report. 11, ff. 389, ink; 365, penc. l. 15 Nov. 1 Edw. VI)

London  
pro  
terris  
pauper-  
um

Item, it is agreyd that Maister Crayforde, Maister Atkyns,  
& Maister Goodyng, shall peruse advysydly the draught of  
A certein Doke devysed to passe by Acte of parlyament,  
hytween the kynges maiestie & this Cytie for the assurance  
of suche Landes as were geven by our late soueraygn  
Lorde, kyng Henrye the viij<sup>th</sup> to the hospytall of the  
poore /

<sup>1</sup> p. 127, above.

1548. First Appointment of Vicary as a Governor of St. Bartholomew's, 29 Sept. 1548.

[*Journal 15, leaf 383, back.*]

Common Council  
of 29 Sept. 1548.

## Commune Concilium tentum

Die Sabbati, Videlicet, xxix<sup>a</sup> die Septembria, Ac in festo Sancti Michaelis Archiepiscopi / Anno regni regis Edwardi, dei gracia, sexti, &c., Secundo / Coram / Johanno Gresham milite, Maiore Ciuitatis Londonie / Roberto Brooke armigero, Recordatore / Willelmo Laxton, Martino Bowes / Militibus / Henrico Amcotes, Johanne Wylford / Andrea Judd, Georgio Barnes, Roulando Hill milite / Ricardo Dobbes, Willelmo Lock / Augustino Hynde / Ricardo Turke / Thoma Whyte / Roberto Chartesey / Johanne Lyon / Johanne Lambert / Willelmo Garra<sup>l</sup> aldermanis, Ac Willelmo Lock / et Johanne Ayliff, tunc Vicecomitibus<sup>1</sup> / Ac Maiore parte Communiorum Communis concilij Ciuitatis predictae existentis // . . . . .

[*leaf 384*] J. Gresham, Maior.

Gubernatores domus pauperium in West Smithefeld, et possessionem eiusdem.

In order that the Rules made by the City Managers of the House of the Poor in West Smithefeld (St. Bartholomew's), may be duly kept,

The Common Council order

1. that 4 Aldermen and 8 head Commoners of the City shall rule and manage the said House

Item, to the intent that suche good and necessarye ordres, rules, And constituciones as hytherto (with gret Industrye, studye, and paynes) haue beyne deuysyd, made, and sett furthe, by suche wurshipfull Aldermen and commoners of this Cytye as haue hadd the surveye, rule, and gouernaunce of the house of the poore in westsmithefeld, in the suburbes of the seyd Cytye, (for the obseruacion or mayntenaunce and contynuaunce of good and godlye rule, order, and lyvinge within the seyd house, and for the gouernaunce and preseruacion of the same house, and of the landes and Tenementtes, renttes, reuennes, goodes, and catalles, therunto belonginge,) maye allways from hensfurthe be dulye, iustlye, and fymolye obseruyd and kept, and putt in due execution / with-out the which, all lawes and ordenaunces, be they nener so good, ar butt baryn, ded, and rayne / yt ys therfore ordeynyd, enactyd, & establyshyd by the lorde Mayer, Aldermen, and commens of this present comen Counsayll Assemblyd, And by the Authoritye of the same, that four Aldermen of this cytye for the tyme beinge, and viij of the hed Cominers of the same, shall Alweis From Hensfurthe for ever haue the Surveye, rule, order, and gouernaunce of the seyd house,

<sup>1</sup> Sheriffs.

134 App. III. 1. *Vicary a Gouernor of Barts.*

and its property; And of all the londes and Tenementtes / rentes, reuenues, goodes and cattalls nowe belonging, or that herafter shall belonge, or in enye wise Apperteyn to the same / And that the Lord Mayer and Aldermen of the seyd Cytie for the tyme beinge, shall Alweyes have Full powre and Authoritye to nominat, elect, and Appoynt the seyd foure Aldermen and viij Cominers from tyme to tyme, when and as often as to theym shall Seame mete and expedient / And that all the foure Aldermen and viij cominers so elect, nominatyed, and apoynted, shall Allweys stonde, remayne, and contynue in the seyd rome and office by the space of ij hole yeres; and by all the same tyme shall diligently indeuoyr theym selves, and euerye of theym, as they maye conuenientlye Attende to the due execucion and exercyse of the seyd rome and Office / And that the seyd lorde Mayer And Aldermen for the tyme beinge, shall yerly alweyes at the Feast of seynt Michael tharchangell, or w<sup>ith</sup>in xiiij dayes next before the same Fest, remove and clerlye dyscharge from the seyd rome and office, suche ij of the seid foure Aldermen, and suche iiij of the seyd viij cominers as then shall have stondyn and contynued in the same office or rome by the space of ij hole yeres. And in their stedes and places, Then newlye to elect, nominate, and Appoynte other ij Aldermen and iiij comminers to be associate with y<sup>e</sup> other ij Aldermen & iiij comyners, which then shall remayne and stond still in the seyd office for one other hole yere then next ensuyn, for that th[ere] they have then exercisyd and executyd the seyd rome and office but by the space of one yere / And For the partye establisshementt and confirmacion of this presentt Acte, the nominacion, election, and Appoyntment of master Austyn Hynde and Master William Garrard, Aldermen; William Rawlins and Thomas Lodge, grocers; Thomas Berthelet, stacioner; and Thomas Bacon, Salter, whoe hertefore (w<sup>ith</sup> other) haue taken gret and manyfold paynes and labour in the devisinge and makinge of the seyd ordres And constitucions, and in executinge and diligent exercyse of the said rome and office, yet to remayne and contynue one hole yere longer in the seyd office; and the nominacion, eleccion, and newe Appoyntment of master Willforde and master Dobbes, Aldermen; and Thomas Vicars, barbour Surgeon; William Chester, Draper; William Clarke, skinner; & Stephon Cobb, Haberdasher, to Joyne and be Associate with the seyd master Hynd

2. that the Lord Mayer and Aldermen shall appoint them;

3. that they shall act as Gouernors for 3 years;

half of them retiring at every Michaelmas,

but electing 2 fresh Aldermen and 4 fresh Comminers, to take the places of the retiring Gouernors.

4. That for next year the 6 old Gouernors who're drawn up the Hospital Rules,

[\* leaf 284, back]

shall continue in office;

and that 6 new Gouernors,—  
THOMAS VICARS  
(or VICARY), one  
of them—shall  
join the 6 old  
ones.

App. III. 1. *Barts 500 Marks a year to be paid.* 135

and other Aforenamyd, by all the tyme Afore reheryd, made by the seyde Lord Mayer and Aldermen at this present, ys lovinglye ratyfyed, Approvyd, and confyrmyd by this hole court of comen Counsaile, And by the Authoritye of the same.<sup>1</sup>

On Dec. 20, 1548, the Common Council past an Act, ordering the payment of 500 Marks a year to St. Bartholomew's or 'the House of the Poore in Westsmythfeld,' and assessing the 59 City Companies to the same, in the several sums set after their names at the end of the Act; the Barber-Surgeons being down for £5 6s. 8d. This Act is printed as Appendix VII in the *Royal Hospitals* (1836), p. 51-6; ed. 1862, p. 46-51. It was enforced by the Precept of 22 Dec. 1548 printed below.

Precept of 22 Dec. 1548, to each City Company, bidding it comply with the Act of Common Council, 20 Dec. 1548, assessing each Company with its Proportion of the Bartholomew's Hospital 500 Marks a year.<sup>2</sup>

Auncotes Maier

(Journal 15, leaf 401<sup>3</sup>).

By the Maier.

A precept  
directyd to  
the Craftes  
of this citie  
of London,  
for payment  
of their  
Sessment  
vnto the  
poore //  
[of St. Bartholomew's].

For-Asynuche As yt was lovyngly grauntyd, Enactyd<sup>4</sup> & Aggreyd by Auctoritie of A Comon Councell holden at the Guildhall of the sayd Citie the .xxiiij. dayes of this present moneth of December, that your Company shold yerely gyve & paye towards the Sustentacion, Raleif & comfort of the poore people within the house of the poore lately fownded in West Smythfeld in the Suburbes of the same Citie, for the tyme beyng .N<sup>o</sup>. of good & lawfull money of England, to be payd yerely at the iiij<sup>th</sup> vsuall termes of the yere (that ys to saye) At the Feastes of the Birth of our lorde god, Thanunnciacion of our Lady, The natyvytie of

<sup>1</sup> 'This act of Common Council is referred to in Mr. Firth's *Memoranda* as existing in *Liber Legum*: as will be seen from the reference, it has been found in the Journal (15, leaf 384), and is now printed at length.'—Note to the first print of this Act in the 'Supplement to the *Memoranda relating to the Royal Hospitals*' (1867), p. 1. This first print has a few mistakes, which we have set right by the MS. Journal 15.

<sup>2</sup> This Act is printed in the *Royal Hospitals* (2nd ed. 1862), p. 46-51.

<sup>3</sup> At the top of the leaf is a Precept to the Warimote Inquests to make a return of all the aged, impotent, and lame folk in their respective Wards who live by begging.

<sup>4</sup> Every final *d* has a curl to it, as others have generally in the City MS Books we have used.

136 App. III. 1. *Power to vary the Barts Regulations.*

Saynt John Baptist, & St. Michell tharchaungeH, by even<sup>n</sup> porcions, The First payment therof to begyn<sup>n</sup> at the said feaste of the birthe of our lorde god next Commyng / We therefore straitly charge & commaund you / that ye, Immediately vpon<sup>n</sup> the Recepte hereof, Cause suche Taxacion & order to be taken<sup>n</sup> emonges your sayd Company, that ye fayle not to make redy payment of .O.<sup>4</sup>, parcell of the said .N.<sup>n</sup> now payable at the said feaste of the birth of our lord god next commyng, to the gouernours of the said house of the poore, or to their Sufficient Deputie / And so from<sup>n</sup> hensforth quarterly, vntyll other order shalbe taken<sup>n</sup> for the discharging therof, Accordyng to the te[r]mes<sup>n</sup> of the said Acte / As ye will Answer at your perill / Dated at the [M/S. torn<sup>n</sup>] aforesayd, the .xxij<sup>th</sup>. daye of December in the .ij<sup>th</sup>. yere of the R[eigne] of our Soueraign<sup>n</sup> Lorde, Kyng Edward the vij<sup>th</sup>. [A.D. 1548].  
Blackwell [Town Clerk].

1 Ang. 1549 (3 Edw. VI.). Lord Southampton directs a License to be drawn up for the City to vary Henry VIII's Regulations for Bartholomew's (Journal 16, leaf 26, back).<sup>2</sup>

As the City say that the Royal Regulations for Barts give too large fees to super-Snare Officers,

We tell you to draw a License from K. Edw. VI authorizing the City to vary those Regulations,

After our hartye Commendacions / Havinge given vs to vnderstande, by the Maior and comynaltie of the Citie of London, that the foundation of the hospitall of St. Bartylmewes in weste Smythfelde, cannot in all pointes so be obserued, as was mente by the foundation thereof, by cause moost of the Revenewe to the same Assigned, is consumed in fees and wagez to stipendarye preestes and other superfluous officers / the whiche abuses can in no wise be reformed, but onely by auctoritie or dispensation from the kinges Maiestie / Theis shalbe therefore to will and requyre yow (after full knowledge had of the foundation and state thereof) to drawe a booke of Lysaunce from his Maiestie, to the Maior and Auldremen of the same Cytie, authorisinge them by the same, to transpoe, alter, and chaunge the said number of preestes, and all other offices & thinges whiche shalbe thought by them not necessarye for the mynisterie of the said hospitall, vnto some other kynde of mynysters or vses, as to them shall be thought more

<sup>1</sup> 'Guildehall' one would expect, but the two letters shown look like vn.

<sup>2</sup> This is also in Letter-Book B, leaf 26.

### App. III. 1. *The Barts Orders and Surgeon.* 137

meter and convenient for the better sustentation and comforte of the diseased and impotent persons within the said hospitall; and that the same be sent hether to vs, warraunted withe your handes, forseing alwaies that the kinges Maiestie susteine no losse by the same, and also that thei contynewe charged, sawell withe the nombre of the poore, as the fyve hundreth markes yerely, the whiche thei be now bounde to dispende, for the sustentacion of the said poore people / and So byd you fare well: from westminster the first of august, Anno 1549.

for the better help  
of the Poore.

But the City's  
yearly 500 Markes  
is still to be paid.

E. Somerset<sup>1</sup>  
R. Riche, CounceR.

Your Louinge frende  
Thomas Southampton.

In 1552 the City's Order for Regulations of St. Bartholomew's were printed, and are reprinted (with sidenotes) at the end of this Appendix. In 1557, a revision of these, 'The Order / Of the / Hospitalls of K. Henry / the viijth and K. Ed- / ward the vith, / viz / St. Bartholomew'a. / Christ'a. / Bridewell. / St. Thomas'a. / By the Maior, Cominaltie, and Ci- / tizens of London, Governours of / the Possessions, Revenues and / Goods of the sayd Hospitalla. / 1557. /' were printed; and are reprinted as Appendix XIII to the *Royal Hospitals* (1836), p. 83—107; ed. 1862, p. 77—100. They are also in the Charity Commission Report 32, Part VI, 1840.

#### 1557. The Bartholomew's Surgeon & Orders.

(Repertory 13, No. 2, ff. 506) Adhuc Jovis, tercio decimo die maij, Annis tercio & quarto &c. [Philippi & Marie, A.D. 1557].

<p>Surgeons. (The Wardens not to interfere with the Surgeon of Bartholomew'a.)</p>	<p>Item, it was agryed that the Wardens of the Surgeons<sup>2</sup> shalbe warnyd to be heare the nexte Courte day to shewe cause why they go aboute to interrupte the Surgeon of the howse of the pore<sup>3</sup> to practyse those thinges that he dothe lawfully meddle wifhall.</p>
--	--

<sup>1</sup> The Protector.

<sup>2</sup> We suppose that these were the representatives of the Fellowship of Surgeons, not more than 12 in number. See the Statutes, and Supplement to them, below. But see the Order of 24 March 1542, above, when 'the Wardens of the Surgeons' had to appear, and Vicary does so. Yet he cannot have interrupted the Surgeon of Barts. He was Resident Governor, and must have always been practically Chief Surgeon of the Hospital; and in Jan. 1552 was made Governor for life.

<sup>3</sup> We assume that this 'howse of the pore' means Barts, and not St. Thomas's or Bridewell. In the Minute (Sept. 2. 1589) of the sealing of a Lease of a House and Shops in Ship Alley, Little Wood Street, belonging to



138 App. III. 1. *Vicary's Governorship of Barts.*

1557. (Repertory 13, No. 2, ff. 545) *Adhuc Martis 28 Septembris, Annis 4 & 5 [Philippi et Marie, A.D. 1557]. Offley Maiore.*

<p>Ordenaunces concernynge the gouernance of the Cytyes Hospytalles.</p>	<p>Item, it was agryed that all the seuerall artycles and ordynaunces hereafter mencionyde and ex-pressyd, and openly red to the Corte here this day,<sup>1</sup> concernynge the Gouernance and orderynge from hensefurthe of the howse of the pore in weste Smythefeld and the hospytalles of this Cyty, lately deuyseyd by Sir martyn Bowes and Sir Rowland Hyll, knyghts, and dyuers other of my Masters, thaldermen, and the Comyners of this Cyty (beynge governors and surveyors at this present of the sayde howses, and of all the landes and other Revenues of the same, what so euer), shulbe here enteryd of Recorde, and Frome hensefurthe be put in due execution from tyme to tyme, accordynge to the true meanyng and purporte of the same.</p>
--	---

1558. *Vicary's Governorship of St. Bartholomew's Hospital, under the Corporation of the City of London.*

A.D. 1558.

(City of London Records, Repertory XIV. leaf 72, back.)

*Mercurii, 28 Septembris Anno 5° & 6° &c. [Philip and Mary, 1558].*

<p>Curtes, Mayor. gouernours of the hospytalles &amp;c /</p>	<p>Item, this day the names of my Masters thaldermen &amp; Commoners of this Cytie newelye nominated, electe, &amp; chosen by the gouernours of the hospytalles &amp; howses of the pore of this Cytie &amp; of Bridewell, to ioynne &amp; travaille with certen of the olde gouernours of the same hospytalles remayning in the seid offyce for the yere insuinge, presentyd here by Richard Grafton, grocer,</p>
--	--

Barts, the Lessors are described as 'the Maior, Commynaltye and Cyttizens of the Cytye of London, Masters and gouernours of the howse of the pore, commonly called lyttle Saint Bartholomewes hospitall, in west anythefelde neare London, Curryor.' Repertory 22, leaf 91. There are entries in the Repertories of many (if all) other Leases of Barts property: see, for instance, in 1606, Rep. 27, leaf 194 (190, pencil).

On May 5, 1614, Barts is still the House of the Poor. See the entry 'Hospital Leases' in Repertory 31, no. 2, leaf 303; 'this day, seaven Indentures of leases made by the Maior and Comynalte and Citizens of London, Gouernours of the house of the pore commonly called St. Bartholomewes Hospitall, neare West Smithfeld, London, of the foundation of King Henry the Eight . . . were here sealed with the vsuall seale for sealing of hospitall leases.'

<sup>1</sup> These are doubtless the revised Ordinances or *Order* of 1557, printed as No. XIII in the Appendix to the *Memoranda on the Royal Hospitals*, p. 77-100, ed. 1862. Also in ed. 1836, and the *Charity Com. Report* 32, Part VI, 1840.

App. III. 1. *Vicary, a Governor of Barts.* 139

one of the seid old gouernours, werre here red, ratefyed & allowyd : which names, together with the names of the seid houses & hospytalles whervnto they are generally allottyed & appoynted, hereafter insue, *videlicet* :—

Sir Martyn Bowes, knight, Comptroller generall /  
Sir Rowland Hyll, knight, Surveyour generall /

S<sup>t</sup> Bartholomewes Hospytall

Sir John Lyon, knight	M <sup>r</sup> Wallys
M <sup>r</sup> John Whyte, Alderman	M <sup>r</sup> Bushe
M <sup>r</sup> Alderman Malorye	M <sup>r</sup> Dane
* M <sup>r</sup> Vycars	M <sup>r</sup> Ramsey
M <sup>r</sup> Style	M <sup>r</sup> Fletcher
M <sup>r</sup> Atkinson	M <sup>r</sup> Ambrose Nicholas

The Governors of Christes Hospytall, S<sup>t</sup> Thomas Hospytall, & Brydewell, follow on leaf 73.

S<sup>t</sup> Thomas Hospytall

Sir William Chester, knight	M <sup>r</sup> Thomas Pyerson
M <sup>r</sup> Draper, Alderman	M <sup>r</sup> Wythers
M <sup>r</sup> Altham, Alderman	M <sup>r</sup> Hayward
M <sup>r</sup> Sayer	M <sup>r</sup> Bonde
M <sup>r</sup> Cater	M <sup>r</sup> Onslowe
M <sup>r</sup> Dychefeld	M <sup>r</sup> John Olyff

1559. Repertory XIV. (leaf 216) Leigh, *Maiore*.

Jouis, 28 / Septombria, Anno primo domine Elizabethæ Regine, &c.  
[A.D. 1559]

[Present] Recorder, Bowes, Hil, White, Lyon, Garran, Curtes, Huet, Lodge, Harper, Johannes White, Altham, Malory, Draper, Martyn, Foulkes, Rowe, Avenon, Cowper, Bakerfeld, Aly; ac Halse & Champyon, Vicecomites [or Sheriffs] . . . .

Item, the nomination and elleccion of my maistres the Aldermen and worshipfull commoners of this Cytie appoynted by the right worshipfull Sir Martyn Bowes and Sir Roland Hil, knyghtes, and other their associates, gouernors at this present of all the Cyties hospytalles, to stonde and be gouernors of the sayd hospytalles for the yere now next insynge, here presentyd this day by the sayd Sir Martyn Bowes and his companyons, was ratefyed and confyrmed in euery poynt by the hole Court; The tenour wherof heereafter insueth in thes wordes: "Yt may please your Lordship to be aduertysed that, the xxvij<sup>th</sup> day of September, anno 1559 / we, the gouernors of Thospytalles of this Cytie of London, assembled together at Christes Hospytall accordynge to

The gouernors of the houses of the pore & of the Cyties hospytalles.

140 App. III. 1. *Vicary, a Governor of Barts.*

our accustomed maner, haue nominatyd, and appoynted and elected, certeyne Aldermen [*leaf 216, back*] And Citizens to serue in the sayd hospitalles for the yere ensuyng, most humbly beseechinge your Lordships and bretherene to ratefy and confyrme the same nominacion and eleccion

Sir Martyn Bowes, knyght, Comptroller generall.  
Sir Roland Hil, Surueygher generall/

The names of those that continued one yere, & must remayne another./...

S<sup>t</sup> Bartholomewes Hospytall/

M<sup>r</sup> John White, Alderman

M<sup>r</sup> Malorye, Alderman

\* M<sup>r</sup> Vikers

M<sup>r</sup> Busshe

M<sup>r</sup> Dane

M<sup>r</sup> Ramsey

M<sup>r</sup> Ambrose Nycholas

M<sup>r</sup> Atkynson./

S<sup>t</sup> Thomas Hospytall

Sir William Chester, knyght

M<sup>r</sup> Draper, Alderman

M<sup>r</sup> Altham, Alderman

M<sup>r</sup> Wethers

M<sup>r</sup> Dychefeld

M<sup>r</sup> Anslowe

M<sup>r</sup> Oleffe

M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Pyreson

The names of those that nowe are electyd to serue for the yere insuyng /...

S<sup>t</sup> Bartholomewes Hospytall /

Sir William Garrard, knyght

M<sup>r</sup> Beswyke, draper

M<sup>r</sup> Fowler, grocer

M<sup>r</sup> Lambertt, grocer

S<sup>t</sup> Thomas Hospytall

M<sup>r</sup> James Bacon

M<sup>r</sup> Medcalf, goldsmyth

M<sup>r</sup> Spryngham, mercer

M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Blanke, Junior

A.D. 1560.

(Rep. 14, leaf 391) Martis / 15 / Octobris anno secundo domine Elizabethæ Regine, &c. [A.D. 1560].

Chester, Maior de nouo, nuper clericus, Hil, White, Garrard, Offley, Leigh, Harper, Jo. White, Malorye, Champyon, Martyn, Avenon, Baskerfeld, Alyn, Chamberlyn; ac Draper & Rowe, Vicecomites [= Sheriffs]....

[*leaf 201, back*] Item, this day M<sup>r</sup> Alderman Bowes brought in here the names of all the gouernors of the cyties hospytalles hereunder namyd, that are appoynted and newly electyd Cyties accordynge to the forme of the actes & ordenaunces of hospytalles this cytie in that behalf prouyded and made, to serue,

<sup>1</sup> At top is 'Leigh Maiors. Adhuc Jouis 23 Septembris, Anno primo domine Elizabethæ Regine, &c.'

App. III. 1. *Vicary, a Governor of Barta.* 141

and take paynes and travayle for the gouernaunce of the same hospytalles for the yere insuyng: the names of all the which gouernors hereafter insue in these wordes/.

Gouernours elected the xiiij<sup>th</sup> of October, anno 1560, for the gouernement of Chrystes, S<sup>t</sup> Bartholomeus, Brydewell, and S<sup>t</sup> Thomas Hospytalle. /

Sir Martine Bowes, knyght, Comptroller generall.

Sir Roland Hill, knyght, Surueyour generall. / . . .

S<sup>t</sup> Thomas Hospytall (1560/1561) S<sup>t</sup> Bartholomeus Hospytall /

M<sup>r</sup> Sayer

M<sup>r</sup> Oloffe

M<sup>r</sup> James Bacon

M<sup>r</sup> Spryngham

M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Blanke

M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Pierson

M<sup>r</sup> Medcalf. /

Gouernors newly electyd (1560/1561)

M<sup>r</sup> Lodge, Alderman

M<sup>r</sup> Champyon, Alderman

M<sup>r</sup> Allyn, Alderman

Master Mynore

M<sup>r</sup> Chaire. /

Sir William Garrard, knight

M<sup>r</sup> John White, Alderman

M<sup>r</sup> Malorye, Alderman

\*M<sup>r</sup> Vikers

M<sup>r</sup> Richard Lamberte

M<sup>r</sup> Beswyke

M<sup>r</sup> Foulter

M<sup>r</sup> Ramsey

M<sup>r</sup> Ambrose Nicholas

M<sup>r</sup> Atkynson

M<sup>r</sup> Skott

Gouernors newly electyd (1560/1561)

M<sup>r</sup> Brystowe

Gouernours generall

M<sup>r</sup> Wethers

M<sup>r</sup> Foulkes. /

On 24 April, 3 Eliz. 1561, 'A Precept for the Poore yn the Hospitalls' was issued by the Lord Mayor, appointing Committees to sit with the Governors of the Hospitals, to collect weekly Alms for the poor in the several City-Wards, and not allow foreign (or strange) beggars or other poor to beg in the parishes. Among the Governors told off to act with the Committees for the Wards of Farringdon Without, Aldersgate and Cripplegate, was the Resident Governor of Bartholomew's, "M<sup>r</sup> Vycars," our Thomas Vicary. This Precept, with its names of Committees and Governors, is printed from the Guildhall-Records *Journal* 17, lf 310, in *The Royal Hospitals* (1836) as Appendix XIV, p. 107—111; ed. 1862, p. 100—104. See an extract in our Forewords.

142 App. III. 1. *Vicary, a Governor of Barts.*

A.D. 1561. (Repertory XIV, leaf 534.)

Jouis, 25 Septembris, anno 8<sup>o</sup> Domine Elisabethe Regine, &c.

[A.D. 1561] *Chester Maiora.*

[*Present.*] Recorder, Bowes, Hill, White, Leigh, Harper, John White, Champion, Avenon, Cowper, Baskerfeld, Alyn, Chamberlin, Gilbert; ac Draper et Rowe, *Viccomites* [= Sheriffs]. . . .

[leaf 534, back] Item, the names, aswell of the gouerners of y<sup>e</sup> Cities  
Gouernours of the Cities hospitalles those that haue allredy seruid by y<sup>e</sup> space of one hole  
Hospitalles yeres past, presentid vnto this Courte here this Day by Master  
Alderman Bowes & other of my masters the Aldermen, gouernors of  
the said houses, as hereafter ensueth, in Christes hospitall. The  
gouernors that haue remayned one yere & do continue still /  
Sir Thomas Offley, knyghte, M<sup>r</sup> Martyn, Alderman Basford, M<sup>r</sup>  
Peirson, M<sup>r</sup> Mabbe, M<sup>r</sup> Kynge, M<sup>r</sup> Whithorne.

[leaf 535] S<sup>t</sup> Bartholomews

Sir William Garrard, Knight

\* M<sup>r</sup> Vikers

M<sup>r</sup> Ambrose Nicholas

M<sup>r</sup> Bristowe /

M<sup>r</sup> Atkinson

M<sup>r</sup> Scott /

S<sup>t</sup> Thomas Hospitall /

M<sup>r</sup> Champion, Alderman /

M<sup>r</sup> Alen, Alderman /

M<sup>r</sup> Sawyer /

M<sup>r</sup> Chare /

M<sup>r</sup> Spryngham

M<sup>r</sup> James Bacon /

M<sup>r</sup> Mynoures

M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Peyrson /

Brydeweil /

M<sup>r</sup> Harding

M<sup>r</sup> Boxe

M<sup>r</sup> Harrys

M<sup>r</sup> Pers /

The names of them that are  
newly elected /

M<sup>r</sup> Chamberlyn, Alderman

M<sup>r</sup> Vincent Randall /

M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Garden, Goldesmyth

John Keale, Goldesmith

Richard Johnson /

Jeames Maston /

William Albeney

John Jakson /

S<sup>t</sup> Bartholomews

Sir Thomas Leigh, knight.

M<sup>r</sup> Bankes, Alderman

Robert Soole

Thomas Lave [Lawe]

John Lute

Robert Hulson /

S<sup>t</sup> Thomas Hospitall

Sir William Huett, knyght

M<sup>r</sup> Lorymer /

M<sup>r</sup> Golston /

M<sup>r</sup> John Baker /

M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Huett /

Rychard Violet /

Rychard Morrys /

Brydeweil

M<sup>r</sup> Hayward } Aldermen  
M<sup>r</sup> Gilbertt }

M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Bonde

M<sup>r</sup> Roger Bamsted

M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Bannyster

M<sup>r</sup> Nicholas Wheller

M<sup>r</sup> Kyteley

M<sup>r</sup> Edward Dove

Richard Taylor

William Gybbons /

[As we do not know for which  
Hospitals the new Governors were  
severally elected, we print the  
entries as they stand in the MS.]

App. III. 1. *Governors of Barts in 1562-3.* 143

The entry above, of Sept. 25, 1561, is the last in which Vicary's name appears. It is of course not in the next, of Sept. 24, 1562, as his Will was proved by his Widow on April 7, 1562 (see p. 194 below). Yet we add the 1562 List.

A.D. 1562. (Repertory XV, leaf 124, back.)

Harper Maiore

Jouis, 24 Septembris, anno iiii<sup>to</sup> Domine  
Elizabethæ Regine [A.D. 1562].

[Present:] Recorder, Bowes, Garrard, Offley, Leigh, Huett, Lodge, Champion, Cowper, Chamberlin, Banckes, Jakman; as Avenon & Baskerfeld, Vicecomites [= Sheriffs].

[leaf 125, back] Item, this day Sir Martin Bowes, knight, Controller  
The gouernors generall of all y<sup>e</sup> Cities hospitalles, Christ, the house  
of the Cities of y<sup>e</sup> poore [St. Bartholomew's], Bridwell, & St  
hospitalles Thomas in Suthwerke, brought in the names of all  
the gouernours & Surveiors of y<sup>e</sup> same houses, newly  
elect & chosen for the yere insueyng, according to  
thorders heretofore taken (~~1561~~ 1562) for the same, whose  
names hereafter do destinctly and generally insue, &c.

Gouernors elected and chosen for y<sup>e</sup> gouernment of Christes,  
S<sup>t</sup> Barthelmewes, Bridwell, & S<sup>t</sup> Thomas Hospitall, the  
xxj of September, 1562 . . . . .

S<sup>t</sup> Barthelmews.  
Sir W<sup>m</sup> Garrard, knight  
Sir Tho Leighe, knight  
M<sup>r</sup> Ambrose Nicolas  
M<sup>r</sup> Lute  
M<sup>r</sup> Loo  
M<sup>r</sup> Soole  
M<sup>r</sup> Scot  
M<sup>r</sup> Howland

S <sup>t</sup> Barthelmews	S <sup>t</sup> Barthelmews	S <sup>t</sup> Barthelmews
M <sup>r</sup> Banckes, Alder-	M <sup>r</sup> Jakman, Alder-	
man	man	
M <sup>r</sup> Bristowe	M <sup>r</sup> Witton Sowene	
M <sup>r</sup> Atkinson	M <sup>r</sup> Jeames Hawes	

S <sup>t</sup> Thomas Hospitall	S <sup>t</sup> Thomas	S <sup>t</sup> Thomas
Sir William Hewet, knight	Hospitall	Hospitall
M <sup>r</sup> Champion, Alderman	M <sup>r</sup> Allen, Alderman	Sir W <sup>m</sup> Chester,
M <sup>r</sup> Jeames Bacon	M <sup>r</sup> Sayer	knight
M <sup>r</sup> Lorymer	M <sup>r</sup> Springhām	M <sup>r</sup> Offlee
M <sup>r</sup> Colston	M <sup>r</sup> Chare	M <sup>r</sup> Boxe
M <sup>r</sup> Baker	M <sup>r</sup> Tho Hewett	M <sup>r</sup> Francis Barnham
M <sup>r</sup> Richard Violet		M <sup>r</sup> Nicholas Love
M <sup>r</sup> Richard Morris		M <sup>r</sup> Welles
M <sup>r</sup> Mynors		
M <sup>r</sup> Tho Peirson		

144 App. III. 1. *Governors of Barts in 1563-6.*

For the next year, Sept. 1563-4, the old Governors continue :  
Rep. XV, leaf 281, back :

governours Item, this daye the governours of all the citiez hos-  
of the pitalles here being *present*, dyd gently agree to stande  
hospitalles still in the same their offices one other yere more ; and  
yt was orderyd that the audytours appoyntid to take  
thacountes of the sayd offyceres shall take the same  
wyth convenyent spede.

On Tuesday, Sept. 25, 1565 (*Repert. XV*, leaf 472, back), two of  
the Bartholomew's men (M<sup>r</sup> Rychard Foukes, Clothworker, and John  
Jaxson, founder, two of the *gouvernours* of the house of the pore)  
brought in the list of the Governors of the several Hospitals elected  
at the Meeting at Christ's Hospital on Sept. 21, 1565, and besought  
the 'Court to ratefy and alow the same'; which, 'after good &  
mature consideracion thereof,' the Court did. But the Bartholomew's  
men were only the old ones (*Repert. XV*) :

of such as haue Contynewed Such as haue Contynewed ij  
but one yere & yet remayne yeres That remayne  
St. Bartholomewes

M<sup>r</sup> Aldreman Martyn  
M<sup>r</sup> Aldreman Chamberlyn  
M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Banester  
M<sup>r</sup> Edward Bryght  
M<sup>r</sup> Rychard Barnes  
M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Gore  
M<sup>r</sup> Richard Yonge  
M<sup>r</sup> William Cockes  
M<sup>r</sup> John Hardyng

Sir William Garret, *presydent*  
M<sup>r</sup> Ambros Nicholas, *Tresurar*  
M<sup>r</sup> William Wytton

[There is no Barts entry in the  
3rd column, headed "Such as ar  
new elected."]

The general Officers are given on the back of leaf 472 :—

Sir Martyn Bowes, knyght, Comptroller	} generall
Sir Thomas White, knyght, Surveyor	
M <sup>r</sup> Lawrence Wether	} <i>gouvernors &amp; Audytours generall</i>
M <sup>r</sup> Rychard Folkes	
M <sup>r</sup> Robert Hardyng	

The names of such as haue Contynued but one yere, & yet  
remayne

M<sup>r</sup> Alderman Lambert  
M<sup>r</sup> Wylliam Leonarde, *merc*  
M<sup>r</sup> Henry Sutton, Goldsmith  
M<sup>r</sup> Christofer Edwardes, *haberdasher*

### App. III. 1. *Later Governors of Barts.* 145

Many Lists (probably all the early ones) of the Barts' Governors are given in the Repertories. In turning over some of their leaves we came on a few. For those of 1582 and 1583, see Repertory 20, leaf 235, back, lf. 458, bk.; for those of 1584, -85, -86, -87, Rep. 21, lf. 87, bk., lf. 213, lf. 335, lf. 470; for 1589, -90, Repert. 22, lf. 100, 212; for 1593-4, -94-5, -95-6, Rep. 23, lf. 100 (or 103), bk., 295, bk., 441.

In 1598, the *Repertory* 24, leaf 283, shows that the Governors of Bartholomew's were Sir John Harte, knight, president, Sir John Spence, knight, 5 Aldermen, M<sup>r</sup>. Thomas Smith, *Thresurer*, William Massham, *Esquire*, 4 other men, 4 *mercera*, 4 *grocera*, 1 *draper*, 3 *goldsmithes*, 3 *Skynners*, 6 *merchanttailors*, 2 *haberdashers*, 1 *vintener*, 1 *Clothworker*, 2 *diers*, 1 *letherseller*, and 1 *Cooper*. There were 4 *Auditors*. (Why the number of Governors was so increast, we don't know.)

In 1599 (*Rep.* 24, leaf 460, back), the Barts' Governors were Sir Stephen Soame, knight, *Maio*r, Sir John Harte, knight, president, Sir John Spencer, knight, 2 Aldermen, M<sup>r</sup>. Thomas Smith, *Thresurer*, William Masham, *Esquire*, 5 men entitled to be cald 'Master,' 3 *mercera*, 6 *Grocers*, 1 *Draper*, 4 *Goldsmithes*, 5 *merchaunt-taylers*, 2 *Skynners*, 2 *haberdashers*, 1 *Vintener*, 2 *Clothworkers*, 2 *diers*, 1 *letherseller*, 1 *Cowper*; and there were 4 *Auditors*, as before.

For the Governors for 1600-1, see Repertory 25, lf. 154; for 1605-6, 1606-7, Rep. 27, lf. 85 (81, pencil), lf. 274 (271, pencil); for 1611, Rep. 30, lf. 182; for 1613, Rep. 31, no. 1, lf. 166; for 1614, Rep. 31, no. 2, lf. 417, bk.; &c. &c.

### 1614, April 19. Bartholomew's not a House for bringing-up Children.

(*Report*. 31, no. 2, lf. 397)

St. Bartholomewes  
Hospitall /

It is charged with  
the keep of 3  
Foundlings,  
2 left in the Hos-  
pital Cloisters,  
1 in Watling Str.

VICARY.

Item, this day, Thomas Juxon, *Thresorer*, and others of the Governours of S<sup>t</sup> Bartholomewes Hospitall, London, exhibited their humble petition to this Court, Intymating thereby that the said Hospitall hath bin charged with the keeping of three Children,—two of them being left by persons vnkowne, in the Cloyster of the said Hospitall, and the other being left in Watlingstreete in the parishe of S<sup>t</sup> John Evangelistes,

L



sent to the Hospital by the Lord Mayor to be cured.  
Mayn't the 3 Children be sent to Christ's Hospital?

Committee of 3 Barts Governors, and 2 of Christ's, appointed to report on the case.

and after sent by the Lord Maior to the said hospitall to be cured of her infirmitie,—and desirynge that the said Children may forthwith be received into Christes hospitall, to be kept there; alleadging that it is contrarye to the foundation of the hospitall of S<sup>t</sup> Bartholomewes to keepe or bring vpp any Children: Wherevpon it is ordered by this Court, that Sir Thomas Lowe, Sir William Craven, Sir Thomas Hayes, knightes and Aldermen, Master Alderman Leman, Master Alderman Stile, or any thre of them, shall forthwith meete and consider of the said petition, and certifie to this Court in writing vnder their handes, whether they shall finde it against the foundation of the said Hospitall to keepe Children, and of their opynions therein: And John Savage to warne & attend them./<sup>1</sup>

We don't find any further entry relating to this matter, but have no doubt that the Committee's decision was in favour of Barts, and that the children were shifted to Christ's Hospital, especially as Sir Thomas Lowe was then President of Barts, and Sir Thomas Hayes and Master Nicholas Stile, Alderman, were Governors: see Reportory 31, No. 1, lf. 166. Sir W<sup>m</sup>. Craven was President, and Alderman John Leman was a Governor, of Christ's Hospital.—*ib.*

### 1624, Sept. 3. A Petitioner for the Hospitallership [or Chaplaincy] of Barts.

(Report. 28, leaf 22b)

#### Peticio

Roberts recommended for the reversion of the post of Hospitaller of Barts, &c.

Item, this daie the humble peticion of William Robertes preferred vnto this Court, to haue a reversion of the Hospitlers place of Saint Bartholomewes, and to haue a Clark or Vicar Choralls place in Christ church, is by this Court referred to the favourable consideracion of the President and Governours of the said Hospitall of Saint Bartholomewes./

<sup>1</sup> Dugdale, *Monast. Angl.*, vol. vi. pt. 2, p. 627, ed. Ellis, says that 'the foundation was for a Master, brethren, and sisters, and for the entertainment of poor diseased persons till they got well; of distressed women big with child, till they were delivered, and able to go abroad; and for the maintenance (till the age of seven years) of all such children whose mothers die in the House.'

App. III. 2. *Smithfield Encroachment and Lease.* 147

2. *Supplementary Extracts from the Guildhall Records as to Bartholomew's.*

1512, March 16. The Master to pay rents for his Encroachments on Smith-Field.<sup>1</sup>

Rogerus Acheley, Maior

(Letter-Book M<sup>2</sup>,  
if 126, bk.)

Seint Bartholomeus  
Spital

The Master to  
pay 6s. 8d. rent  
for the site of  
his pale,

and 12s. 4d. for  
that of his gate-  
house and porch.

Sextodecimo Die Marcij, Anno regni Regis Henrici octavi tercio: Maior, Tata, Aylemer, Kebull, Copynger, Monox, Butler, Exmew, Reste, Basford, Brugis, Milbourne; Fenrother, Holdernesse, vicecomites./

Atte this Court of aldermen, it is agreed that the Master of seint Bartholomeus Spital, for the groundes that his pale standith vpon, shaft paye yerely to the Chamberlayn vjs viij d; And for his gate hous and porche newly bildid vpon the Comen ground, xiijs iiij d, to the vse of the Cominaltie of this Citie. &c.

1515. Lease for life, to the Master of Barts of the Common Ground of the City.

(Rep. 2, leaf 209 (208 pencil), bk.) Martis xvj<sup>o</sup> Die Januarij [6 Henry VIII, A.D. 1515].

Monoux [Mayor] [Present] Mayor, Capell, Haddon, Aylemer, Janyna, Boteler, Rest, Exmewe, Myrfyn, Milburn, Shelton, Fenrother, Aldernes, Baldry, Bayly, [ac] Yerford, Mundy, Vicecomites [Sheriffs].

Magister Hospitalis sancti At this Court yt ys agreed, that the Master of thospital of seynt Bartilmewe in Westsmythfeld, london, shaft haue a lees of the Comen ground of this Citie<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> There are of course many entries in the Guildhall Records as to the early Barts Hospital and Priory. We give only 2 or 3, mainly to show how Smithfield was gradually encroacht on, and doct of its old extent in Chancer's days.

<sup>2</sup> On ff. 246, bk, of this book, Sept. 6, 1515, £400 is to be paid to the two 'Surveyours of the lazare houses, Called Seynt Gyles in the Feld lookes, & Kyngelond, of the Foundacion of this Citie . . . Towardes the Reparacions of the seyd ij houses, that ys to sey, lookes & kyngeslond.'

On ff. 247 is an entry, that on Sept. 21, 1515, the Cardynall of Englonde sends a message that the King has ordered a *Te Deum* to be sung at St. Paul's that day at evensong, because 'the Quenes gruce, beyng of late Conceyved with Childe, ys nowe (thanked be our Lord!) quykened of the same, to the grete Ioye & Comforte of alle the kynges tren & lovyng Subgettes; wheruppon the seid Maier & his Brethern, in Scarlet, went to the seid Church, & their taryed tyll *Te Deum* was sunge, meane betwene evensong & Compleyn was Fynnyshed.'

<sup>3</sup> We take this to mean the open part of West Smithfield.

148 III. 2. *Encroachment on Smithfield. Privileges.*

**Bartholomei** for the terme of certeyn yeres, as more playnly  
**Ex assensu** apperyth the xxx day of March in the tyme of  
**domini** Mayralte of Master Accheley [Nov. 1511-12], Pro-  
**Mayoria** vided alweyes, that yf yt happen the seyd Mester to  
 decesse wylkin the seyd terme, that then the seyd  
 terme & leas to be vterly voyde; And the seyd leas  
 to begyn at Mighelmas last passyd. And as touchyng  
 tharrere of the seyd Rent, the seyd Master promytteth  
 to stand & obey to such order & direccion as this  
 Court shall award in that behalf.

1515. Encroachment. A Forge built on West  
 Smithfield, granted to Barts for a year.

(Repertory 2, ff. 210 ink, 209 pencil.)

**Smythes** Item, yt ys agreed that the Smyth which now settith  
 Forge next to the Hertyshorn in Westsmyth-  
 feld, vpon a parcell of the Comen ground, That the  
**Hertyshorn** Chamberleyn shall viewe the seyd Comen ground, &  
 sett a Rent theruppon by his discrecion, & to make  
 to the Master of thospitaill of Seynt Bartholomewes,  
 owner of the hous wherunto the seyd Forge adioyneith,  
 a graunt therof, onely for this yere.

1541. Privileges of Bartholomew's as to Arrest in the  
 Hospital.

(Repert. 10, ff. 216) Martis, 19 Julij, Anno 33<sup>o</sup>, H. 8 (A.D. 1541).

**Roche** [Present] Mayor, Waren, Gresham, Forman, Denham,  
**Mayor.** Dormer, Pagett, Cotes, Bowyer, Dawnsay, Hoberthorne,  
 Tolos, Aleyn, Wylforde, Lewen, J. Gresham, Judde; As  
 Laxton & Bowes, Vicecomites (Sheriffs) . . . .

Item, the most gracyous lettres patentes of kyng Edward  
**Seynt** the seconde, made & graunted to seynt Bartholomewes  
**Bartholo-** hospitaill in Smythfeld, were Alowyd, for & concernyng  
**meues** suche pryvyldges As they do clayme therby att the present  
**hospitaill** tyme / whiche ys, that none of the officers or Mynistres of  
 this Citye shulde do or execute eny arrest within the  
 precincts of the seyd hospitaill / And that the arrest made  
 by Vnderhyll, one of my lorde Mayers seriauntes vpon  
 Alyce Brome, wydowe, dwellyng within the seyd hospitaill,  
 shalbe dyscharged, &c.

Claims free-  
 dom from ar-  
 rest, and that  
 Widoer Brome  
 shall be set  
 free.

1541. Barts Privileges as to Arrests allowd by the City.

(Letter-Book Q.  
If 31, bk.)

Roche, Maior.

Martia, xix<sup>e</sup> die Julij, Anno xxxiiij<sup>e</sup> Henrici viij, in Repertorio.

Saint Bartholomewes  
hospytall

Its claim for freedom of its indwellers from arrest, is allowd.

and Underhill's arrest of Widow Browne is discharged.

Item, the most gracyous *lettres patentes* of kinge Edwarde the seconde, made & graunted to saint Barthilomewes hospytall in Smythfelde, were allowed, for & concernyng suche pryvyloges as thei doo clayme therby at this present tyme / which ys, that none of the offycers or mynysters of this Cytye shulke doo or execute any arrest within the precincte of the said hospytall / And that the arrest made by Vnderhill, one of my lorde Mayers *scrivantes*, vpon Alyce Browne, wydowe, Dwelling within the sayd hospytall, shalbe dyscharged &c/.

1542. A Governor of the Hospitals surrenders his post.

(Rep. 10, If 269) *Adhuc Martia, primo Augusti, Anno 34, Henrici viij. (A.D. 1542).* Dormer, Mayor.

Master  
Gallard

[surrenders his post as Governor of the Spital Houses]

Item, Att this Court, Master Gallard, paynterstayer, being one of the vysytours & gouernours of the Spytall howses nere adioynyng vnto thys Cytye, hath thankefully, by the mouthe of master Hayes, Comptroller of the Chambre of this Cytye, *surrendred* hys sed Rowme & offyce into the handes & dysposycion of this Court / most hertely desyryng the same to Apoynt some other hable man for the due execucion of the same rowme.

On Jan. 23, 1543 (Rep. 10, If 303), 'John Nyk,—who lately had the gouernaunce & ordering of the poore people being in the lazar house Att Kyngysland, & of the ymplementes of the same house / And also the Colleccion of the charitable Almes of the people gevynd vnto the seyd poore men,'—was reinstated in his office, which he had lost by absence for a time. On 22 May, 1543 (Rep. 10, If 334, bk.), 'Mr Rychard Holte, Cytezen & merchaunttayller' is appointed 'one of the gouernours & Vysytours of the lazarhouses.'

15 Nov. 1547. The Vicar of St. Bartholomew's Hospital.

(Report 11, If 387, ink ; 363 pencil, bk. 15 Nov. 1 Edw. VI)

seynt Bartholomewes  
hospytall, resortyng to maister Judde & thother Aldermen & commysyoners for the poore, shalbe assured of all suche thynges as he, doying his duetie, ought to haue.

12 Jan. 1548. Dr. Howell's Claim on the Bartholomew's  
Governors for his Stipend.<sup>1</sup>

Ja. Gresham, Mayor. (Rep. 11, lf. 380, pencil; 404, ink.)

Howell Item the *lettres* of sir Edward North, knyght, and  
other the lerned counsellers of the Court of the Aug-  
mentacion of the Revenues of the kynges Crown,  
dyrected to this Court in the favour of doctour Howell,  
Physycion, for the stypend or Fee by hym demaunded,  
were delyuered, by the order of the Court, to Maister  
Judde, Alderman, to the intent that he, & thother  
Aldermen hauyng the gouernaunce of the hospytall of  
the pore, shuld make an aunsweere therunto /.

24 Jan. 1548. Bridge-money for Bartholomew's. Dr.  
Howell's claim.

(Rep. 11, lf. 408, ink; 384, pencil, bk.) *Martis, xxiii<sup>o</sup> die Januarii, Anno primo  
Edwardi v<sup>o</sup> / [A.D. 1548].*

the howse of y<sup>e</sup> poore Item, it is agreyd that the Brydgc-maisters for the  
tyme beyng, shall from hensforth paye vnto my  
maisters thaldermen nowe hauyng, & that hereafter  
shall have, the gouernaunce of the howse of the pore,  
all suche money as they heretofore were wont yerely  
to paye to the late maister there / And further that  
the seid Brydgc-maisters shall, with conveyant spede,  
cause A good stronge Cage to be new made att the  
further ende of the seid Brydgc for the due punyssh-  
ment of Vagabundes therein /.

Intratur  
A Cage /  
Howell Item, this day, Maister Bowes, Maister Judde, Maister  
Hyll, Maister Barne, Maister Jervys, Maister Hynde,  
& Maister Garran, Aldermen, are assygned by the  
Court here, to repayre to Maister Chaunceler of the  
Augmentacion of the Revenues of the kynges Crown,  
for the aunsweyng of his *lettre wryten* in the favour  
of Howell y<sup>e</sup> physycion /.

20 Sept. 1548. Mr. Losse's Claim against Bartholomew's.

(Rep. 11, lf. 492, ink; 470 pencil, bk. 20 Sept. A<sup>e</sup> ij<sup>o</sup> E(dw.) 6 /.)

J. Gresham, Mayor.

Maister Item, Maister Losses byH exhbyted to my lorde  
Losse Mayere & my maisters the Aldermen, for certain  
yerely Fees that he claymeth out of the late Hospytall  
of saint Barthylmewe & the late grey Fryers, red /

<sup>1</sup> He perhaps did work at the Hospital before Vicary's appointment.

Yt was agreyd that he <sup>1</sup>shuld repayre to Maister Judde & thother Aldermen, gouernours of the house of the poore,<sup>2</sup> for his aunswer therin, accordyng to the ordre here lately taken for the same /.

1552. Bart's Governors to have a Gateway thro' the City Wall into the 'House of Work'.

A.D. 1552. Common Council, 1 Aug., 6 Edward VI.  
(Journal 16, leaf 201, ink; or 195, pencil, back.)

It was also this day (for dyuerse good & necessarie consyderacions & causes especially moving this honourable Courte of comen counsaill) ordeined, enacted, graunted & agreyd by thassent & auctoritie of the same, that it shalbe lefuitt to & for the lorde Maire & Aldemen of the said Cytie that nowe are, & to their Successours, Maires & Aldermen of the same Cytie for the tyme being, at their free witt & pleasure to pull & breake downe, & cause to be pulledd downe, asmuche of the Cyties wall stonding on the Backsyde of Crystes church in the warde of Faringdon within, as to their said dyscrecions & wysedomes shaft scame meate and convenyent for the making of a gate or dore thurrough the same wall, for the Apte, commodious, & meate passage of the gouernours of the house of the poore of the fundacion of kinge Henrie the viij<sup>th</sup> in west Smythfeld, nere vnto London, & other Cytezens of the sayd Cytie, to & from the same house, vnto & from the house of the said Cytie, ordeined by the same Cytie for the relief & socour of the poore, called the house of woork / eny Lawe, Acte, ordenaunce or decree heretofore made & ordeined to the contrarie, in eny wyse notwithstanding/.

(If 201, ink, or 195, pencil)

Enacted that

the Lord Mayor and Aldermen

may break thro' the City Wall at the back of Christchurch,

and make a gateway for the

Gouernors of Bartholomew's, &c.,

to passe from the Hospital to the

House of Work for the poore.

1552. Bartholomew's to have a second Rent from all City houses turnd into Alleys.

(Journal 16, leaf 127.) *Primo die Octobris, Anno Regni Regis Edwardi viij<sup>th</sup> v<sup>to</sup>*  
[A.D. 1552].

By reason of turnynz, converting & transporting of capytall mesuages & houses into alleis, wherby great nombre of beggers, vagabundes, idell & suspecte persons are increased within this Cytie / & the comen welthe therby muche impaired, & evelt rule muche

As the turning of Houses with their grounds into Alleis has increased the number of vagabonds, &c.,

<sup>1</sup> leaf 193, ink.

<sup>2</sup> 'of the poore' struck thro'.

152 App. III. 2. *Barts Rent from Houses made Alleys.*

We order, that in every such House converted Alley,  
every tenant shall pay to St. Bartholomew's the whole yearly value of his Room or Rooms quarterly, according to the actual rent, or that set by the City's valuers, such value to be recovered by distress by any City Officer, or the Governors of St. Bartholomew's.  
And when any 2 houses have been or shall be converted into 1, the inhabitants of it shall pay the old scot, lot, &c., for the old 2 houses.

inhaunsed & growen), & the abylytie & suertie of the said Cytie muche decreased & mynysshed / For reformation wherof, be yt ordeined & decreed, by authoritye of this comen counsaill, that where any pryncypall Meases<sup>1</sup> or howses shall, at any tyme herafter be converted & turned into any alley or alleis / that euerie seuerall inhabitaunt within euerie Rowme & place within suche Alley or Alleis for the tyme being for euer, shall yerely yelde & paye to the house of the poore in Westmythefeld of London yerely the hole value by the yere of euerie suche Rowme & Rowmes as euerie of them dothe or shall dwell in [in] any suche Alley or Alleis made or to be made, so longe as the same shalbe vsed as an Alley / the same to be paid quarterly by evyn porcions, after suche rate as thei paye in yerely rent for the same to the landelordes therof<sup>2</sup> / or as the same shalbe estemed to be yerely worthe by iiij indyferant men of the said Cytie, to be authorysed by the Maire of London & A full court of Aldermen for the tyme being / & that it shalbe lauffull for any offycer of the said Cytie, by the commaundement of the Maire of the same for the tyme being, to dystreine for the same / or elles the governours of the said hospitall for the tyme being, to haue an accion of dett[e] for the same / wherin no wager of lawe<sup>3</sup> shall lie ne be admytted / And be yt further ordred & decreyd by authoritye aforesaid, that where, at any tyme within .x. yeres now last past, ij dwelling howses or moo, haue bein converted into one dwelling house, and where at any tyme herafter ij dwelling houses or moo shalbe converted into one, that in euerie suche case, thinhabitaunts or inhabitauntes of the same shall from hensforthe doo here & paye all suche & asmuche scott, lott, [law 127, back] charge, payment & other thinges as was accustomed to be done, paid & borne for euerie of the same when thei were vsed / as seuerall dwelling howses / & as shuld, or of right ought to be done, borne & paid for the same, in case thei were still vsed as seuerall dwelling houses //

<sup>1</sup> message, holding: see *Catholicon*, page 1 (= 50, of Introduction) and p. 232; and 'a mese of landes & tenementes' in *Fifty earliest English Wills*, E. E. T. Soc. (ed. F. J. F.), p. 126.

<sup>2</sup> M8. of therof. This makes a double rent payable, 1 to Bart's, besides the other to the landlord.

<sup>3</sup> See the bit from Jacob's *Law Dict.* on page 98, *Statutes*, note, below.

A.D. 1557. Gifts to St. Bartholomew's.

(Reper. 13, No. 2, lf 532) Martis decimo nono Octobris, annis quarto & quinto [Philippi et Marie, 1557]. Offley maiora.

London et Bennet. At this Courte, a deade of a graunt of Annuyte of v li vjs viij d to be made by the Mayer and Comynalty and Citizens of this Cytye, to one Constance Bennet, gentleman, for Terme of his lyfe, for and in consideration of three howses set & beyng here within the Cyty, by hymme, the same Constance, already frely gevyen to the same Cytye, to the vse of the pore within the howse of the pore in waste Smythefelde, was read; & agryed that the same shalbe sealyd and delyueryd over accordingly.

(2 houses given to Bart's)

Another gift of lands, by Katheryn Hall, 'to the vse of the pore within the hospytalles of the saide Cyty' is on the back of leaf 552; and at the top of leaf 553 (date as above), is a Lease of (seemingly) Hospital lands in Oxfordshire:—

Smytha. Item, it was agryed that the Counterpane of the lease here red this day, grauntyd by the Chamberlyne and iiij of the Gouernors of the howse of the poore in waste Smythefelde, to one Alyce Smythe, wydowe, of the Cytyes messuage or Tenement, and certayne Landes lyeng and beyng in Heathe<sup>1</sup> in the County of Oxford, nowe in the holdinge and occupation of the said Alyce, or her assignes, for Terme of certayne yeres, shalbe sealyd and delyueryd over accordingly.

In Repertory 22, leaf 107, is the following Minute of the Common Council Meeting on Oct. 14, 1589:—

Legacies to thospitall. Item, yt is orleryd that Warninge shalbe presently gyven to the Threosorer and governors of the fower severall hospitalls of this Cyttye, to haue a speciall Care to looke for suche legacyes as haue lately byn gyven and bequeathed to the same hospitalls by the last will and testament of Richard Walter, girdler, deceased.

(by Ed. Walter, girdler.)

AD. 1562. Incontinent Folk at Bartholomew's.<sup>2</sup>

(Repertory 15, lf. 59, bk.) Adhuc martia, 7 Aprilis anno iiiij<sup>to</sup> Domine Elizabethæ Regine [A.D. 1562].

Item, it was orderid that master Fulkes, and others the gouernours of the house of the poore, shall cause the

<sup>1</sup> Near Bicester, in Ploughley Hundred.

<sup>2</sup> This extract, the Cesspool one of 1567, &c., are given as specimens, to show how complete was the control of the City over Barts and the other Hospitals.



154 App. III. 2. *Barts Cesspool. Misdoers turnd out.*

Incontinent man & y<sup>e</sup> ij women *that* they haue nowe remaynyng in  
Lyuers their keepings for vicious & incontinent liuyng, of whome  
they informed the Court here this day, to be inquired of  
by the wardmote inquest where they did offend: And  
that they then shalbe pwnished according to the lawe /

1564. Enclosure of the City's Garden near the House  
of the Poor.

(Rep. 15, H. 327, bk. ; 324, inner margin) Adhuc 23<sup>da</sup> Martij, anno 6 Domine  
Elizabethæ Regine, &c.

Memorandum, that the xxv<sup>th</sup> daye of Marche, in the vj<sup>th</sup> yere of the  
regne of our sayde sovereign<sup>e</sup> Lady &c., Maister Laurence Wyther,  
Saniter, Maister Richarde Fulkes, Clothworker, & the Chamberlein  
were appoyntyd by my lorde mayre and my Maisters thaldermen, to  
talke with Maister Haddon, one of the maisters of the Request, for  
& concernynge the cytyes gardeyne at the house of the poore adioyn-  
ynge to his lodgings there / & to move him quyetly to suffer the  
cytyseins & governours of the seyd house to inclose, vse, & enioye  
the same, beinge their owne propre grounde, to their most benyfitt  
and commodyte, & to make reporte to my seyd lorde mayre & alder-  
men with convenyent spede, of his answer there in /

1567. The Cesspool at Bartholomew's to be clenzd.

(Rep. 16, leaf 261, back<sup>1</sup>) 29 July, 1567 (An. 9 Eliz.).

the Sewer at the house of y <sup>e</sup> pore	Item, it was this day ordered by the Court here, that master Chamberlyn, & master Bright, Iremonger, and ij or iij more of the governours of the house of the pore, & Thomas Wheeler, draper, shall viewe the comen Sewer or vawt at the seid house, & consider how and by what meanes the same Sewer may be clenused, And make an estymate as neight <sup>2</sup> as they can, what the Charges of the doying thereof will amount vnto, &c. /
---	--

[*The Hospital Surveyors to reform Hospital Abuses.*]

Surveyors of the Cities Hospitalles	Item, this day, master Garrard, master Offley, master Chester, master White, master Rowe, master Becher, and master Hardyng, Aldermen, were assigned to peruse, viewe, & vnderstand perfetly the estates & condicions of all the Cyties hospytalles, and to reforme & avoyd all such misdowers as they shall fynd in eny of them, either in the resceipte and maynten-
---	--

to turn out mis-  
doers;

<sup>1</sup> ink no. ; 252, pencil.

<sup>2</sup> nigh, near.

to see the right  
members of par  
and children kept,

and to reform  
things amiss.

ance of eny more or greater number of pouertie or Children in eny of theym then ther ought to be, or otherwise by eny wayes or meanes; And to take such order for the<sup>1</sup> custodie of the money & Tresure of euery of the seid houses, And for the reformation of all such thinges as they shall fynd amys, as to theym shall seme Conuenient.

1573. Lease to Dr. Freer, of Dr. Caius's old House.

(Report. 18, H. 106, bk.) 16 Nov. 1573.

Item, at this Courte it was ordered that the gouernours of S<sup>t</sup> Bartillmewes hospitall shall make a lease for xxj<sup>th</sup> yeres of the house wherein Doctour Keies lately dwelled, to M<sup>r</sup> Doctour Freer, for xx<sup>th</sup> fyne, & the rent of v<sup>th</sup> by yere, notwithstandinge any Acte heretofore made for not lettynge of any of thospitall landes, other then to fremen &c. /

1574. A Dishonest Hospital-Collector discharged.

(Report. 18, H. 264) Curia Specialis. Sabbat, vndecimo die Septembris, Anno xvj<sup>th</sup> Elizabethæ Regina. [A.D. 1574]

Item, Wylliam Edwardes, Skynner, one of the gather[er]s of the money due to the hospytall, for that yt was substancyally provyd vnto this Courte, that he had verye lewdly & dysceitfully vsed and behauyd him selfe in the execution of his sayd offyce, was therefore by this Courte cleyrlye dyschardged of and from the same offyce and the execution thereof for ever /

3. *Extracts from the Guildhall Records relating to Barbers, to foreign and unlicenst Surgeons; and to the Plague in London.*

1406, Jan. Two Aldermen to examine the Statement of the Barbers and Barber-Surgeons.

(Rep. 1, H. 12.) [Present] M[ayor]<sup>2</sup> Colet, Broun, White, Mathue, Remyngton, Isak, Broke, Pemberton, Purchas, Welbek, Shaa, Woode

It is agreed at the same court that Maister Purchas and Maister Woode shall haue the examinacion of the bill of barbours and barbours surgions, and to speake with the said barbours, and to make report ageyn to the court.

<sup>1</sup> MS the the.

<sup>2</sup> Henry Colet.

156 App. III. 3. *Unlicenst Medicals reported.*

1513. The Archbp. of Canterbury's Barber to be a Freeman of the City without fee.

(Rep. 2, II. 158) x<sup>e</sup> die Maij, Anno v<sup>o</sup> H. viij<sup>o</sup> (1513).

**Intratur.** [Present] Mayor [Sir W<sup>m</sup> Browne], Recorder, Capell, Kneseworth, Aylemer, Acheley, Monoux, Boteler, Exmewe, Recst, Basford, Bruges, Shelton, Dawes, Amho Vicecomes.<sup>1</sup>

The bisschops At this Court, At the instance of the right Reuerend of Canterbury Fader in god / the Archebusschoppe of Canterbury And Chaunceler of Englonde, it is graunted to Thomas Hill, his seruaut & barbour, that the said Thomas shall be fre man of this Citie without any thyng paieng therefor to the Chaumberleyn.<sup>2</sup>

1514. The Surgeons not to be assest with the Barbers.

(Rep. 2, II. 173, bk.) xv<sup>e</sup> die Marcij (5 Hen. VIII, 1514).

**Intratur.** *Memorandum*, that the Surgeons from hensforth be not ioyned with the barbours when charges shall be sesed up-on them.

1524. Three unlicenst Doctors reported, and one Surgeon stopt.

(Rep. 4, II. 201) Jouis, xij<sup>e</sup> die Septembris (an. Hen. VIII, 16; A.D. 1524).

[Present] Mayor [Sir Thos. Baldire], Recorder / Butler / Milburn / Brown / Lambert, Askue, Peock, [& Michael] Englyshe, Vicecomes.

**Dra. Bentley and Yakesley, the Examiners in Medicine and Surgery, complains of 3 incompetent Practitioners,**

At this Courte, comme Doctour Bentley & doctour Yakesley, doctours of phisik, & examyners Admytted to hable or disable suche as practisise phisik & Surgery in London; And by weye of Compleynt, certified to this Courte, that the thre persones vndernamed, dayly practisise phisik, [1524, 201, back] havynge no maner speculacion & cunnyng that to doo / Wherefore Wylliam Nycholson ys commaundyd to warne those iij persones to be here on Teweday next cummyng, At which day the seyd iij doctours haue promysed to be here & o

**Smith,** { Roger Smyth, Appotecary  
**Roye,** { Roye, at the Grey Friars  
**Wescott.** { Wescott, in Seynt Swith[i]nnes lane

<sup>1</sup> The Sheriffs were John Dawes, John Bruges, Roger Basford.

<sup>2</sup> The next entry relating to the Surgeons is on "xij<sup>e</sup> die Maij" (1513):— Also it is commaunded that warnyng be geuen to the Wardeynes of surgeons of this Citie to appere at the next Court of Aldermen, that is to say, the tuesday after trinite sunday next cummyng. [No further entry.]

### III. 3. *Misbehaving Surgeons. Spittle-Houses.* 157

(Rep. 4, lf. 201, bk.) Martis, 27 die Septembris (1524).

[Present] Mayor / Recorder / Prior Ecclesie Christi / Boteler / Exmewe / Milburn / Mundy / Aley / Seymer, Partryche / Rudstone / Skevyngton / Dodmer / Broun.

(lf. 202)

Roye, the incompetent Surgeon,

is forbidden to practice physik.

Item, At thys Court camme the seyd Roys, Surgeon, dwellyng At the Grey Fryers; to whome was Redde the Acte of Comen Counsell made the xxviiij day of Aprill last passed<sup>1</sup> concernyng Phisik, & Also the Certificate of the Doctours of phisik / Wherefore, Accordyng to the same Acte, At the Request of the seyd Doctours, Iniunction ys geuen to the seyd Roys, that he shall no more occupie Phisik, vppon payn lymytted in the same Acte, & c

#### 1536. City Control of the Spittle-Houses.

27 March 1536 (27 Hen. VIII), Repertory 2, leaf 117, back.

T. Barnwell appointed a Visitor,

at the old pay.

Item, that Thomas Barnwell, gentleman, shalbe one of the visitors of the spyttelhowses, or lazar cotes, about thys Citye, yn as large & ample maner as Henry Clydero, late Cytezyn & of London, deceassyd, occupied the same, with all the profittes & commodyties therto belongyng / as longe as the sayd Barnwell well & truly behave theym selfes [himself] yn the same.

#### 1536. Richard Smith, a Doctor-Surgeon, expeld the City for a misdemeanor.

In 1536,<sup>2</sup> one Richard Smyth, a Doctor of Physic and a Surgeon, had committed some misdemeanor,—wrongfully troubled an Alderman, &c.—which the Wardmote Quest reported to the Common Council. The following entries are in Repertory 9:—

(lf. 169) Jouis, xxvij die Aprilis, anno 27 (28) H. viij (A.D. 1536).

Smyth Item, the verlyt of the Wardmote enquest concernyng Rychard Smyth, yn the Warde of Colmanstrete of London, was Redde; & agreed that a quest shalbe charygd, & to trye the sayd matters by & by, without dylay.

(lf. 177) Jouis, xviiij die Maij, anno 28 H. viij. (A.D. 1536).

Smyth Item, Richard Smyth, doctor of physyk & Surgeon, hath faithfully promysed to obserue the Judgement gyven agaynst hym the xxvij day of Aprill last past / & bycawse

<sup>1</sup> There is no entry of this Act in the Minutes of the Council held on April 28, 1524, on leaf 160 of this Repertory 4.

<sup>2</sup> The heading 'anno 27 H viij' must be a mistake for '28 H viij.'

158 III. 3. *Troublesome Smith. Foreign Surgeons.*

the day ys past, he promyseth to departe owt of this Cytie afore the xx day of may, thys present moneth / & that no copye be delynered concernyng the seyd matter

(lf. 189) *Martis, xxix die Augusti, anno 28 H. 8 (A.D. 1536).*

Smyth Item, the lorde pryvye seale made request to thys courte for Doctor Smyth, who of late was banysshed the Cytie for his mysdemeanure.

(Rep. 9, lf. 230) *Jouis, xliij die Decembris, anno 28 H. 8. (1536).*

Smyth Item, a petition of Rychard Smyth, Surgeon, was Redde, touchyng the restitution of hym self to hys howse, & c; & bycause he hath wrongefully trowbled Maister Denham,<sup>1</sup> Alderman, & others of the Wardemote enquest of the warde of Colmanstrete, & yet continueth yn hys wyful mynde, wherfore hys seyd Request ys refused.

His Petition  
refused, because  
he troubled Alder-  
man Denham.

(lf. 234) *Jouis, xj die Januarij, anno 28 H. 8 (A.D. 1537).*

Smyth At thys courte a petition by Richard Smyth, surgeon, requyryng to be restored to theyre favours, & to comme ageyn ynto thys Cytie.

(lf. 236) *Jouis, xvij die Januarii, anno 28 H. 8 (A.D. 1537).*

Smyth Item, at thys courte, a bytt of Complaynt was exhybtyted to thys Courte by Richard Smyth, Surgeon, to have lycens to come to hys howse to see hys goodes

A.D. 1539. Leave for a Dutch Surgeon to practise in London.

(Repert. 10, lf. 163<sup>2</sup>) *Jouis, xix<sup>e</sup> die februarii, anno 31, H. 8 (A.D. 1539).*

Mastryk Item, that vnder the seale of office of London, Henry [Maestricht] of Mastryk, Surgeon, shall have lycens to exercyse hys connyng withyn the libe-tyes of London, without empeeschement of eny person, as farre furthe as the Authoritye of thys Courte may graunt the same.

1538. A French Surgeon who has done great Cures.

(Repert. 10, lf. 64) *Jouis, vij Novembris, anno 30, H. 8 (A.D. 1538).*

Forman Item, the matter of John Lesture of fraunce, who hath [Mayor] occupied phisyk & surgery; & dyuerse honest persones

<sup>1</sup> William Denham, Sheriff in 1534-5. He was not present at this Court of Dec. 14, with the Mayor (Sir Ralph Warren), the Recorder, Aleyn, Mundy, Aacue, Champeneya, Hollyes, Forman, Dormer, Cotes, Monnoux, Dauncy, Gresham, Bowes, and the Sheriffs R. Paget and Wm. Bowyer, who constituted it.

<sup>2</sup> The first 163. After lf. 175, the next leaf is numberd 156, and the numbering starts again from it.

### App. III. 3. *Norman Physician. Lytster's Cures.* 159

Lecture      declaryd the honesty & great Cures doon by hym ;  
Wherefore it ys agreed, that the Warleyns of Surgeons  
shalbe here vpon tuesday next commyng, & there shewe  
theyre gryoff ; & the matter to be orderd by thys Courte.

There is no further entry on this subject on Tuesday, Nov. 14  
(lf. 65), or on any leaf near the Minutes of that day, unless the John  
Lytster of 1542 is the Jn. Lecture of 1538. The next Surgeons' entry  
is on leaf 66, back, (die) 'Jouis, xxj die Novembris' (A.D. 1538).

Surgeons      Item, at thys courte camme doctor Yaxley & the Warleyns  
Smyth      of the Surgeons with complaynt vpon      Smyth,  
mere surgeon. And it ys agreed that they shal put  
ngaynat the seyd Smyth yn wrytyng : And than the seyd  
Smyth to ansverr to the same yn wrytyng.

[No further entry on this.]

### 1539. Malyard, a Norman Physician, allowd to practise for a year.

(Rep. 10, lf. 10) Jouis, xxix die Novembris, anno 29 H. 8 (1539).

Malyard      Item, Roger Barker, & Robert Nycolles, brewer, the  
swordeberer & Brygg-seriant, shewyd how they were  
holpen of theyre diseases by one John Malyard,  
straunger, phisician, a Norman borne : To whome, by  
thys courte, licens ys gyven for a yere, to occupye his  
facultye, so that they<sup>1</sup> shal comme to euery person  
that woll.

### 1542. Wonderful Cures done by John Lytster.

(Rep. 10, lf. 237) Adhuc Jouis 12/3/ Anno 33<sup>e</sup> H 8 (March 12,  
1542).

Lytster      Item, Att thys Court cam Thomas Trappys & Wylliam  
Twenty-two      Calton, goldsmythes / John Wendon & Wylliam  
Mathewe, grocers, Rouland Goodman & Wylliam  
Berde, Fysshmongers, Wylliam Machyn,<sup>2</sup> vpholder,  
Robert Huntley, Skynner, John Kyng & Rauf Mar-  
shall, Taloughchaunders / George Hynde, plomer,  
City traders,      Wylliam Lambe, gentleman, Rafe Hamersley, Cloth-  
and a gentleman,      worker, Robert Herdye, John Clerke, Wylliam Smyth,  
John Chundeler & John Trett, drapers, Wylliam

<sup>1</sup> ? he, or he and his assistants.

<sup>2</sup> ? A relative of Henry Machyn of the *Diary* 1550-63 (Camden Soc. 1848),  
who was an undertaker and furnisher of funerals, and belonged to the Merchant-  
Tailors.

160 App. III 3. *Surgeon Ferres. 1547 Plague.*

declare that Jn. Lytster has done notable cures to them;

and they ask that he be allowed to practice, tho' he isn't licensed by the Bp. of London.

The Court back him.

Preyst, pulter, Thomas Hawes, founder, Edward Burslasye, mercer, Walter Porter, & Thomas Neveson, haberdassiers, And declaryd vnto the same Court, that one John Lytster, that practyseth physyke within thys Cytye, hath, by the helpe of God, done dyuerse seuerall notable Cures vnto theym / deayrynge the Ayde of the seyð Court for hys contynuaunce for the exerceyse therof / forasmuche as he ys interrupted therein by the physycions of thys Cytye / bycause he ys not Admytted so to do by the Bysshops of London, accordyng to the lawe / And Agreyd that there shalbe asmoche done thereyn As thys Court may do for hys furtheraunce.

1544. Hen. VIII's Application for a City Post for his Surgeon, Richard Ferres.

(Rep. 11, ff. 75 ink, 73 pencil) *Martis xxviij<sup>m</sup> die Maij, Anno xxxvj<sup>o</sup> Henrici viij. (1544).*

Waren  
[Mayor]

(ff. 78, or 74)  
Henry VIII asks that his Surgeon Rd. Ferres be made a Common Appraiser of the City.

Answer: there is no such post.

[*Present*] Mayor, Gresham, Dormer, Cotes, Laxton, Amcottes, Hoberthorn, Wyllford, Sadler, Lewen, Judd, HyH, Jervys, Ac Tolos & Dobbys, *vicecomites*. Item, A lettre dyrected to sir Wylliam Bowyer, late lorde Mayer [part of 1543-4], & Master Recorder, from the Kynges grace, in the Favour of Rychard Ferres,<sup>1</sup> one of his graces Surgeons, for to be one of the Comen preysers in this Cytye, was red / And Agreyd that An Aunswer shalbe made vnto hym, that there ys no suche Offyce, & that Sute Afore tyme hath bene made for the same to the Comen CounsayH by other persones to haue suche Offyce / but they in no wyse wolde assent to the same /

15 Nov. 1547. Crosses to be set on Plague-stricken Houses.<sup>2</sup> Gutters to be flusht.

Rep. 11, ff. 387, ink; 383, pencil (by which Alchin's Index goes) *Martis, xv<sup>to</sup> die Nouembri, anno primo Edwardi vj<sup>o</sup> (A.D. 1547).*

Gresham  
(Mayor)

[*Present*] Mayor, Recorder / Waren / Roche / Laxton / Bowes / Hoberthorn / Amcottes / Tolos / Wyllford / Judde / Dobbys / HyH / Barne / Lok / Hynde / Goodeve / Lyon / Garrard / ac Whyte & Chertsey, *vicecomites* /

<sup>1</sup> See him in the cut of Holbein's picture.

<sup>2</sup> See the Section of the printed *Remembrancia* Calendar on this.

App. III. 3. *Plague of 1547. Sir John Aylf.* 161

Crosses to be  
sett vpon  
mens dores  
for the de-  
claracion  
of the plague

Item, for asmoche as my Lorde Mayer reported that my Lorde Chauncelar declared vnto hym that my Lorde protectours graces pleasure ys, & other of the Lordes of the Counseyll, that certein open tokens and Sygnes shulde be made & sett furth in all suche places of the Cytie as haue of late bein vusyted with the plague / Yt is therfore agreyd that preceptes shall fourthwith be made furth to euerye of my maisters thaldermen, that thei shall cause euerye howscholder of their seuerall wardes / which, syth the fest of All sayntes last past, hath bein vusyted with the plague, or that, ouerthyssyde the Fest of the puryfycacion) of our Ladie nowe next comyng, shall happen to be vusyted with the seid dysceas, shall cause to be fyxed vpon the vttermost post of their Strete dore A certein Crosse of saynt Anthonye devyzed for that purpose, there to remaine xl dayes after the setting vp therof; & also to cause all the weller & pumper within their seid wardes to be drawn iij tymes euerye weke, that ys to saye, Mondaye, Wednesdaye, & fryday / And to cast down into the canelles att euerye suche drawyng, xij bukkettes full of water att the least, to cense the stretes wythall /<sup>1</sup>

In every Ward,  
Wells and Pumps  
to be drawn thrise  
weekly, and 12  
bucket-ful of Water  
poured down the  
Street-Gutters.

1548. (Rep. 11, ff. 458 ink, 466 pencil) Martia, xxvii<sup>o</sup> Augusti,  
Anno ij<sup>o</sup> E. 6 / (A.D. 1548).

J. Gresham  
Mayor.

Adjournement  
of y<sup>e</sup> courtes.

Item, this day, by reason of the vyolence of the plague att this tyme, & for dyuerse other reasonable consyderacions movyng the court, yt ys ordered & agreyd by the same, that this their sayd court shall cease & be adiourned vntyth thys day fourtynight /.

1550. Sir John Aylf leaves the Barber-Surgeons'  
Company.

(Rep. 12, No. 7, leaf 251 ink, 249 pencil) Jovis, xviij<sup>o</sup> Julij, Anno predicto  
[4 Ed. VI, 1550].

Hill, Maiora. [Present] Mayor, Laxton / Hoberthourne / Judde / Dobbis, Barne / Whyte / Locke / Hynde / Lamberd, Woodroff / Kyrton / Ofley / Wythers, ac Turke vice-comes /

Barbour  
Surgeons

At this Courte, the Wardeins & Assistauntes of the felowship of the Barboursurgeons, gave their assentes, accordyng to the order of the seid Courte, for the Removyng of Sir John Aylf, knyght & Alderman, from their seid Felowshyp /

<sup>1</sup> See the extract as to Street-Cleaning, Nov. 1535, in the Street Series below, p. 170.



162 App. III. 3. *Barbers' Freeman. Dutch Surgeon.*

1550. A young Tailor-barber, Jn. Gardener, to decide whether he'll be a real Barber or not. He says No.

(Rep. 12, No. 2, leaf 278 ink, 276 pencil, back,) Jovis, 23 Octobris, Anno 4<sup>to</sup> Edwardi vi<sup>th</sup> [A.D. 1550].

Hill, Mayor. Item, the yonge man vpon whom the barbours did here  
Barbours complayne, for that he, being free of the merchaunt-  
tailors, occupyeth barbarye / hath day vntill twysdaye  
next, to make a precyse Answer, whither he wilbe  
translatyd vnto theym, or els leue barbary or not /

(Rep. 12, No. 2, leaf 281 ink, 279 pencil) Martis, 4<sup>to</sup> Nouembris,  
Anno 4<sup>to</sup> Edwardi 6 [A.D. 1550].

Judde, Item, John Gardener, merchaunttayller / who hereto-  
Mayor. fore hath occupied their barbours occupacion, wherof  
the wardeins of the barbours dyd here latelye com-  
Gardener playne, hath this day here declared that he is contentyd  
clerely to leue the saide occupacion, & no more to  
medle with barbary /

1550. A Barber can't be admitted Freeman by redemp-  
tion, save for £20.

(Rep. 12, No. 1, ff. 177, bk.) Martis, xxvj Novembris, Anno iij<sup>o</sup> predicti Regis  
(Edw. VI, 1550).

[Sir Rowland] The lettres of certain of the Kynges most honourable  
Hill, Mayor. counsell in the favour of a barbour to be admyttyd  
A Barbour into the liberties of this Citie by redemption were  
red, & redelyueryd to my Lorde Mayer; the contentes  
therof concernyng his admyssion otherwise then for  
xx li / clerely denied /<sup>1</sup>

1562. *A Dutch Surgeon allowed to set up his Bills  
on Posts.*

(Rep. 15, ff. 156) Jovis, 3<sup>o</sup> Decembris, anno v<sup>to</sup> Domine Elizabeth Regine, &c.  
(A.D. 1562).

Lodge, Mayor.

[Present] Lyon, Huett, Chester, Harper, John White, Malory,  
Halse, Draper, Rowe, Avenon, Baskerfeld, Bankes, Gil-  
berd; ac Alyn et Chamberlyn, Vicecomites.

<sup>1</sup> Under May 6, 1606, is the following entry in Repertory 27, ff. 195 (191,  
pencil):—

Kingman This daye, at the request of Elizabeth Stowe, widow, and  
according to a former graunt of this Court, It is ordered that  
Camerarius. Phillip Kingman shalbe made free of this Cittie by Redempcion  
in the Companie of barborsurgeons,<sup>2</sup> paying to Master Cham-  
berlen, to the Citties use, vj<sup>l</sup> viij<sup>s</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> 'Fawterers' was first written, then crost out, and 'barborsurgeons' written over the  
line by another hand.

### App. III. 3. *Barber-Surgeons' Cess. 1563 Plague. 163*

At this Courte, Peter van Duran, a straunger borne, who professeth the y<sup>e</sup> knowlege & science of surgery, was licensed by the same Courte to sett vp bylles vpon Van Duran postes,<sup>1</sup> in suche partes of this Cytye as to him shall seeme good, to geve the people knowlege of his said science. And he agreid & graunted to the said Courte, to deale very honestly with all theym *that* he shall take vpon hym to cure, for their charges concerninge y<sup>e</sup> same.

1563. The Barber-Surgeons having paid 2 cesses for 1, are let off another.

(Rep. 15, ff. 211, bk.) *Adhuc Jovis .11. [Marcij] anno v<sup>to</sup> Domine Elizabethæ Regine & c (1563).*

Item, forasmuche as, vpon due examinacion made, it did appeare vnto the Courte here this day, that y<sup>e</sup> felowship of the barbours & surgeons of this Cyty did, by a certeyne oversight & errour, disburse & prest as moche redy money at y<sup>e</sup> lone made by the Cytezens of this Cyty in Octobre last past towards the provision of wheate & Rye, as they ought & have byn accustomed to be charged withall at ij severall lones, was this day graunted & agreid by the Courte here, that at this present last lone for the like provision, shalbe spared & clarely discharged.

1563. London Plague Regulations.<sup>2</sup> Blue Crosses to be set on infected Houses; Gutters to be flusht; Bedding burnt.

(Repertory 15, ff. 259, bk.) *Adhuc sabbati, 3<sup>o</sup> die Julij, anno v<sup>to</sup> domine Elizabethæ Regine, &c. [A.D. 1563].*

#### Lodge *Maiors*

Camerarius Item, it was ordered that there shalbe CC blew hedles Crosses made with all convenient spede by the chamberlyn, to the Intente that one of them may be rett vp vpon the vitermoste parte of the dore post at every

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Sidney Young believes that the Barber-Surgeons' Minute-Book has an Order about pulling down these Bills of Van Duran's.

<sup>2</sup> Mr. Baddeley of the Guildhall Library Committee, Churchwarden of St. Giles's without Cripplegate, says that there are over 4000 entries of deaths in his Church-Register for this year. Almost all are of poor folk, and entered as dying of the plague or fever. The few richer ones wouldn't acknowledge to the plague, and are entered as dying of dropey, &c. See Mr. Baddeley's forthcoming book on his Church. This Plague gave rise to Wm. Bullein's Dialogue of the Feuer Pestilence, 1564, now editing for the E. E. Text Soc. by Mr. A. H. Bullen and his cousin Mr. Mark Bullen, from the edition of 1578.

164 App. III. 3. *London Plague-Regulations of 1563.*

mansion<sup>1</sup> howse of this Cyty that hathe of late, or shalbe visited this Sommer season with the plague;<sup>2</sup> And that every of my maisters the aldermen, having a competente number of the same Crosses, shall cause them to be sett vp as aforesaid by the constables or bedylles of their said wardes, as occasion shall require.

(Rep. 15, lf. 260, bk.) Adhuc martis, 6<sup>o</sup> Julij, anno v<sup>to</sup> Domine Elizabethhe Regine, &c. [A.D. 1563].

**Camerariz.** Item, it was ordered that the Chamberlyn shall cause  
**blew crosses.** CC hedles blew crosses more to be made with sped, at the Cytyes charges, to be vsed according to the order here taken the last Courte day for the same.

(Rep. 15, lf. 263, bk.) Adhuc Jovia, 8<sup>o</sup> Julij, anno v<sup>to</sup> Domine Elizabethhe Regine, &c. [A.D. 1563].

**Lodge, Maiora.**

[Blow Crosses  
for Fynesbury.]

Item, Laurence Nasshe, bayly of fynnesbury, had this day, blew crosses delivered vnto him by the Courte here, to be sett vpp there at fynnesbury, vpon the vttermost Postes of the Dores of suche howses there as are visited with the plague; & he was also commaunded to cause the filthie donghill lyinge in the high way nere vnto fynnesburys Courte, to be removed & caried away; & not to suffer any suche donge or fylthe, from hensfurthe, there to be leyde.

(Rep. 15, lf. 281) adhuc .26. Augusti. anno. 5<sup>to</sup> Elizabethhe Regine. &c. [A.D. 1563].

**Lodge, Maiors**

**Adiournacio  
curie  
Maioris  
et Alder-  
mannorum  
ad tempus  
&c. [15  
Sept. 1563].**

Item, yt was this day orderyd & agreyd by the courte here, that the same courte,—in consideration of the greate plague that yt hath pleasyd almyghty god sharply to vysyt & towche this citie with-af, at this presente, and of the absence of a greate number of my maysteres thaldermen from the sayd cytye, for theschuyng of the greate Daunger & perill of the sayd plague yet fyeraly reygnyng /—shall stay & cense vntyH the xv.th. daye of September next comm-

<sup>1</sup> dwelling.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 56 of Bullein's *Dialogue on the Fierre Pestilence* (1564), ed. 1578, E. E. T. Soc. 1888:—

'Good wife, the dately ianglyng and rynging of the belles, the commyng in of the minister to euery house in ministryng the communion, in readyng the Homelle of Death, the diggyng vp of granes, the spar-  
ring in of windowes, & the blasynge forth of the blewse crosse, doe make my harte tremble & quake. Alas, what shall I doe to saue my life?' And compare what follows this in Bullein, with the Aldermen's going into the country to avoide the Plague of 1563: extract of 26 Aug. on this present page.

App. III. 3. *London Plague-Regulations of 1563.* 165

yngs, except yt be for somme greata & vrgent cause,  
which sha'll necessarily requyre expedyction.<sup>1</sup>

(Rep. 15, lf. 281, bk.) Mercurij 29. Septembria. anno. 5<sup>to</sup> *Elizabethhe Regina. &c.* [A.D. 1563].

Lodge, Mayor.

[Present] Lyon, Huet, Harper, Avenon, Baskerville, Alyn,  
Chamberlein; as Bankes et Heyward, Vicecomites  
[= Sheriffs]

Camerarius. Yt was this daye orderyd by the court here, that  
The order- ij honest poore men shalbe appoynted by my Lord  
inge of the mayer, to burne & bury suche strawe, clothes, & bedd-  
beddyng & ynge as they shal fynde in the fieldes nere adioynynge  
clothes of the to the cyte or with-in the same cytie, wheruppon any  
infectyd with person vysited with the plague hath lyen or dyed.  
the plague./ And that they shalbe recompensyd by the Chamber-  
lein for their paynes therin.

(Repertory 15, lf. 287, 2 Dec., A.D. 1563.)

a proclama- Item, yt was agreyd that the proclamacion devysed  
cion for the stayinge of thowneres of thinfectyd mausyon  
stay & howses within this cyty, from the lettynge of the  
lettyngge same for a tyme, & here redde this daye, shal to-  
of houses morrow be openly proclaymyd thurrough the citye.

1564. (Rep. 15, lf. 301) adhuc Jovis. 20. Januarij, anno. 6.  
*domine Elizabethhe Regine.*

White, Mayor.

Item, yt was orderyd that preceptes shal furthwith be  
made to euery one of my Masters thaldermen, to call  
all thinhabitautes of theyr severall Wardes withoute  
delaye before them, & to gyve streyght charge and  
commaundement, with all dylygence to ayre, clense &

<sup>1</sup> On September 28, of this Plague year, 1563, there was a City Gift of £40 to the Poor of London (Repertory 15, leaf 281, back):

Adhuc Martis 28. Septembria. a<sup>o</sup> 5. *Elizabethhe Regine, &c.* [A.D. 1563].

Item, forasmuche as thinhabitautes of this cite beinge of any  
Camerarius wealth, are not well hable to releve & succour the poverty of the  
the poore same city in many places therof / yt is therefore orderid & agreyd  
by the court here this day, that the Chamberlein, at the cities  
London / charges, shal disburse .lx li towardes the reliefe of the sayd  
poore, at the order & appoyntment of my lorde mayre./

In Repert. 14, lf. 465 (27 March, 3 Eliz. 1560), the Treasurer of Barts is ordered to pay £100 to St. Thomas's, because it had then 140 poor there, 40 over its after-prescribed number. And on leaf 512, back (24 July, 3 Eliz. 1560), the title-deeds—'Evidences, wrytynges and munementes'—of all the City Hospitals, 'and the house of the pore in Smythfeld,' were ordered to be deposited in the Guildhall. These entries are printed (we find) in the *Supplement to the Memoranda* (1867), p. 43-4.

preceptes and  
proclamacion  
for ayryng  
& purginge  
of howsez  
& other  
thinges./

purge all theyre howsez, beddyng & apparrell, for the daunger of thinfection of the sycknes of the plague, forseinge neuertheles, & takyng care, that they or eny of them doe neyther hange or beate oute, or cause to be beaten out or hanged, eny maner of beddyng or apparrell that hath beynd or come nere to the daunger of infection of the sayd sycknes / & that a proclamacion of lyke substaunce & effect shall furthwith be drawn, & openly proclamyd to morowe, for the generall admonyshement & warnyng of all persons within y<sup>e</sup> said cyty to doe y<sup>e</sup> lyke /

See, in Journal 18, leaf 184, the Precept of the Lord Mayor & Aldermen dated February 12, 1564 (6 Elizabeth), forbidding the setting forth or playing of 'eny maner of enterlude or stage playe, at eny tyme hereafter, without the specynall lycence of the said Lord mayor Fyrst hadd & obteyned for the same, vppon payne of imprisonment of their bodies, at the discretion of the said Lord Mayor & Aldermen.' The plays were not to be acted in any 'mansione house, yarde, gardyn, orchard, or other whatsouer place' in London or its liberties; and this, because 'the greate and frequent confluences, congugacions and assembles of greate nombers and multytud of people pressed together in smale Rowmes [was] very daungerous' for spreading the plague. See also the Precept there following, dated Feb. 14, 1564, for the inspection and watching of infected houses, and the supply of food to their inmates.

### 1611, Sept. 10. Compensation to the Surgeon of the Pest-house.

(Rep. 22, E. 170  
14.)  
Kinge,  
Chirurgeon  
at the  
Pesthowse.  
Camerarius.

Wm. King says  
he has so dili-  
gently attended  
Plague patients  
at the Pesthouse,  
that his own  
friends won't use  
or employ him:  
he asks for a  
Pension.

Item, this day, William Kinge, the Chirurgeon belonging to the Pesthowse, presented a petition to this Court, shewing his great Care & diligence in Curinge of such persons as haue bene sent thither; and that, by reason of his attendance & employment there, his fryndes & former acquaintance do vtterly refuse to vse him in his profession; and therfore desireth some reasonable allowance & yearly pencion from this Citty, for his better maintenance, and the more to encourage him to continue his former care and indeavowr in helpinge such persons as come to the Pesthowse: It is therupon ordered by this Court, for the Consideracions aforesaid, that the said William Kinge shall haue

### App. III. 3. *Plague of 1625. Doctors & Surgeons.* 167

yerely paid him, out of the Chamber of London, the some of iij<sup>l</sup> for a stipend, so long as he shall Continue his place of a Chirurgeon at the Pesthouse with that Care & diligence as heretofore he hath used. The same to be paid him quarterly; the first payment to begynne at Michelmas next. And this shalbe Master Chamberlens warrant for the payment therof.

The City give him £3 a year, as long as he works at the Pesthouse,

to be paid quarterly.

#### 1625, June 28. Physicians appointed by the City to attend Plague-stricken Folk.<sup>1</sup>

(Repertory 39, ff. 255) Martis, Vicesimo Octavo die Junij, 1625, Anno Regni Regis Caroli, Anglie &c, prime /

Item, it is thought fitt, and so ordered, by this Court, (Of 254, &c.)

that Sir John Leman, Sir Edward Barkham, Sir Martyn Lumleye, master Alderman Johnson, master Alderman Hamsleye, master Alderman Cambell, master Alderman Ducie, and master Alderman Moulson, or any foure or more of them, shall meete this afternoone att the Guildhall, and conferr and treat with Sir William Paddie, knight, and others, Doctors of Physicke, for and about one or two skillfull & sufficient Phisitions to bee interteyned and ymployed by this Cittie for the cure of those visited with the Plague; And to consider what recompence is fitt to be made vnto them for their advise and paines in that behalfe; And to certifie this Courte in writing vnder their hands of their doeinges and opinions therein; And John Olliffe to warne and attend the said Comittees.

Committee of 8 appointed

to confer with Doctors about the City employing 1 or 2 Physicians to cure folk ill of the Plague;

to fix the Physicians's pay.

and report to the Court.

#### 1625, July 4. A Spanish Doctor, and English Surgeons, for the Plague.

(Rep. 39, ff. 279 &c.) Item, this daie, the right honourable the Lord Maior informed this Court, that hee hath agreed Spanish Doctor: with the Spanish Doctor Pone [? MS.] one hundred

<sup>1</sup> James I died on March 27, 1625. On May 11, Charles I was married by proxy to the Princess Henrietta Maria of France in Notre Dame. An English fleet brought her to Dover, where Charles I met her, took her to Canterbury, thence to Gravesend, and by a grand procession up the Thames to London, which, says Oldmixon (*Hist. Engl.*, Jas. I and II 1730, p. 75, col. 1), "was in Mourning and Lamentation; the most dreadful Pestilence that ever had been known in Europe then raging there, above 40,000 dying this year of the Plague . . . fatal predictions were not wanting on the Queen's Entry in such a calamitous Conjuncture, as if she had brought in her Retinue all the Scourges that were to make the Kingdom desolate (Larrey, p. 16)."

168 App. III. 4. *Punishment of Bawds and Scolds.*

100 markes  
per Annum.  
Heath Surgion  
50<sup>n</sup> per Annum  
to cure y<sup>e</sup> poore  
of the Plague:  
Smith: surgin  
for y<sup>e</sup> Pest-  
house:

markes per Annum, and master Heath, Surgion, to bee with him in some convenient [*blank*] within the Cittie, for Fiftie pounds per Annum, to doe theire best endeavours for the curinge all the poore infected with the plague, for nothing; and of the better sort infected, for some reasonable recompence; And also hath agreed with one master Smith, a Churgion, for xxx<sup>n</sup> per Annum to abide att y<sup>e</sup> Pesthouse for the cure of those sent thether visited. Wherevpon this Court, haueinge formerly referred this busines to his Lordshippe, doth now ratifie and Confirme that his Lordshippes doeinges./

4. *Street-Scenes: Punishment of Culprits, Public Rejoicings, Scavenging, Archery Meeting.*

A.D. 1523. A Proclamacion for Bawdes & Scoldes.<sup>1</sup>

(Letter Book K,  
leaf 238)

As Roger Gyl  
and Jn. Inneman  
and his Wife

have practis  
lechery and  
bawdry,

Gyl being bawd  
to his Wife,

and Inneman and  
his wife being  
bawdis or panders  
for Priests and  
other folk,

the 3 shall be  
taken to their  
prison, thence  
to Newgate,  
and thence (with  
pipes, pots and

Munby, Maior.<sup>2</sup>

**F**orasmoeche as Roger Gyl, Sadler, Iohn Inneman & [*blank*] his wif, that here stonde, been) lauffully Convict before my lord the Maire of this Citie, & his Brethern) thaldermen) of the same, by solemne processe after the Custome of this Citie, of that / that they be persons not dredying god, ne shame of thys worlde, But contynually vsyng the Abhomynable Custome, mayntenaunce & Conceillyng of the foule and detestable synne of lechery & bawdry / That is to seye, the said Roger Gyl, for beyng Bawde to his wif / And the said Iohn Inneman and his wif, for that / that they be Comon) Bawdes for prestes<sup>3</sup> & Mennys wiffes, wedded Men) and Syngle women) / Yt is therfor adiuged by my saide Lorde Maier and his brethern), that the said iij persones soo atteynt, accordyng to the Lawes & Customes of this Citie in that behalff vsed, & owt of tyme of mynde contynued, shalbe conveied to the prison<sup>4</sup> that they cam) froo / And from) thens to Newgate / And from Newgate they to be conveied with Mynstraley, Basyns and pannes Rongen) afore theym), thorough Chepe,

<sup>1</sup> This is given for its 'Mynstraley, Basyns and Pannes rongen afore' the Culprits, as a sample of the London street-sights that would come under Vicary's eyes. And the Vagabond extracts below are added for the like reason.

<sup>2</sup> He was elected in Nov. 1522.

<sup>3</sup> Of the long list of men taken in adultery from 2 Henry IV, onwards, in Letter Book I, leaf 288, almost all are Chaplains.

<sup>4</sup> ? MS. persons.

App. III. 4. *Festivities on Francis I's Capture.* 169

and soo to the pillory in Corneshill / And then the said  
 iij persones to be sett in the said Pillory by A certeyn  
 space / And then) and ther the said Causes to be pro-  
 claimed / And so from thense to be conveyed too Algate,  
 and then) to be voided owt of this Citie / And god  
 saue the kyng /<sup>1</sup>

pans rung before  
 them,) to the  
 Pillory in Corn-  
 hill (to be pulled),  
 then to Algate,  
 and there turned  
 out of the City.

1525, March 11. Bonfires, Music, and Festivities, for  
 the taking of the French King, Francis I, at the  
 Siege of Pavia, on Feb. 24, 1525.<sup>2</sup>

By the Maire<sup>3</sup> (Journal 12, lf. 329).

Rayly  
 Mayor.  
 Intratur.

We bid you have  
 Fires made at  
 7 p. m. in your  
 Ward,

and let the young  
 Children be well  
 drest, and sit  
 round the Fires,  
 with Muske,  
 while the House-  
 holders drink  
 joyously together.

We charge and commaunde you,<sup>4</sup> on the behalf of  
 our soueraigne lorde the kyng, that anon, vpon  
 the sight herof, ye do prepare, and cause to be made,  
 within your said warde this present Saturday, at vij of  
 the Clok in the Evennyng, certayn Fires, after the  
 maner of Midsomer fyers,<sup>5</sup> or better, by your discrecion;  
 and that the yong Childerne of the same your warde,  
 be goodly garnysshed, and so to sitt vpon the stalles  
 aboute the said Fiers, after the maner of a Sumer game,  
 with mynstraley accordingly / and the householders, with  
 their seruauentes attendyng vpon theym, be neybourly  
 drynkynge togethers at the said Fiers In Ioyous maner;

<sup>1</sup> See another entry of like kind against Richard Wyer of Bread-Street  
 Ward on May 25, 1529 (21 Hen. VIII), in Journal 13, lf. 141, bk. He  
 was 'a Comyn brynger & Conveyer of certeyn sengle Women to merchaunt-  
 strangers places within the said Citie . . . to vse & occupie the fowle & detest-  
 able synne of lechery & Bawdry, to the high displeasure of almyghty god, &  
 to the perelous example of other good & well disposed persons, & Contrary to  
 the Auncyent liberties & Custumes of the said Citie.'

Newses of the  
 siege of Pavia,  
 & the taking of  
 the French king  
 prisoner.

<sup>2</sup> On thursdale the ninth of March [1524-5], at scanen of the  
 clocke in the morning, there came a gentleman in post from the  
 ladie Margaret, gouernesse of Flanders, which brought letters,  
 contening how that the foure and twentieth of Februarie, the  
 siege of Pavia (where the French king had lien long) was  
 raised by force of battell, and the French king himselfe taken  
 prisoner . . . .

(Bonfires and  
 Triumph in  
 London.)

(Henry VIII at  
 St. Paul's.)

Bounfires and great triumph was made in London for the  
 taking of the French king, on saturdale the eleuenth of March;  
 and on the morow after, being sundale, the twelfe of March,  
 the king came to Paules, and there heard a solemn masse; and  
 after the same was ended, the queere sang *To Deus*, and the  
 minstrels plaid on euerie side. [An account of the Siege of  
 Pavia follows, from Guicciardini's History.]—1587. Hollinshed's  
*Chron.* iii. 884, col. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Sir Wm. Bailey, Nov. 1524-5.

<sup>4</sup> The Alderman of each Ward.

<sup>5</sup> See Stow's *Survey of London*, p. 39, col. 1, ed. Thoma, 1842.



# 170 App. III. 4. *Festivities on Francis I's Capture.*

Have the Watch  
well drest and  
armed,

with Lights be-  
fore them.

You be in scarlet  
and on horsback  
at the Guildhall  
at 7 p. m.

and that you cause all the Constables within your said warde to be in harneys and other goodly apparell, and to be furnyssh'd with his Watche accordingly, with Cressett light borne before them, and to kepe the watche oonly in their said warde / And that you your self, beyng apparelled in Scarlett,<sup>1</sup> and on horsback, be redy at the Guihald at the said houre of vij at the furthest, then and there to attende vpon vs / Nott sayling herof, as you will aunswer at your perell / Youen at the said Guihald this present Saturday the xj<sup>th</sup> day of Marche, &c.

Halle says in his *Chronicle*, p. 633, ed. 1809:

'Saterdaie the xi daie of Marche, in the citee of London, for these tydynges [the defeat of the French, and the taking of <sup>A triumph for</sup> their king, Francis I, by the Emperor's and the Duke <sup>the taking of the</sup> French kyng. of Bourbon's forces, at the Siege of Pavia], wer made greate fiers and triumph; and the Maior and Aldermen road about the citee with Trumpettes, and much wyne was laied in diuerse places of the citee, that every man might drynke; and on Tower hill the Ambassadors of Rome, of Flaunders, and Venice, had a greate banket made in a goodly tent, whiche pleased them well; and as thei returned home-wardes, all the stretes were full of harnessed men and Cressettes, attendyng on the Constables, whiche they praised moche.'

Lord Berners, writing from Calais on Wednesday, March 8, 1525, says he has just heard the news of the capture of Francis I, and prays to God that it may be true. (*Brewer's Calendar*, vol. IV. Pt. 1, p. 514, No. 1167.) The Emperor Charles thank't God, but forbade any public rejoicing. (*Cal.* iv. Introduction, p. xl.) Henry VIII was told of it on March 9, and was in high spirits. (*Cal.* iv. Introd. p. lxx.)

## Nov. 1535. House and Street-Cleaning in London.<sup>2</sup>

(Rep. 9, ff. 134 bk.)

**Raker** Item, that the Raker yn every Warde, that ys to say, wekely, every Munday, Wedyns day, & Saturday, shall

<sup>1</sup> The Alderman's state colour.

<sup>2</sup> We have not lookt for entries about cleansing the Thames, but having come on the two following, we give them in a note. The pulling-up of the weirs was doubtless to get a good scour for the river as well as to clear it for navigation.

Oct. 9, 1606. At the Court of Common Council held this day, (Repertory 27, leaf 284 (281, pencil),  
Item, it is ordered that the Waterbayllif shall presently pull vp all the weirs,

#### App. III. 4. *Street-Cleaning at Furnivall's Inn.* 171

Intratur have a horne, & blowe at euery mannes doore, that they may have warnyng to lay owt theyre offaß of theyre howses ynto the opon streetes euery day afore v of the klokke afore nyghte, vpon payn & peryß that shall fall therevpon) / & that Master Chamberlayn shall provyde hornes for the sayd seuerall Rakers at the costes of thys Cytye.

Camerarius  
Hornes  
Intratur

#### 1536. Complaint of the non-Scavenging of Furnivall's Inn and Ely Place.

(Rep. 9, ff. 183, bk.) Jouis, xii<sup>jo</sup> die Julij, anno 28 H. viij (A.D. 1536).

Ely Item, forbycawse compleynt was made by one of y<sup>e</sup> scavagers of y<sup>e</sup> Warde of Faryngdon, for kepyng of Furnyvalles the stretes there vncleane, & y<sup>e</sup> gentlemen of Furnyvalles Inne & tenauntes of y<sup>e</sup> Bysshope of Ely wold not amende, nor pay theyre Duetye for the clensyng thereof afore the Bysshoppe of Elyes rentes & afore Furnyvalles ynne; & by thys courte it ys ordered that Master the Chamberlayn & Towneclerk shall go to my lorde of Ely & the company of Furnyvalles Inne, & to knowe theyre myndes yn that byhalf; & therof to make reporte therof to thys courte.

Furnyvalles Inne.

The Gentlemen of the Inn and the By. 's tenants won't clean their bits of Holborn, or pay for having them done.

#### 1536. Streets to be kept clean, and Wells drawn.

(Letter-Book P, ff. 25)

Aleyn, Maior, *secundo tempore.*

xxj<sup>o</sup> die Augustij, Anno regni Regis Henrici viij<sup>th</sup>, xxviij<sup>th</sup>.

streetes to Item, that my masters the Aldermen shall Resorte be kepte ynto their wardes, to see and cause the stretes and clene lanes within their sayde wardes be clensed of almaner of Fylthe; And that the[y] cause the welles to be Drawen accordyngly /.

stoppes, and hatches in the river of Thamys betwene Colne Diche and London bridge, And that he take care—as he will answer it in this Court, if anye default in him shalbe found,—That none of them be hereafter suffered to continue againe: & Master Chamberlen to paye the charge therof.'

The Colne runs into the Thames at Staines in Middlesex. On Nov. 14, 1609, and 23 April, 1610 (in consequence of a charge from Jas. I's 'owne mouth'), the Common Council appointed Committees to guard against the Plague, to see to new buildings and their inmates, &c. 'And alsoe for taking care of apprehending of all sortes of Rogues, vagabondes, and idle persons, to be punished and delt with according to the lawes and Statutes of this Realme, Or otherwise for sending such of them as shalbe found within the Cytye, to Bridewell, there to be sett on worke, for clensyng the ryver of Thames /' On May 8, 1611, order was made for the continuance of the Committees and their work: Rep. 30, leaf 113, back.

# 1539. Muster and March of London Citizens before Henry VIII at Westminster.

On May 8, 1539, was a grand Muster of the Citizens of London before Henry VIII at Westminster. Armed and in gala array, they marched from Aldgate in 3 battalions, and the function is described enthusiastically by some predecessor of Ben Jonson in the office of City Chronologer or Chronicler, afterwards held by Thomas Middleton and Francis Quarles (*Remembrancia*, 305, 306). His description takes up 7 pages of the Letter Book P, leaves 202-5.<sup>1</sup> Had not our Appendix been so full of other details, we should certainly have printed (or reprinted) this picture of martial City life; but as matters stand, we must content ourselves with an extract showing where the 'Surgeons' (the small 'Fellowship of Surgeons') were, for the Barber-Surgeons do not appear. We at first supposed that the Chronicler had naturally sunk the less dignified 'Barbers' on this magnificent occasion, but we now think that the Barber-Surgeons, as a poor Company, could not, or would not, go to the cost of the gay white sarcenet coats which the other Citizen-soldiers bought for this grand march-past.

The cause of this manifestation of loyal feeling was, that the King, having been informed by trusty friends 'that the canker & venomous serpent, Pawle, Bysshop of Rome [Pope Paul III], by that Archetraytour Reignolde Poole, enemye to Godes worde & his owne natrall countrey, had moved, excyted & styrryd dyuerse greates Prynces & Potentates of Crystendome, not alonely to envade this Realme of England with mortall warre, but also by fyer & sword to extermyn & vterly to destroy the hole nacion & generacion of y<sup>e</sup> same.' Henry had accordingly gone to the coast, built blockhouses, got his navy ready, ordered musters of all able men, reports of armour, &c. all over the country and in London. These musters had been made in London, and all the ablest men pickt out. The King promised to see the Londoners march past him at Westminster. So they bought silk coats, silk helmet scarves, brooches, feathers, chains, gilded their armour and poleaxes, and at 6 a.m. on the eventful 8th of May, mustered in the fields in the East of London, which 'were all couered with men in bryght harnes with glystering wepona.' They formed 3 Battalions. Vicary was, we fear, not let into the Second,

<sup>1</sup> A copy of it on parchment, A.D. 1826, is in the Guildhall: see the Library MS. Catalog. All the opening and ending passages of this Account were printed by Grafton in *Hall's Chronicle*, p. 828-830, ed. 1809, without acknowledgment.

App. III. 4. *Citizens march past Henry VIII.* 173

with the 'upper ten,' the Surgeons. In the second Battalion or 'Battayle' marcht first the light Ordnance, and Gunners, with a Standard, under an Aklerman captain. Then the Archers; 3. the Pikes; 4. the Billmen, five and five in a rank, with their Captains in front; 5. the Constables and Whiffiers; 6. five Drums (dromslettes) and Fifes ('all apparelled in whyte Satten puffed out with crymsen sarcenet,) which made a warrelyke noyse'; 7. '.v. talle persones . . in whyte Sarcenet ruffyd & pounceyd very gorgeously,' with five Banners, which 'waving & Strayned with the wynde . . . made a goodly Showe;' 8. the Swordbearer in white damask on a good horse, freshly 'trapped,' his scabbard 'sett full of oryent perle'; 9. the Lord Mayor, Sir Wm. Forman, in gilt armour, and over it a coat of black velvet with a rich cross embroidered on it; a massive gold chain round his neck, and on his head a black velvet cap with a rich jewel in it; his horse had crimson velvet trappings embroidered with gold, and he was attended by four footmen in white satin hose puffed with white sarcenet; 10. his two Pages in crimson velvet and cloth of gold, on prancing coursers trapt with bells and buttons of goldsmith's work; 11. sixteen halberdiers in white satin hose and doublets puffed with crimson sarcenet, white leather coats alaash, white caps and feathers, and gilt halberds; 12. the Recorder in fair armour and a coat of black velvet, bearing 'a two-hande sworde on his sholder,' a chain round his neck, and four halberdiers in attendance; 13. five ranks of Constables in silk, Attornies' Clerks, and Guildhall Law-Officers, all in white silk with gold chains and brooches; 14. (no Barbers, tongs or razors allowd), unarmed:—

Than folowed all the surgeons of the Cytie, without harnes, in whyte cotes, with their bendes of whyte & Grene bawdryke-wyse, & their splatters over the bende (which ys their accustomed cognysaunce<sup>1</sup>) in very good ordre & apparell /.

15. the two Sheriffs, Wm. Wilkinson and Nicolas Gibeon, in coats of black velvet, followd by halberdiers, billmen, five Captains, &c. Then came the third Battalion with the great ordnance in its rear.

In this ordre the fyrst battle entred in at Algate before ix of the clock, the same day being thursday / And so passed thorough the Cytie in good ordre after A warlyke facion tyll thei camme to Westminster, where the Kinge & all the nobyltye stode & beheld the mustre, before whom, as well the great Gonnes as the hande gonnes

<sup>1</sup> This Badge was given them by Henry VIII. See Dethick's Arms for the Barber-Surgeons in South's *Craft of Surgery*, opposite the title-page, and the blasons on pages 352, 353; 358, 359. *Splatter* is a short spatula.

of euerye battayll, shott very terrybly<sup>1</sup> / and so aft thre battailles, in the ordre before rehersed, one after an<sup>d</sup> other, passed thorough the great Sanctuarie at Westminster, & so abowte the Parke at saint Jamys, into A great felde abowt the same place, where the Kinge, standing in his Gate-house at Westminster, myght bothe see them that camme forward, and also them that were Passed before /

Than from saint Jamys felde the hole Armye passed thorough Holbourne, & so into Chepe; & at Leden Halle seuered & departed / And the last orleynaunces camme into Chepe ageine abowte fyve of the klokke; so that from .ix. of the klokke in the forenone, tyll fyve at afternoone, this mustre was not ended /

To see howe full of lordes, ladies & Gentlewomen, the wyndowes in euerye strete were / And howe the stretes of the Cytie were replenished with people, many men wolde have thought that thei that mustered had rather bein<sup>d</sup> straungers than Cytezens, consydering that y<sup>e</sup> stretes euerye where were so full of people, which was to straungers a great marvell.

### 15 Nov. 1547. Vagabonds to be whipt, or pilloried.

(Rep. 11, ff. 388, ink; 364, pencil) *Martis, xv<sup>to</sup> die Nouembris, anno primo Edwardi vj<sup>to</sup> [A.D. 1547].*

Vagabundes Item, it is orderyd & Agreyd that John Launder, James Foster, William Haddok, & John Croydon, valyant & Sturdye beggers,<sup>2</sup> which were apprehended within the Cytie, shall to-morowe be whyped naked att A Cartes Taylle,<sup>3</sup> accordyng to the Lawe / And

to be whipt naked  
at the cart's tail.

<sup>1</sup> Hall prints 'cherefully,' p. 830, ed. 1809.

<sup>2</sup> On Nov. 9, 1518, the Common Council resolvd (*Letter-Book N*, leaf 100) that "John Abbot, peauterer, ys Admytted to be in the stede & place of Henry Barker, for thavoydyng of vagabundes & myghty beggers oute of this Citty; which Henry, for that that he dide not his diligence Aboute the same, & Also for diuerse Consideracions this Court movyng, ys Amoved from' the seid Rome / The seid Abbot to haue lyke wages & lyuery as the said Henry hade."

<sup>3</sup> The Letters Patent of Edward VI, dated June 26, 1553 (just before his death on July 6), which gave Bridewell and its endowment to the City Authorities, bade them take up, and commit to the House of Labour at Bridewell, all 'idle lasy ruffians, hauuters of stews, vagabonds and sturdy beggars, or other suspected persons whomsoever, and men and women whomsoever of ill name and fame:' Englishing in the *Memoranda, Royal Hosp.*, 1863, p. 69. And in the Resolution of Common Council, Feb. 29, 1556 (ultimo die Februarii, Annis Regnorum Philipp<sup>i</sup> & Marie, Regis & Regine, &c.), ordering that the money needed for the conversion and fittings of Bridewell should be raised only from 'the Chiefeste & beste companyes & fellowahippes of the seyde Cytie' (*Letter Book S*, leaf 68, back), and not from poor Citizens, it is recited that Bridewell was given them "to thintente that they shulde, with Conueniente speede, cause the greates number of the vacaboundes, sturdie & valiente Beggers, & Idle maisterles men that the seyde Cytie from tyme to tyme is [leaf 68, back]

App. III. 4. *Vagabonds to be whipt or pilloried.* 175

that William Jakson, Lazarman, who of late hath  
wrechedly & falsely spoken certein slaunderous wordes  
against sir Marten Bowes, knyght, maister Barne,  
Aldreman, & other men of worshype sytting in the  
said Courte, shalbe whypped thorough Chepesyde /  
And then all thei .v. to avoyde the Cytie for euer,  
vppon the paynes in suche case ordeyned & pro-  
vyded / And that Robert Shakysberie, being butt A  
boy, & dysceased with the palsey, or some other dyscase  
wherewith his bodie shakethe verie sore, shall lyke-  
wyse furthwith departe out of y<sup>e</sup> Cytie, vppon payne  
of whypping yf he make defeaute /

and to leave the  
City.

A palsied boy to  
leave the City.

Yonge, to sytt Item, it is ordered & adliued by the Courte here, that  
vpon the Thomas Yonge, A Sturdy Vagabunde, who was here  
pyllory lafully convycte this daye, aswell by his own con-  
for his fessyon, as by good & honest wytnesses, of that / that  
falsehode. he doth not onely [see 322, back] Lyve idly, wythout any  
maister or seruyce / but also that many tymes he  
practyseth & vseth meny false & Craftie meanes wherby  
he hath dysceaved meny of the kynges leage people,  
sometyme by forgyng of false tokyns & messages, And  
sometyme by counterfeityng hym self (stondyng in the  
hygh weys aboute this Cytie) to be A purveyour for  
the kynges maiestie, allegyng hym self to do yt by  
Commyssyon, shewyng forth to theim that he per-  
ceyveth to be vnlearned, A boxe closed, affyrmyng his  
Commyssyon to be therin / shall to-morowe, & ij  
merkett dayes more, in example of other offenders, be  
sett vpon the pyllorye in Chepesyde, with a paper  
vpon his hed declaryng his seid offences / And that  
he shall stonde there thre houres euerye of the said  
Dayes in the merkett tyme / And that, att the Last  
of those iij dayes, one of his eares shalbe nayled to  
the pyllorye / And that he, after this his penaunce  
done, shall avoyde the Cytie for euer /

He forged tokens,

and pretended to be  
a Purveyor for the  
King.

One of his Ears  
shall be nailed to  
the Pillory.

muche pesteryd, molested & burdened withall, their, in some competente parts  
of the sayde howse, to be sett a worke, & be compelled, by some good and  
necessarie bodely laboures & occupacions, to gett their owne lyvinges, & to  
eschewe and avoyde Idlenes, and theire other lewde and vnlawfull kyndes of  
lyvinge /"

See the amusing Letter of the poet Cowper, Nov. 17, 1788 (*Works*, ed.  
Southey, 1837, vol. xv, p. 134), as to how Molly Boxwell's younger son was  
whipt at the cart's tail for stealing some iron-work from Griggs the butcher.  
The Beadle drew his lash thro' his left hand full of red ochre, and left a red  
stripe on the culprit's back, but didn't hurt him. The Constable thraht the  
Beadle with his cane, and a lass pulled the Constable's head back by his club  
of hair, 'and slapt his face with a most Amazonian fury.'

176 App. III. 4. *Street-Cleaning, May Games, Plays.*

1553, June. Streets and Gutters to be daily swept and clenyd with Water.

(Letter-Book B, K. 254)

Barne, Maior.

By the Mayer.

To thalderman  
of the warde.

Tell your Scavengers  
and Rakers to make  
all Inhabitants sweep  
the Streets and  
Gutters before their  
dore daily at 7 p. m.,  
and flush them with  
water twice a day.

For Clensing  
the Streates  
and drawing  
of watter //

Bid the Rakers be  
ready to carry off  
the dirt.

We Straightlye Charge and Commaunde yow, that  
ye call alle the Constables, Skavengers, Bedels, and  
Rakers of your saide warde, Before yow, and that  
ye gyve theym Streightlye in Commaundement,  
that they from hensforward doo see and cause all  
the Inhabitauntes of your saide warde, within their  
Seuerall precinctes, to swepe and clense y<sup>e</sup> streates  
& cannelles afore theare dore, every evenyng at  
vij of the clock Duryng this Somer tyme; And  
that all the welles & pumpes within the same your  
warde, every evenyng and mornyinge, at the hower  
aforesaid, be Drawen withe watter for the better  
makinge cleane of the same Streates; And that the  
Rakers of your saide warde, with all dyligence  
possible, be redye from tyme to tyme to caraye  
awaye the Sollage<sup>1</sup> of the Clensing of the saide  
Strete. Faile ye not &c /

/ Blackwell / [Town-Clerk]

1554. Order against May Games, Stage Plays, &c.  
in London Streets.<sup>2</sup>

(Journal 16, leaf 287, back, between 19 April and 22 May, 1 Mary, A.D. 1554.)

No one is hence-  
forth to

set on foot

May Games/  
Morris Danes,  
or Stage Plays,  
in any open place,  
or sound a Drum  
there.

My lorde Mayre, and his brethern the Aldermen of  
this our moste drade and most benygne souerayn Ladie  
the Quenes Citie and Chambre<sup>3</sup> of London, on her highnes  
behalf, do straightlye charge and commande, that no  
maner of person or persones do in any wyse from hens-  
furthe make, prepare, or set furthe, or cause to be made  
or set furthe, any maner of mayegames or moryce dawnce,  
or eny enterludes or Stage playes, or sett vpp any maner  
of maye pole, or bucler playeng, in any opyn streat or  
place, or sounde eny drume for the gatheringe of eny  
people within the said Citie or the lib[er]ties therof /

<sup>1</sup> Soll, refuse.

<sup>2</sup> This Order implies what we know is the fact, that these Games and Plays  
had gone on in the streets or open places. Vicary must have seen some such.  
There are many Acts of Common Council against Interludes, Plays, &c.

<sup>3</sup> The Chamberlain's office or Treasury, says Dr. Sharpe: the City of  
London was calld the King's Chamber.

App. III. 4. *May-Game. Archery-Meeting.* 177

If any Maypole  
has been lately  
put up,

it shall be pulled  
down speedily.

And also, yf any suche maye pole be alredie latelie set vpp in any open place within the Citie or lib[er]ties therof, that then the parisheners of the parishe where eny and euerye suche maye pole ys set vpp, shall cause the same, with the convenient speade, to be taken downe agayne / & no longre suffre them theare to stande, not only vppon payne of ymprisonement / but also vpon suche further payne as the said lorde Mayor & Aldermen shall thinke meate and convenient /

God save the quene!

1557. 'The xxx day of May was a goly [jolly or goodly] May-gam in Fanch-chyrche-strett, with drumes and gunes and pykes; and ix wordes [The Nine Worthies] dyd ryd; and they had speches, eevere man; and the morris dansse, and the sauden [Sultan], and a elewant with the castyll; and the sauden and yonge morens [Moors] with targattes and darttes; and the Lord and the Lade of the Maya.'—Machyn's *Diary*, 1550-63, p. 137, ed. 1848.

1557, Aug. 29. An Archery-Meeting in Finsbury Fields,  
open to all Comera.

(Journal 17, leaf 46, between entries of 4 and 11 Nov. 4 & 5 Philip & Mary,  
A.D. 1557.)

Offey,  
Mayor.

A procla-  
macion for  
shootinge  
in Fynnes-  
burye  
Felde /

As shootinge in  
the Long Bow  
has ever defended  
this Realm,  
and every good  
Englishman is  
bound to uphold  
it,

the Lord Mayor,  
&c. appoint a  
Game of Shooting,  
on Sunday week,  
Aug. 29, 1557,

in Finsbury Field  
at 2 p.m.,

open to all  
comera

By the Maier.

My Lorde Maier and my masters the Aldermen of the Citie of London, callinge to there remembrance the manyfolde benefites and commodities that haue comen to this realme by the feats of Archerie and showtinge in the longe bowe, wherby (God be thanked) this saide Realme hathe ever, in tyme heretofore past, ben defended against the Cruell mallice and daunger of outwarde enymyes / And so from thensfurthe (God willinge) shalbe foreuer / whiche saide feats of showtinge euerye good true Engliasse man is naturallie bounden to maynteyne, supporte and vpholde to the best of his power / And to thintent that the saide feats of archerie shulde be the better maynteyned and vpholden, to incorage the kinges subiectes more and more to vse and exercise the same / My saide Lorde Maier and masters the Aldermen haue appointed and fullie concluded, that on sondaie comme sevenightes, whiche shalbe the xxix<sup>th</sup> daie of this present monethe of August, shalbe a seuerrall game of showtinge, in the felde called Fynnesburye felde, at ij of the clocke at afternone / And who will comme thither and take a longe bowe in his hande, —havinge the standarde therin therefore prouyded,—

VICARY.

N



## 178 App. III. 4. *Archery-Meeting in Finsbury Field.*

I. 1st Prize, for the best and longest shot, a Gold Crown or 12s. 4d.;  
2nd Prize, a Gold Crown or 12s.;

3rd Prize, a Gold Crown, or 6s. 8d.

II. For the Bearing-Arrow competition, 3 arrowes of gold, or money: value  
a. 12s. 4d.

b. 12s.

c. 6s. 8d.

III. For Flight Shooting, 3 flights, or each, value:

d. 12s.

e. 6s.

f. 6s.

When the gamers be assembled together /.

All men shall keep the peace.

People shall stand out of danger's way,

at least 20 yards off the mark.

At every shot, a Trumpet shall sound, to warn folk.

and fairest drawethe, clenliest delyuerethe, and farthest of grounde shootithe, shall haue for the best game a Crowne of golde of the value of xij s iij d, or xij s iij d in money therefore / And for the seconde game of the saide standarde, he shall haue a Crowne of golde of the value of x s, or x s in money therefore / And for the third game of the saide standarde, he shall haue another Crowne of golde of the value of vj s viij d, or vj s viij d in money therefore / And for the best game of the bearinge arrowe, he shall haue an arrowe of golde of the value of xij s iij d, or xij s iij d in money therefore / And for the seconde game of the saide arrowe, he shall haue another arrowe of golde of the value of x s, or x s in money therefore / And for the thirde game of the saide arrowe, he shall haue one other arrowe of golde of the value of vj s viij d, or vj s viij d in money therefore; And for the best game of the flight, he shall haue a flight of golde of the value of x s, or x s in money therefore / And for the seconde game of the saide flight, he shall haue a flight of golde of the value of viij s, or viij s in redye money therefore / And for the thirde game of the saide flight, he shall haue a flight of golde of the value of vj s, or vj s in money therefore / And god saue the kinge and Quene /.

My Lorde Maier and my masters thaldermen of the Citie of London, on the behalfe of our soueraigne Lorde the kinge, and soueraigne Ladie the Quene, charge and commaunde, That euerye man repayringe to this game of shootinge, kepe the Kinge and Quenes peace in his owne person, vpon the payne of imprysonement; and further to make fyne, by the discrecion of my saide Lorde and masters / And also that no person approthe or come so neare That he shall stande in daunger of anye Shott, but to be and stande at large, oute of perill and daunger, for his owne ease and others; and for the good and due orderinge of the same, no person be so hardie to stande within xx yarde of anye of the stakes appointed for a marke, vpon the perill that will fall therof / And to thintint no person shall excuse hym by ignorance, there shalbe a trumpett blowen at euerye shott, aswell of the standarde, as of the arrowe or flight / That euerye person maie therby take warnynge to auoide the daunger of euerye of the saide Shottes /.

## IV.

VICARY'S BAILIFF'S ACCOUNTS OF BOXLEY MANOR,  
&c.<sup>1</sup>

Ministers' Accounts, 34-35 Hen. VIII (A.D. 1542-3), No. 127.

Officium Balliuorum } Compotus Thome Vicarye et Willelmi Vicary,  
Generalium posse- } Balliuorum Generalium terrarum et posse-  
sionum nuper Mo- } sionum dicti nuper Monasterii, per tempus  
nasterij de Boxley } predictum.

The Account then follows. It shows, first, receipts from various places in Kent and London; then a rent of 15*l.* 0*s.* 10½*d.* received from Thomas Wyat as the tenth part of the clear yearly value of the House and site of the late Monastery, and of the Manors of Boxley, Hoo, and Newenhamme Courte, &c. (except the Rectory of Boxley, &c.), granted in 32 Hen. VIII (1540) to Sir Thomas Wyat at various rents amounting to the sum mentioned.

The grant of the office of Bailiff is recited, and the two annuities mentioned therein are deducted from the receipts.

Certa terre et } Compotus Thome Vicarye, Collectoris redditus ibidem,  
tenementa in } per tempus predictum.  
Maydestone }

Manerium de } Compotus Thome Vycarye, Collectoris redditus ibidem,  
Chyngley in } per tempus predictum.  
le Wylde }

Rumney et } Compotus Thome Vycary, Collectoris redditus ibidem,  
Brokelonde } per tempus predictum.

Redditus in } Compotus Thome Vycarye, Collectoris Redditus ibidem,  
London } per tempus predictum.

[These last four offices were subordinate branches of the bailiwick. Vicary received no extra fees for them. Besides these minor accounts, several receivers in other places accounted to the Vicarys as Bailiffs.]

<sup>1</sup> Extracted by Mr. R. G. Kirk, Record Agent, 27 Chancery Lane, W.C.

180 App. IV. *Vicary's Boxley-Bailiff's Account.*

Ministers' Accounts, 35-36 Hen. VIII (1543-4), No. 150.  
Similar accounts to the foregoing.

Ministers' Accounts, 36-37 Hen. VIII (1544-5), No. 146.  
Similar accounts to the foregoing.

[This appears to be the last. Two other later rolls have been inspected, one in the reign of Edward VI, and the other in the first year of Q. Mary (1553-4), but the Boxley lands returned are very few, and are not accounted for by Vicary, apparently. In one or two places, however, the name of the accountant is not given.]

Ministers' Accounts, 1 Mary to 1 and 2 Philip and Mary  
(A.D. 1553-5), No. 17.

m. 71. A few possessions late of the Monastery of Boxley are mentioned, but Vicary is not stated to be bailiff.

m. 89. Possessions of Sir Thomas Wyatt, Kt., attainted of high treason.

Several Manors, with different bailiffs to each.

Manor of Boxley,—John Morae is the Queen's bailiff there.

m. 109 and 109 d. A few lands in Boxley.

## V.

7 March 1557-8. Mortgage for £100, by Thomas Dunkyn of Shoreditch, of Watsole House and 11 closes of land (60 acres) in Elmsted, Kent, and 3 closes cald 'Wylde' (18 acres) in Stowting, Kent, to Thomas Vicary, Surgeon, and his nephew Thos. Vicary of Tenterden, clothier (for the behoof of the said nephew): the Mortgage named in Thomas Vicary's Will.

Close Roll, 4 and 5 Philip and Mary, p. 3, membrane 18d.

Indenture inter T.  
Vycary et aliam,  
et T. Dunkyn.

[May 8, 1558]

Willelm Cordell

[Master of the Rolls]

Thomas Vycary

[Nephew of Thomas  
Vicary, Surgeon.]

[The Mortgage paid of  
and cancelled.]

Vacatur ista Indentura,  
vacuum irrotulamento  
eiusdem, pro eo quod  
infra scriptus Thomas  
Vycary Junior, infra-  
nominate Thomas  
Vycary Seniore mor-  
tuo iam existente, viij  
die Maij, anno regni  
Domine Elizabethæ  
Anglie Regine,  
quinto, venit coram  
eodem Domina Regi-  
na in Cancellaria  
sua personaliter, et  
fatebatur se plenarie  
fore satisfactum  
per solutumque, tam  
de omnibus pecu-  
nariis summis,  
quem de omnibus  
aliis articulis, con-  
ventionibus et agre-  
mentis, in Indentura  
ista specificatis, se  
pro parte infra-  
scripti Thomæ  
Dunkyn perim-  
plendis et obser-  
vandis, bene et  
fideliter perim-  
pleri et satis-  
factum fore,

This Indenture, made the seventh daye  
of Marche, in the yere of oure Lord  
God, after the course and rekenynge  
of the Churche of Englonð, a thou-  
sand, fyue hundredeth, fyftie and seuen:  
and in the fourth and fyveth yeres of  
the reignes of oure Soueraigne Lorde  
and Ladye, Philipp and Marye, by  
the grace of God, Kynge and Quene  
of Englonð, Spayne, Fraunce, both  
Sicilla, Jerusalem, and Irelonð, de-  
fensors of the faith, Archdukes of  
Austria, Dukes of Burgundie, Myl-  
layne, and Brabant, Counties of Has-  
purge, Flaunders, and Tirol: Betwene  
THOMAS VYCARY thelder, of London,  
Gentleman, seriant of the Kinge and  
Quenes maiesties Surgions, and THO-  
MAS VYCARY the yonger, of Tenterden  
in the Countie of Kente, Clothier, one  
of the sonnes of William Vycary, late  
of Boxeley in the said Countie of  
Kente, deceased, on thone partie, And  
THOMAS DUKYN, of the paryshe of  
Saynt Leonard in Shordyche, in the  
Countie of Middlesex, yoman, on the  
other partie, WITNESSETH, that the  
said Thomas Dunkyn,—for and in  
consideracion of the somme of one  
hundredth poundes of good and lawfull  
monye of Englonð, to him in hond at  
thensealing herof, by the said Thomas  
Vycary the elder, and Thomas Vycary  
the yonger, well and truly contented  
and paid, (whereof and wherewith the

Indenture dated  
March 7,  
1557-8.

(4 and 5 Philip  
and Mary.)

Between Thomas  
Vicary, Surgeon,

and his nephew  
Thos. Vicary,  
clothier  
(mortgagee),

and Thomas  
Dunkyn, yoman  
(mortgagor).

For £100 lent by

the 2 Thomas  
Vicaries to Thos.  
Dunkyn,

182 App. V. *Dunkyn's £100 Mortgage to Vicary, 1558.*

secundum veram  
intencionem in-  
dentorum predicta.  
Et postulabat  
Indenturum pre-  
dictum, unicum  
involucrum eun-  
dem, adnichilum.  
Ideo evacuatur,  
cancelantur, et  
omnino damp-  
natur.

the said Thos.  
Dunkyn grants  
to the 2 Thomas  
Vicaries,

the house Wat-  
sole in Elmsted,  
Kent,

held by Arnold  
Dunkyn;

and the 11 Closes  
of Land belonging  
to it,

in Elmsted,  
about 60 acres,

also held by  
Arnold Dunkyn;

Also 3 Closes  
cal'd Wyldes,

about 18 acres,  
in Stowting, Kent,  
now held by the  
said Arnold  
Dunkyn,

To hold the said  
house and lands

said Thomas Dunkyn knowledgeth  
him selfe well and trulie satisfied, And  
therof, and of euery parte and parcell  
therof, doth clerelie acquite and dys-  
charge the said Thomas Vycary the  
elder and Thomas Vycary the yonger,  
theire heyra, executors and admynys-  
trators, and euery of them, by these  
presentes,)—hath bargayned, soulded,  
gyuen and graunted, And by thes pre-  
sentes clerely and fully bargayneth, selleth, geneth and  
graunteth, vnto the said Thomas Vycary the elder  
and Thomas Vycary the yonger, all and singuler that  
mesuage or tenement, with thappurtenaunces, com-  
monlye called Watsole<sup>1</sup>, sett, lying, and being in the  
paryshe of Elmsted, in the said Countie of Kente /  
And all and singuler barnes, stables, courtes, yarden,  
gardens, easementes, commodities and appurtenaunces,  
whatsoeuer they be, to the said mesuage or tenement  
belonging, or in any wise apperteyning, nowe being in  
the occupacion of Arnould Dunkyn of Elmsted afore-  
said / And also the said Thomas Dunkyn, for and in  
consideracion aforesaid, hath bargayned, soulded, genen  
and graunted / And by thes presentes clerely and fully  
bargayneth, selleth, geneth and graunteth, vnto the  
said Thomas Vycary the elder and Thomas Vycary the  
yonger, all and singuler those eleuen closes or parcells  
of pasture grounde, arrable londe, medowe grounde,  
and wood landes, to the said mesuage or tenement  
belonging, lying and being in the said paryshe of  
Elmsted [*sic*], conteyning by estimacion thre score  
acres, be it more or lesse, nowe being in the occupacion  
of the said Arnould Dunkyn; And also thre other  
closes or parcells of pasture grounde, with thappur-  
tenaunces, commonlye called Wyldes, conteyning by  
estimacion eightene acres, be it more or lesse, lying  
and being in the paryshe of Stowting, in the saide  
Countie of Kente, nowe in the occupacyon of the saide  
Arnould Dunkyn, together with all and singuler dedes,  
charters, wrytinges, terrors, escriptes, and mynimentes,  
concernyng the said mesuage and tenement, and all  
and singuler other the premysse, with thappurten-  
aunces, or any parte or parcell therof. To HAVE AND  
TO HOLDE the said mesuage and tenement, and all and  
singuler other the premysse, with thappurtenaunces,

<sup>1</sup> Watsole House is not now known (says the Vicar of Elmsted), but Wat-  
solses Street, a road connecting a group of five or six houses in this parish, is  
well known.—See *Ordnance Survey of Kent*.

App. V. *Dunkyn's £100 Mortgage to Vicary.* 183

and euery parte and parcell therof, to the said Thomas Vycary the elder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, theyre heyrs and assignes, to thonlye vse and behoufe of the same Thomas Vycarye the yonger, his heyrs and assignes for euer / And the said Thomas Dunkyn, for him, his heyrs, executors and admynstrators, and euery of them, couenanteth and graunteth to and with the saide Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, theyre heyrs, executors and admynstrators, and euery of them, by thes presentes, that he the said Thomas Dunkyn, the daye of the making herof, is lawfully seased in his demeane as of fee, of and in the said mesuage and tenemente, and other the premysses, with thappurtenaunces, withoute eny maner of vse, condicion or dephezaunce; And that he hath full power and auctorytie, firmly and clerely to bargayne and sell all and singuler the said premysses, with thappurtenaunces, vnto the said Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, and to the heyrs of the saide Thomas Vycary the yonger, according to the purporte, entente, and trewe meanynge of this Indenture / And that the said mesuage and tenemente, and all other the premysses, with thappurtenaunces, and euery parte and parcell therof, now be, and hereafter shalbe, clerely discharged, or otherwise saued harmeles, of and frome all maner of former bargaynes, gyftes, alienacions, recoueryes, condempnacions, iudgementes, execucions, leases, grauntes, yssues, liveryes, intrusyons, dowres, joyntours, statutes, recognyzaunces, charges, and encombraunces, whatsoever they be, had, made, done or suffered by the said Thomas Dunkyn or his assignes, or by eny other person or persons by his meanes, consente or procurements; The rentes, customes, and seruyces frome hensforth to be due vnto the chief lorde or lordes of the fee or fees therof, and the title of dowry of Jyllia, nowe the wyf of the said Thomas Dunkyn, only excepted. And also the said Thomas Dunkyn, for him, his heyrs, executors and admynstrators, and euery of them, couenanteth and graunteth to and with the said Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, their heyrs, executors and admynstrators, and euery of them, by thes presentes, That the saide mesuage and tenemente, and other the premysses with thappurtenaunces, now be, and allwayes hereafter shalbe, of the clere yerlye value of syx poundes of lawfull monye of Englonde, ouer and aboue all charges and reprises / And further, the said Thomas

to the said 3  
Thomas Vicaries

to the use of the  
younger Thos.  
Vicary in fee.

Covenants for  
Title by Thomas  
Dunkyn;

1. that he is  
acted in fee of  
the lands, &c.;

2. that he has full  
power to grant  
them to the 3  
Vicaries;

free from all en-  
combrances,

save the chief  
Lord's dues,

and the dowry of  
Jyllia, the wife  
of the said Thomas  
Dunkyn;

3. that the said  
lands, &c.

are worth a cleer  
66 a year;

184 App. V. *Dunkyn's £100 Mortgage to Vicary, 1558.*

<p>4. that if the said Thos. Dunkyn do not pay to the said 2 Vicaries, for the younger of them, £100 as herein- after appointed, then the said Thos. Dunkyn, and Jilian his wife, and all other claimants to the said lands, &amp;c., will, at the re- quest and cost of the 2 Vicaries, make all such further assurances of the said lands, &amp;c., to them in fee, as they or their Counsell shall require, to the use of Thos. Vicary the younger. <i>Provided always</i></p>	<p>Dunkyn, for him, his heyrs, executors and admynstrators, and every of them, couenaunteth and graunteth to and with the said Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, their heyrs, executors and admynstrators, and every of them, by thies presentes, that yf he, the saide Thomas Dunkyn, his heyrs, executors, admynstrators or assignes, or any of them, do not paye or cause to be paid, to the said Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, or either of them, their executors, admynstrators or assignes, to the vse of the said Thomas Vycary the yonger, his heyrs or assignes, the somme of one hundreth poundes, of good and lawfull monye of Eng- lond, in maner and forme as hereafter followeth, and at suche daye and place as is hereafter expressed, That then he, the saide Thomas Dunkyn, and the said Jilian his wyfe, and eyther of them, and the heyrs of the saide Thomas Dunkyn, and all and every other person and persons having, or pretendinge to have, any ryghte, title, vse, interest, or any parcell therof, by or frome the saide Thomas Dunkyn, or vnder his title or interest, of, in, or to, the said mesuage or tenemente, and other the premysses, with thappurten- aunces, or eny parte or parcell therof, shall frome tyme to tyme, and at all tymes, at and vppon resonable requeste therof, to be made by the said Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, or eyther of them, or the heyrs or assignes of the saide Thomas Vycary the yonger, and at the costes and charges in the lawe of the saide Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, their heyrs or assignes, make, dooe, and suffer, and cause to be made, done, and suffered, all and every suche further acte and actes, deuyse and deuyses, conueyaunce and conuey- aunces, assuraunce and assuraunces, as (for the better assuryng of the same premysses, with thappurten- aunces, and every parte and parcell therof, to be had in fee symple to the said Thomas Vycary thelder, and Thomas Vycary the yonger,) shalbe, by the saide Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, or theys or assignes of the said Thomas Vycary the yonger, or by his or their lerned counsell in the lawe, frome tyme to tyme aduised or deuysed / All which assurances, conueyances, and deuyses shall stonde and be, to the vse of the said Thomas Vycary the yonger, and of his heyrs, according to thintente, purporte, and true menyng of this Indenture / <b>PROVIDED ALWAYS,</b> and it is condiscyoned and agreed betwene the said</p>
---	--

# App. V. *Dunkyn's £100 Mortgage to Vicary.* 185

parties to thes presentes, that and yf the said Thomas Dunkyn, his heyr, executors, admynstrators or assignes, or eny of them, do paye, or cause to be payde, to the saide Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, their heyr, executors, or assignes, the some of one hundreth poundes of good and lawfull monye of Englonde, at the place where the founte stone nowe stondeth, within the cathedraill church of Seynt Paule in London, on the laste daye of the moneth of Marche, the which shalbe in the yere of oure Lord God, a thousand fyue hundreth threescore and three, betwene the howres of one and fower of the clocke of the after none of the same daye, That then and frome thensforth, this presente bargayne and sale to be vitterly voyde and of none effecte<sup>1</sup> / And that then, and from thensforth, all and euery suche assuraunces as shalbe made of the premysses, or eny parcell therof, shall stonde, remayne and be, to the only proper use and behoufe of the said Thomas Dunkyn and his heyr for euer, and to no other use ne behoufe / Eny couenaunte, graunte, article or agreement before rehersed, to the contrarye in eny wise notwithstanding / And that then the said Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, or eyther of them, or the heyr or assignes of the said Thomas Vycary the yonger, receyuyng the said somme of one hundreth poundes, shall make, enseall and delyuer, as his or theire dedes, to the said Thomas Dunkyn or his heyr, a sufficiente acquytaunce of the receyte of the said somme of one hundreth poundes, of and for the same / And also shall cause the enrolmente of this Indenture to be cancelled withoute eny delaye, at the costes and charges of the said Thomas Dunkyn, his heyr or assignes / And further, the said Thomas Dunkyn, for him, his heyr, executors and admynstrators, and euery of them, couenaunteth and graunteth to and with the said Thomas Vycary thelder, and Thomas Vycary the yonger, theire heyr, executors and admynstrators, and euery of them, by thes presentes, that and yf the said Thomas Dunkyn, his heyr, executors, admynstrators or assignes, or eny of them, do not paye, or cause to be payde, the said somme of one hundreth poundes, in maner and forme aforesaid, and at the daye and place aforesaid, that then the said Thomas

that if the said  
Thos. Dunkyn

shall pay the 2  
Thomas Vicaries  
£100 at the

Fountain of St.  
Paul's Cathedral,

on March 21, 1563,

between 1 and 4  
P.M.,

then this Mort-  
gage shall be void,

and the lands  
shall remaine the  
property of the  
said Thos. Dun-  
kyn;

and whichever of  
the Vicaries re-  
ceives the £100,

shall give a receipt  
for it, under seal,

and shall cause  
the Enrolment of  
this Mortgage to  
be cancelled,  
at the cost of  
Thos. Dunkyn.

And Thos. Dun-  
kyn further  
covenanteth with  
the 2 Vicaries,

that if he does  
not pay them the

£100 on St March,  
1563,

<sup>1</sup> The enrolment of the Mortgage was not cancelled till May 8, 1566, as noted above.



186 App. V. *Dunkyn's £100 Mortgage to Vicary, 1558.*

he will, at the request of the 2 Vicaries,

hand them,

within 3 months, the Title-Deeds of the said lands, &c.

And will also

(the said £100 not being duly paid)

warrant or guarantee, and defend, the possession of the said lands, &c. to the 2 Vicaries,

to the use of the younger Thos. Vicary, in fee.

March 28, 1558. Thomas Dunkyn acknowledged the above Mortgage in the Court of Chancery at Westminster.

Dunkyn, his heys, executors, admynstrators or assignes, at and vppon the resonable request of the said Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, or eyther of them, or the heys or assignes of the said Thomas Vycary the yonger, shaft delyuer, or cause to be delyuered, vnto the said Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, or to eyther of them, or the heys or assignes of the said Thomas Vycary the yonger, within three monethes next after the said laste daye of Marche, the said dedes, Charters, wrytynges, terrers, escriptes and mynymentes, before by thes presentes bargayned and sould<sup>1</sup> / And moreover, the said Thomas Dunkyn, for him, his heys, executors and admynstrators, and euery of them, couenaunteth and graunteth, to and with the said Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, theire heys, executors and admynstrators, and euery of them, by thes presentes, that if he the said Thomas Dunkyn, his heys, executors or assignes, or any of them, do not paye the said somme of one hundreth pounes in maner and forme aforesaid, and at the daye and place aforesaid / That then, he the said Thomas Dunkyn, his heys and assignes, and euery of them, all the said mesuage and tenement, and all other the premysses, with thappurtenaunces, and euery parte and parcell therof, to the said Thomas Vycary thelder and Thomas Vycary the yonger, theyr heys and assignes, to the only vse and behoufe of the said Thomas Vycary the yonger, his heys and assignes, agaynste all men shall warrante, acquite, and defende for euer, by thes presentes. In witnes wherof, the parties aforesaid to theise Indentures enterchaungeable haue sett theire seals. Yeuen the daye and yeres fyrst aboue wrytten.

Et memorandum, quod vicesimo octauo die Marcij, et Annis suprascriptis, venit prefatus Thomas Dunkyn coram dictis Dominis Rege et Regina in Cancellaria sua apud Westmonasterium, et ibidem recognouit Indenturam predictam, ac omnia et singula in eadem contenta, in forma suprascripta.

[This enrolment is crost through with many net-like strokes of the pen, to show its cancellation. To this day, Mortgages are enrold in Chancery on big rolls of parchment like Dunkyn's was, and are cancelled in like way.]

<sup>1</sup> Now, and for many scores of years past, the Deeds are and have been always delivered over on the completion of the Mortgage.

## VI.

## WILL OF THOMAS VICARY 1560-1

(1561 NEW STYLE).

[Book *Streats* (Prerogative Court), folio 10, leaf 2.<sup>1</sup>]

In the name of god, amen. The xxvij.<sup>th</sup> daye of Ianuary in the yere of our lorde god 1560 / and in the thirde yere of the raigne of our soueraigne ladie Elizabeth, by the grace of god, quene of englonde, ffrance and Irelande, deffendour of the faith, &c. I, Thomas Vicars,<sup>2</sup> Seriaunte of the Suriantes vnto our saide soueraigne ladie the quenes maiestie, being hole in boddie and in perfecte remembraunce, (thankes be giuen to almightie god!) doe ordaine and make this my presente testamente and laste will, in manner and forme followinge. ffirst and principally I bequeath my soule to almightie god, my creator and maker, and to his only sonne, my redemer and sauior, Iesus christa, by the merrittes of whose painefull passion, presius<sup>3</sup> deth, glorius resurrection and blessed ascencion, I trust to haue clere<sup>4</sup> remission of all my synnes, humbly beseeching the blessed virgin Mary, and all the blessed company of heauen to praye for me,<sup>5</sup> and with me. And my boddie to be buried in *Christian* buriall among those that dye in our lorde god,<sup>6</sup> wheresoeuer it shall please god that I shall departe oute of this present lief. Also I will that on the daye of my buriall there shalbe made one sermon by some godly and lerned man to preache godes worde, and the declaracion of my faith in the same / Item I will that the masters of the livery of my Companie be at my buriall, and they to haue xl<sup>s</sup> / for their dinners, to be deliuered to the wardens at their commying to my buriall. And to Johnson, the

Testamentum  
Thome Vicars.

27 Jan. 1560-1.

Thom. Vicars (or  
Vicary), Sergeant  
of the Burgesses to  
Q. Elizabeth.leaves his soul to  
God.and his body to be  
buried when he  
dies.Directs a Sermon  
to be preached.declaring his  
Protestant Faith;  
and that the Mas-  
ters of the Bur-  
gers' and Bur-  
gers' Company  
shall attend his  
Funeral.

<sup>1</sup> Mr. J. Challenor Smith, of the Literary Enquiry Department of the Probate Office at Somerset House, kindly told us of this Will. N.B.—In Will books there are 8 leaves to a folio, so that Vicary's Will is on leaf 83.

<sup>2</sup> He spells it 'Vycary' in the filed copy of his Will.

<sup>3</sup> 'precious' in filed copy. <sup>4</sup> 'clere' in filed copy.

<sup>5</sup> This survival of Papacy had not died out in the early years of Elizabeth's reign.

<sup>6</sup> no 'god' in filed copy.

Clarke of the Company,<sup>1</sup> vj<sup>2</sup> viij<sup>2</sup>. And in consideration of my evall and necligent service done to god and to his poore members, the poore of this hospitall of St. Barthelmewes where I now dwell, in recompence w<sup>l</sup>.ereof, and for the discharge of my concience, I giue and bequeath to thuse<sup>2</sup> of the saide poore, tenne poundes in monney. Item I giue and bequeath xl<sup>2</sup> in monney to and amongst<sup>2</sup> fortie poore householders of the saide parish of little sainte Barthelmewes, that is to saye, to euery householder<sup>4</sup> xij<sup>2</sup>. Also I giue and bequeathe l<sup>2</sup> in monney to thespitler, matron, stuarde, Cooke, and porter offecar<sup>5</sup> of the saide hospitall, that is to saye, to euery of them x<sup>2</sup>. Item I giue and bequeath to my sister Agnes Oaken x<sup>2</sup> in monney. Also I giue and bequeath to mary Shackston x<sup>2</sup> in monney. Item I giue and bequeath to Henry Picton xx<sup>2</sup>.<sup>6</sup> To margaret, now my maide, xx<sup>2</sup>. And to Thomas Skair, my ap-

Leaves the poor of St. Bartholomew's Hospital £10;

to the poor of St. Bart.'s the Lane, 6s.;

to 5 Hospital Officers 4s. each;

to his Sister, £10;

to Mary Shackston, £10;

H. Picton, his assistant, 20s.;

maid, 10s.;

apprentice, 6s. 8d.;

<sup>1</sup> John Johnson was elected and sworn Clerk of the Barber-Surgeons' Company on 27 Aug. 1557, 'for so long tyme as he shal behave hymselfe well and honestly in the saide office.' His salary was £4 a year, with 6s. 8d. extra for paper, ink, and keeping the garden; and 'for washinge of the lynen of the howse, lijs. iiijd.'—Sidney Young.

<sup>2</sup> 'the use,' filed copy.

<sup>3</sup> no. 'and amongst' in filed copy of the Will.

<sup>4</sup> 'householder' in filed copy.

<sup>5</sup> In the Hospital, as in early Romances and Ballads, the 'proud Porter' was a person of importance. 'The Ordre of the Hospital of S. Bartholomewes' in 1552, says, 'The officers are .vii. in nombre, continuable or remouable as the gouernours shall fynde cause, and be thus called: The Hospiteler [Chaplain]. The Renter clerk. The Butler. The Porter. The Matrone. The Sisters .xii. The Byddles .viii. There are also, as in a kynde by them selues .lii. Chirurgiens in the wages of the Hospitall, geuyng daily attendance vpon the cures of the poore.' See below, Appendix XVI.

<sup>6</sup> And a book, *Johannes Vige*, with half the residue of testator's books and surgical instruments. Henry Picton was not in the Barber-Surgeons' Court, says Mr. Young. He was evidently Vicary's assistant. The Act of 23 Hen. VIII. ch. 42, which made the Barbers and Surgeons one Company, has a last clause enabling any person to keep a Barber or Surgeon as his *Servant*. It enacts 'that it shall be lawfull to any of the Kinges Subiects, not being a Barber or Surgeon, to retaine, have, and keepe in his house, as his *servant*, any person being a Barber or Surgeon, which shall and may use and exercise those arts and faculties of Barbery and Surgery, or either of them, in his masters house, or elsewhere by his Masters licence or commandement, any thing in this Act above written to the contrary notwithstanding.'—*Statutes*, ed. Fulton, 1686, App. VII.

The 'not being a Barber or Surgeon' in the clause above, was not meant, and would not operate, to prevent Surgeons

prentis, vij<sup>a</sup> viij<sup>a</sup> Also I giue and bequeath to my brother Dunkyn, my gowne furred with white lame,<sup>1</sup> and faced with foyne backes,<sup>2</sup> my greates ringe of golde that was master masons,<sup>3</sup> and my veluet bagge with the gilte ringes / Item I giue and bequeath to Robarte Baltropp<sup>4</sup> my beste gowne garded<sup>5</sup> with veluet, furred and faced \* with Sables, my Cote of braunched<sup>6</sup> veluete, and a serring of siluer, parcell gilte / Also I giue and bequenth to Thomas Bayly<sup>7</sup> my gowne of browne blue lyned and faced with blacke budge,<sup>8</sup> my cassocke of blacke satten fured and garded with veluet, my best plaister box, garnished with siluer, my salutory<sup>9</sup> of siluer, and a serring of siluer, with all other instrumentes of siluer. Item I bequeathe to Robarte Muddesley<sup>10</sup> my best single gowne faced with blacke satten. Also I giue and bequeath to George Bucke,<sup>11</sup> my best cloke garded with veluet. To George Vaughan,<sup>12</sup> my doublet of crimsen satten. And to master Turke,<sup>13</sup> my Jacket

brother Dunkin a gown and ring;

R. Baltropp a gown, velvet coat, and syringes;  
\* fol. x, leaf 2, bk.

T. Bayly a gown, cassock, plaister box, and silver instrumente;

R. Muddesley a gown;

G. Bucke a cloak;

G. Vaughan a doublet;

keeping a Servant or Assistant, but only to enable other men to keep one. See below, Appendix VII.

<sup>1</sup> 'lambe' in filed copy: lambekin.

<sup>2</sup> backs of the Foyne, the wood- or beech-marten (something of the squirrel kind).

<sup>3</sup> 'Massons' in filed copy. 'Probably the Alexander Mason who was Middle Warden of the Barber-Surgeons' Company, 1556; Upper Warden, 1561; and Master, 1567 and 1573. He died on April 3, 1574.'—S. Young.

<sup>4</sup> Robert Baltrop was admitted to the Freedom of the Barber-Surgeons' Company on 3 March 1545; and to the Livery on 20 Oct. 1552. He was Junior Warden in 1560; Upper Warden in 1564; and Master in 1565 and 1573.—S. Young.

<sup>5</sup> trimmed, barred.

<sup>6</sup> with branches or any other pattern on it.

<sup>7</sup> Thomas Bayley was Middle Warden of the Barber-Surgeons' Company in 1559.—S. Young.

<sup>8</sup> Lambekin with the wool dressed outwards.

<sup>9</sup> 'a new plaister boxe or salutory.'—Inventory, 1600 A.D., in *South's Craft of Surgery*, 1886, p. 149. L. *Saluatorium*, a place where things are preserved, a repository.

<sup>10</sup> Robert Muddesley was Junior Warden of the Barber-Surgeons' Company in 1561; Middle Warden in 1563; Upper Warden in 1567; and Master in 1572 and 1580.—S. Young.

<sup>11</sup> George Bucke is not known at the Barbers' Company.—S. Young. He was probably the brother of Alice Bucke, the second wife, whom Vicary married in 1547.

<sup>12</sup> George Vaughan was admitted to the Freedom of the Barber-Surgeons' Company on 27 June 1536; he was Junior Warden in 1558; Middle Warden in 1563; Upper Warden in 1565; and Master in 1569.—S. Young.

<sup>13</sup> We never had a 'Turke' in our Company, that I know of.—S. Young.

Mr. Turke a  
jacket and doublet;

Rev. R. Wood a  
gown;

Barber-Surgeons'  
Hall a *Guise*,<sup>1</sup> and  
armour.

Mr. Skinner, some  
armour.

H. Picton, servant  
(assistant), a  
book, *J. Vige*;  
and all the rest of  
his surgical stuff  
to H. Picton and  
R. Venec.

Nephew<sup>11</sup>  
Thos. Vicary,  
junr., when he  
gets T. V.'s *2100*.

of russet veluet, and a dublet of blacke satten. Item I giue and bequeath to my louing frende Richarde Wood, clarke, my gowne of london russet, furred with black. Also I giue and bequeath vnto the hawle of my company, one booke called Guido,<sup>1</sup> and ij. billes, ij. bowes, ij. shafes of Arrowes, ij. bracers,<sup>2</sup> ij. shooting gloves, ij. Sculles,<sup>3</sup> one handgune, and one Jacke.<sup>4</sup> Item I giue and bequeath to master Skynner,<sup>5</sup> one half hacke,<sup>6</sup> one Jacke, and one murren.<sup>7</sup> And to Henry Picton,<sup>8</sup> my *seruaunte* aforesaide, one booke called Iohannes Vigo<sup>9</sup> / All the residue of my bookes, stuff and instrumentes appertaining to surgery, I give and bequeath vnto the same Henry Picton and Richard Vener,<sup>10</sup> equally between them to be deuided. furthermore my mynde and will is, that as sonne as Thomas Vicary the yonger,<sup>11</sup> (sonne of William Vicary, late of boxley, deceased,) hath receined the hundreth poundes that I haue giuen hym, the which I haue putt into

<sup>1</sup> Guido de Cauliaco, Guy de Chauliac. His *Cirurgia* was written in 1363, printed at Venice in 1490, 1497-9, 1500, &c., and other places after. It was translated into French in 1478, Italian in 1493, Spanish in 1498. (See Hain, *Report. Bibliog.* I. ii. 82-3.) The earliest Englishing in the B. Mus. Catalog is of 1542: 'The Formularye of the aydes of apostemes; of the helps of woundes and Sores,' &c. Guido wrote an Anatomy and other treatises.

<sup>2</sup> Guards for the left arm, in bow-shooting.

<sup>3</sup> Scull-helmets or metal headpieces.

<sup>4</sup> A defensive garment made of small pieces of metal enclosed between two folds of stout canvas or some quilted material,—sometimes costly.—*Fairholt*. '*Bombicinum, anglice a Iakke*.'—Wülker's *Vocab.* 568/29. '*Sarissa, anglice a materas, et quoddam genus armorum, anglice a Jakke* of defence.'—*ib.* 609/25.

<sup>5</sup> 'John Skinner' was Vicary's Upper Warden in 1548.—S. Y.

<sup>6</sup> The *demi-hacke* or half-hake was a gun, a smaller kind of 'hackbut,' which was an arquebus with a hooked stock.—Dillon's *Fairholt*. 'Handgonnes or demyhakes.' Inventory of Henry VIII, A.D. 1547.—*Dillon*. Dutch '*een haech*, a Hooke, or a Clasp. *Haech, haech-busse*, an Arque-busse, or a Crook.'—1660. *Hezham*.

<sup>7</sup> A helmet with a projecting rim like a top-hat.

<sup>8</sup> See his bequest of 20s. on page 188.

<sup>9</sup> No doubt his 'Workes of Chirurgerye, Translated by Bartholomew Traherone: London, 1543. folio,' (Lowndes,) or its original.

<sup>10</sup> On 1 Oct. 1566, is translated from the Woodmongers' Company to the Barber-Surgeons, Wm. Slade, "a Surgeon; & learned yt with Ric. Vener & Iohn Hall, at Maydstone." Vener never served as Master or Warden of the Barber-Surgeons' Company.—S. Young.

<sup>11</sup> See *apost* in the note of Administration at end.

<sup>12</sup> The filed copy of the Will has the brackets that follow.

the handes of my saide brother Thomas Dunkin for hym, that he ymmediatly doe confes the receipte thereof before the master of the Rowles, so that my saide brother Dunkin maye quietly enioye his lande at Elmsted,<sup>1</sup> the which standeth bounde for the saide some of one hundreth poundes, by a bargaine of sale, as by writing doth appere, before the saide master of the rowles. And also I giue and bequeath to Steven Vicary,<sup>2</sup> sonne of William Vicary, late of Boxley,<sup>3</sup> in the Countie of Kente, deceased, all that my house and lande thereto belonginge, set, lieng, and being, next boxeley Church<sup>4</sup> aforesaid, the which I late purchased of one John Joyce / To haue and to holde the saide<sup>5</sup> house and lande to the saide Steven and to his heires for ever. Item I giue and bequeath to the saide Steven Vicary, all my righte, title,<sup>6</sup> interest and terme of yerres which I haue yet to come, of and in all that leace landes lienge and being in the saide parriah of boxeley / the which I obtained of Sir Thomas wiat, thelder, knight,<sup>7</sup> for the terme of lx. yerres, as by

to free Dunkyn's land from the charge of it.

(March 7, 1560, in Close Rolls, & Appendix V, p. 161.)

Leaves to nephew Stephen Vicary, his house and land next Boxley Church, Kent,

and his leaseholds in Boxley under Sir Thos. Wiat's Lease of 28 Sept. 1541 for 66 years,

<sup>1</sup> Elmsted is 5 miles east from Wye station, 9 north-east from Ashford, and 66 from London. Sir Jn. Wm. Honeywood, bart., is now lord of the manor, and lives at Evington-place, about a mile from the Church.

<sup>2</sup> Possibly the 'Stephen Vycary gent.' who was licensed to marry 'Margaret Johnson, spinster,' of the City of London, at St. Margaret, Lothbury, on 23 Jan. 1574-5.—*Chester*.

<sup>3</sup> Boxley is two and a half miles N.E. of Maldstone. As Vicary "was at first a meane practiser in Maldstone . . . untill the King advanced him for curing his sore legge" (Manningham's *Diary*, p. 51), it was but natural that he should buy land close to Maldstone, and also ask the King for part of the Boxley Abbey property, and get it.

<sup>4</sup> Henry VIII's twenty-one years' lease to Thos. Vicary of the tithes and glebe of Boxley Rectory, and the capital messuage and buildings belonging to it, and the monastery's ten pieces of land, was granted in 1537, and therefore expired in 1558.—Hasted's *Kent*, ii. 135. See p. 91, above. <sup>5</sup> No 'saide' in filed copy.

<sup>6</sup> 'title' struck out in the filed copy.

<sup>7</sup> The Post, born at Allington Castle, Kent, in 1503; died at Sherborne, Dorset, Oct. 1542. He was a great favourite of Henry VIII, though he was twice tried for his life. Had this Lease anything to do with the fact, that on October 5, 1542, Henry VIII granted to Thomas Vicary, and his son William, for the life of the longest liver of them, the office of Bailiff of the Manor of Boxley and all other Manors there belonging to the late Abbey? See Hasted's *Kent*, ii. 125, and p. 93 and 179, above. The Vicarys may have afterwards surrendered this post to the King, as in 1555 it was regranted to Thomas Vicary the father—no doubt after his son's death—by K. Philip and Queen Mary: p. 96, above.

save 4<sup>th</sup>. a year  
for Polhill held  
by Rich. and  
Jane Goldsmith,  
who shall give  
this in two sums  
of 20s. to the poor  
of Boxley.

Save also that the  
rent of 4 acres of  
sheepland and  
2 a. in Bernecroft,

12s. 4d. a year,

shall go to the  
repair of Boxley  
parish Church.

\* fol. 10, leaf 4.

Power of entry to  
the Vicar, &c., if  
the 4<sup>th</sup>. rent is not  
duly paid.

Nephew, Stephen  
Vicary, to pay  
Mr. T. Wynt's  
heirs their rent of  
£16 10s. 4d. for  
their leaseholds.

indenture therof made, bearing date the xxviii.<sup>th</sup> daye of September in the xxxiiij. yere of the raigne of king henry the eight more plainely appereth / Except and alwaies reservede oute of the same, to thintante and vee hereunder written, that is to saye, the yerely ferme of Polhill<sup>1</sup> feilde, (whiche is xl<sup>a</sup> a yere,) now in the tenure and occupacion of Richarde Goldsmyth and Jane his wief, which xl<sup>a</sup> a yere I will shalbe distributed and giuen vnto the poore householders dwelling within the same parrish of Boxeley, at ij seuerall tymes in the yere, yerly, during the yeres expressed in the saide leace, that is to saye, xx<sup>a</sup> to be giuen in the x.<sup>th</sup> daye of October, and thother xx<sup>a</sup> to be giuen in y<sup>e</sup> xv.<sup>th</sup> daye of Aprille; and the saide Richarde and Jane, or either of them, to distribute the foresaide monney by thaduice and discrecion of the vicar and churchwardens of the same parrish church of Boxeley, yerely, from tyme to tyme. And furthermore, I will that the saide yerely farme of the iiij.<sup>a</sup> Acres of lande lyeng in Shepelonde, and the ij. Acres lyenge in Bernecrofte, now in the tenure and occupacion of William Boote of the same parrish of Boxeley, (which is xiiij<sup>a</sup> iiij<sup>a</sup> a yere,) I will that the churchwardens of the same parrish for the tyme beinge, shall receiue the saide yerely ferme of xiiij<sup>a</sup> iiij<sup>a</sup>, to be ymployed aboute the moeste nedefull reperacions of the same parrish church of Boxeley. And yf it happen the foresaide Richarde and Janne, theire successors or assignes, to neglecte and not to \*give the saide almes of xl<sup>a</sup> a yere at the daies aboue saide, then I will that the vicar and the church wardens for the tyme being, shall enter in and vppon the saide Polhill feilde and enioye the saide yerely farme of xl<sup>a</sup> a yere, and to distribute the same in almes as aboue is mencioned, withoute eyny lett or contradiction of any person or persons hauing or pretending any claime or title in or to the same; and neuertheles, this exception notwithstandinge, I will that the saide Steven Vicary, or his assignes, shall yerely paye, or cause to be paid, all the rente of xvij<sup>s</sup>. x<sup>d</sup>. ij<sup>d</sup>. yerely, whiche ys reseruid by the saide leace, during all the yeres of the

<sup>1</sup> Was this near Poll Mill? In the Certificate of the last Abbot of Boxley Monastery, John Dobbs, dated May, 1535 (27 Hen. VIII), of the yearly value of the Monastery lands, the third entry is "Item, a fullyng [cloth-cleansing mill] called Poll Mill, with th' appartenance, in Boxley foresaid, and in the said diocese [of Canterbury] ... 84. 0s. 0d." Dugdale, *Monasticon Anglicanum*, v. 461, col. 2, ed. 1825.

<sup>2</sup> Better 'xv<sup>th</sup>' in the filed copy of the Will.

saide leace / And as for all other sommes of monney and other thinges by me heretofore bequeathed in my other will<sup>1</sup> to the prison houses and to thother places, I haue alreddie giuen it with my owne handes, requiring my wief to performe the rest. All the residue of my goodes, plate, Juellies, reddie monney, debtes, and all other thinges not bequeathe<sup>1</sup>,—my debtes paid, (yf there be eny at this presente tyme; I know of none,) and my funeralles, my legaces, my will in every pointe and article fulfilled and donne,—I giue and bequeth vnto my welbeloued wief, Alice Vicary,<sup>2</sup> whome I ordaine and make sole executrice of this my presente testamente and laste will. And ouerseer of the same, I constitute and ordaine my welbeloued brother, Thomas Dunkyn. In witnes wheroof, I haue, vnto this my presente Testamente containing my laste will, subscribed my name with my owne hande, and sette<sup>3</sup> my-seale, the daye and yere first aboue written, by me Thomas Vicary. R. Wood / And where I haue giuen vnto Thomas Vicary, sonne of William Vicary, late of boxley, one hundreth poundes, which is deliuered into the handes of my brother Thomas Dunkyn for thonly vse of the saide Thomas Vicary the yonger, wherefore is yerely receiued oute of certaine landes in Elmsted<sup>4</sup> in Kent vj<sup>5</sup> by the yere, as by writinge dothe appere, my mynde and will is, that all suche monney as is alreddie receiued of the saide lande, shall stande and be parcell of paymente of the saide hundreth poundes, for the discharge of my conscience. And that the saide Thomas Vicary the yonger, ymmediatly after the paymente of the rest of the saide C<sup>6</sup>, shall confes the paymente before the master of the Rowles<sup>6</sup> / Memorandum. the very wordes in this Shedule aforesaide was written in paper by the owne hande of the saide Testator, as the<sup>6</sup> persons whose names hereafter followe can testifie and beare witnes, by me Roberte Howell. /

Gives to poor in other Will.

Gives all the residue of his personallty (after payment of debts, burial, legacies, &c.)

to his wife Alice Vicary, and appoints her sole Executrix, his brother Dunkyn being Overseer.

Nephew Thos. Vicary to allow T. Dunkyn the 28 yearly received out of his land at Elmsted, Kent.

(Duly done on May 8, 1560: see Close Rolls, & Appendix V. p. 181, 182.)

The will was written by Thomas Vicary's own hand.

<sup>1</sup> It was an earlier Will which Vicary had destroyed. The present one, of course, did away with it.

<sup>2</sup> She was his second wife, and once, Alice Bucke of London. Their Marriage-License was granted in Dec. 1547.—*Chester*. Mr. Challenor Smith cannot find her Will. Vicary's son William, by his first marriage (note 7, page 191), no doubt died before him. He was probably the William Vicary admitted to the freedom of the Barber-Surgeons' Company, on July 28, 1547.

<sup>3</sup> 'set to,' affixed. <sup>4</sup> 'Elmsted' in the filed copy of the Will.

<sup>5</sup> 'Masters of the Rolls: 1557, Sir William Cordell; 1560, Sir Gilbert Gerrard.—*Toone, Chronology. Hist.* ii. 196, col. 2'

<sup>6</sup> 'thiesse,' filed copy of Will.



Will proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 7 April 1562, by Alice Vicary, the widow.

<sup>1</sup> *Probatum fuit hujusmodi Testamentum, coram Magistro Waltero Haddon, legum doctore, Curie prerogative Cantuariensis Commissario, apud london, septimo die mensis Aprilis, Anno domini millesimo quingentesimo sexagesimo secundo, Juramento, Alicie, Relictæ et Executricis in hujusmodi testamento nominato; Cui comissa fuit administratio et c. de bene, et c. Ac de pleno Inventario, necnon de vero et plano computo Reddendo. Ad sancta dei Evangelia Juratæ /*

[from *Probate Act Book. 1576*]

Letters of Administration granted to Thos. Vicary, the nephew, to the goods &c. of Thos. Vicary, dec., which were left unadministered by his widow Alice Vicary.

Thomas Vicary. Quinto die mensis Julii emanavit com.<sup>3</sup>  
[5th July] missio Stephano Vicary, nepoti Thome  
hujusmodi Vicary, nuper perochie Sancti Bartholomei iuxta Smythfild, defuncti /  
testamentum registratum Habentis etc.  
in Libro Street. Ad administrandum bona, Jura et  
10/ credita, eiusdem defuncti per Aliciam  
Vicary, Relictam et executricem in  
testamento dicti defuncti, iam defunctam, non administrata. De bene, &c.  
Ad sancta Dei Euangelia Jurato.

<sup>1</sup> The Proof of the Will is also entered in the Probate Act Book, July 1559 to 1565, with a sidenote as to the Grant of Letters of Administration to Stephen Vicary.

<sup>2</sup> A later sidenote says "v" Julij 1576: emanavit commissio Stephano Vicars, nepoti dicti defuncti, ad administrandum bona et credita eiusdem defuncti per dictam executricem defunctam non administrata, de bene.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>3</sup> The sidenotes are 'Civitatis London,' and 'Fedia. / Inventorium exhibitum, primo,' meaning that Stephen Vicary was of the City of London, that he had till the Feast of St. Faith's [October 6] to exhibit his Inventory of the goods administered, and that it was exhibited, and put first in some bundle of like Inventories. The Inventory may be in one of those boxes of such documents in little rolls of parchment which Mr. Challenor Smith and Dr. F. J. F. went through to try to find Shakspeare's Inventory. They only got that of Sir Jn. Barnard, who married Shakspeare's granddaughter, and found an entry that the 'old goods and Lumber' at (Shakspeare's 'New Place' presumably) Stratford-on-Avon in 1674, were worth £4, and the rent of it, £4. See *New Shakesp. Soc.'s Trans.* 1880-6, Appendix II, p. 14f. Lots of the Inventories disappeared at St. Paul's &c., before they came to Somerset House.—*ib.* p. 15f.

[The Register of Burials of St. Bartholomew's the Less commences in 1547; but Vicary's burial is not in it. Dr. Norman Moore has kindly searched for us.]

## VII.

STATUTES OF HENRY VIII RELATING TO  
SURGEONS.

- i. A.D. 1511-12. 3 Hen. VIII, ch. 11. The Act stopping the practise of Physic and Surgery by unlicenst folk, and requiring the Examination and Licensing of all Physicians and Surgeons, p. 197 (amended by No. VI, 34 and 35 Hen. VIII, ch. 6).
- ii. A.D. 1513-14. 5 Hen. VIII, ch. 6. The Act exempting the Fellowship of Surgeons (12 men), and also the Surgeons of the Barbers' Company, from serving as Constables, Watchmen, Jurymen, &c., p. 198.
- iii. A.D. 1530-1. 22 Hen. VIII, ch. 13. The Act providing that Alien Surgeons, Brewers, Bakers, &c. are not to be sued under the Alien-Handicraftsmen's Act, p. 201 (with a Statement showing the cause of it, p. 200).
- iv. A.D. 1540. Extract from 32 Hen. VIII, ch. 40, enabling Physicians to practise Surgery, p. 202.
- v. A.D. 1540. 32 Hen. VIII, ch. 42. The Act uniting the Barbers and the Surgeons of London into one Company (whereof Vicary was the first Master); and separating the practises of Surgery and Barbbery, p. 202.
- vi. A.D. 1542-3. 34 and 35 Hen. VIII, ch. 8 (amending No. 1, 3 Hen. VIII, ch. 11). An Act empowering unlicenst folk to cure common ailments and outward wounds by Herbs, Waters, &c. (This, in consequence of licenst Surgeons' greed.) p. 208.

[See VIII, p. 210, &c., the

**SUPPLEMENT TO THE STATUTES.**

**A.D. 1517.** Inspeximus, witnest by Letters Patent, of the Act  
5 Hen. VIII, ch. 6, with Lists of the 11 Surgeons exempted  
under it, p. 210.

**A.D. 1546.** Contract of the Barber-Surgeons with the City of  
London, varying the Act 32 Hen. VIII, ch. 42, as to serving as  
Constables, Jurors, Watchmen, &c., p. 215.

with other extracts from the Guildhall Records.]

## i.

3 Henry VIII. Chapter XI.<sup>1</sup> (A.D. 1511-12).

AN ACT concerning Phesicians & Surgeons.

**F**ORASMUCH as the science and connyng of Physyke [and Surgerie],<sup>2</sup> to the perfect knowledge wherof bee requisite bothe grete lernyng and ripe experience, ys daily within this Royallme excercised by a grete multitude of ignoraunt persones, of whom the grete partie have no manner of insight in the same, nor in any other kynde of lernyng; some also [can] no lettres on the boke, soofarfurth that common Artificers, as Smythes, Wevers, and Women, boldely and custumably take upon theim grete curia, and thyngys of great difficultie, In the which they partely use socery and which-crafte, partely applie (p. 32) such [medicynes]<sup>4</sup> unto the disease as be verey noyous, and nothyng metely therfore, to the high displeasoure of God, great infamy to the faculties, and the grevous hurte, damage, and distruction, of many of the Kynges liege people, most specially of them that cannot descerne the uncunnyng from the cunnyng; Be it therfore, to the suertie and comfort of all maner people, by the auctoritie of thys present parliament enacted, that noo person within the Citie of London, nor within vij myles of the same, take upon hym to excercise and occupie as a Phisicion [or Surgion], except he be first examined, approved, and admitted, by the Bisshope of London, or by the Dean of Poules for the tyme beyng, calling to hym or them iiij Doctours of Phisyk [and for Surgerie, other expert persones in that facultie]; And for the first examyna-

Physic and Surgery are practised by unskilful persons,<sup>3</sup>

Smiths, Weavers, and Women,

who partly use Socery and Witchcraft,

to the grevous hurt of the King's liege people.

It is therefore enacted, that none shall practise as a Physician or Surgeon in London,

unless he be examined and approved by the Bishop of London, or Dean of St. Paul's,

<sup>1</sup> Two copies of this Act are entered on the Roll, numbers 18 and 22. The Text is printed from the former. *Record Commission Statutes*, iii. 81.

<sup>2</sup> ... To the Original Act a small Schedule is attached ... "Memorandum that Sowgeons be comprised in this Acte like as Phisicions, for like mischief of ignorant persones presumyng to exercise Sowrgerie." The words relating to Surgery and Surgeons included in Crotchets in the Print, are all interlined in the Original Act.—*Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> The side-notes being only 18th century ones, we alter and add to them at discretion.

<sup>4</sup> medicyne, nu. 22; medycyns, nu. 18.

with the aid of  
Physicians,  
or Surgeons.

Penalty *ss.* per  
Month.

II.  
In the Country,

Practitioners shall  
be approved by  
the Bishop of the  
Diocese, &c.,  
with the aid of  
Physicians and  
Surgeons.

Saving the right  
of Oxford and  
Cambridge.

cion, such as they shall thynk convenient; And afterward, alway iiij of them that have been soo approved, upon the payn of forfeytour for every moneth that they doo occupie as Phisicians [or Surgeons] not admitted nor examined after the tenour of thys Acte, of vii, to be employed, the oon half therof to thuse of Sovereign Lord the Kyng, and the other half therof to ony person that wyll sue for it by accion of dette, in which no Wageour of Lawe nor *proteccion* shalbe allowed. And over thys, that noo person out of the seid Citie, and precincts of vij myles of the same, except he have been (as is seid before) approved in the same, take upon hym to exercise and occupie as a Phisicion [or Surgeon] in any Diocesse within thys Royallme, but if he be first examined and approved by the Bisshop of the same Diocesse, or, he beyng out of the Diocesse, by hys Vicar generall; either of them calling to them such expert persons in the seid faculties as there discrecion shall thynk conveyent, and gyffing ther letters testimonials under ther sealle, to hym that they shall soo approve, upon like payn to them that occupie [the] contrarie to thys acte, as is above seid, to be levyed and employd after the fourme before expressed. Provided alway, that thys acte, nor any thyng therein conteyned, be prejudiciall to the Universities of Oxford and Cantebrigge, or either of them, or to any privilegys graunted to them.

## ii.

5 *Hen. VIII. Ch. VI. A.D. 1513-14 (Record Stat. iii. 95).*

### AN ACTE that Surgeons be discharged of Constableshepe & other thinges.

The Fellowship  
of Surgeons,

not above 12  
persons, and their  
predecessours have,  
time out of mind,

SHEWETH unto your discrete wisdomes, your humble oratours the Wardens and felishippe of the craftes and misterye of Surgeons<sup>1</sup> enfraunchesid in the Citie of London, not pasing in nombre xij persones: That wher-as they and their predecessours from the tyme that noo mynde is to the contrarie, aswell in this noble Citie of London, as in all other Cities and Borowghes within this Realme or ellis wher,—for the contynuall service and attendaunce that they daily and nyghtly

<sup>1</sup> See Forewords § 4, and South's *Craft of Surgery* by d'Arcy Power.

## App. VII. *Surgeons exempted from Constable duty.* 199

at all houres and tymes gyve to the Kinges liege People, for the relefe of the same according to their science,—have ben exempte and discharged from all offices and besynes wherin they shuld use or bere any maner of armoure or wepyn, And with like privilege have ben entreatid as Herawdes of Armea, aswell in batelles and feldes as other places, ther for to stond unharnessed and unwapenned, according to the lawe of armes, because they be persones that never used feates of warre, nor ought to use, but onely the besynes and exercise of their science, to the helpe and comforth of the Kinges liege people in the tyme of their nede: And in the forsaid Citie of London, from the tyme of their firste Incorporacion when they have ben many moo in nombre then they be now, were never called nor charged to be on queste, watche, nor other office whereby they shuld use or occupie any armour, or defencible gere of Warre, Wherthorough they shuld be unredye and lettid to practice their cure of men beyng in perell: Therefore, for that they be so small nombre of the said felisshepe of the crafte and Misterye of Surgeons, in regarde of the grete multitude of pacientes that be, and daily chaunce and infortune happenyth and encreasith in the forsaid Citie of London, And that many of the Kinges liege People sodenly wounded and hurte, for default of helpe in tyme to theym to be shewid, perishe, And so diverse have done, as evidently is knowen, by occasion that your said Suppliauntes have ben compelled to attende upon such Constableshipe, Watche, and Juries as aforesaid; Be it enacted and established by the Kinge oure Sovereaigne Lorde, and the Lordes spirituall and temporall, and by the Comens in this present Parliament assembled, and by auctoritie of the same, that fromhensforth your said suppliauntes be discharged, and not chargeable, of Constableshippe, Watch, and of almaner of office beryng any armour, and also of all enquestes and juries within the Citie of London; And also that this Acte in all thynges do extende to all Barbour Surgeons admytted and approved to excercise the said Misterye of Surgeons, according to the fourme of the Statute lately made in that behalfe: So that they excede, ne be, at one tyme above the nombre of xij persons.<sup>1</sup>

attended sick folk night and day,

and have been exempt from bearing arms;

and in war have been treated like Herald,

because their business was to help the sick.

And in London, from their incorporation, they've never been called on to serve on quest or watch.

Therefore, since the Surgeons are so few, and London folk full ill,

while many get wounded,

It is enacted that Members of the Fellowship of Surgeons of London shall be exempt from Constableness, Watch, Juries, &c.

So also shall all Barber-Surgeons duly admitted as Surgeons,

their number being kept to 12.

<sup>1</sup> We suppose the Statute meant only to limit the Fellowship of Surgeons to twelve; not to say that if it numbered eleven, only one of the many Barber-Surgeons admitted as Surgeons should be entitled to the exemption above-given. Who was to settle which this one was? See p. 212, below.

## iii.

*A. Statement to show the Cause of the next Statute, 22 Henry VIII. Ch. XIII, being passed in 1531.*

Acts on Alien  
Handicraftsmen.

Star-Chamber  
Decree to control  
them.

They break the  
Statutes,

and help the  
King's enemies.

After Feb. 16,  
1529, they must  
obey the Decree,

and the Act con-  
firming it.

By the Statutes 1 Ric. III, ch. 9, 10, 12; 1 Hen. VII, ch. 9, 10; and 14-15 Hen. VIII, c. 2, divers enactments were made regulating the trade, work, and status, of Alien and Denizen handicraftsmen in England, restricting their power of taking more than two Apprentices, &c. These enactments having been continually broken by these Aliens, &c., A Decree was, on April 14, 1528 (20 Hen. VIII), made in the Star Chamber "concerninge Straungers Handye-craftesmen inhabitinge this Realm of England" (*Rec. Com. Stat.* iii. 298—301). It recites that the English Artificers and Handicraftsmen complain of the great detriment they suffer from the excessive number and unreasonable behaviour of the said stranger-artificers, who do infringe and break the said Statutes, sell goods at excessive and unreasonable prices, import 'bacon, chese, powdered [salted] beffes, mottions, and other comodityes,' and when they have made money, take it abroad, and settle there, and help the King's enemies, whereby 'our Subiectes handycraftsmen . . . be sore impoverysshed, mynyshed, and almoost utterly decayed and destroyed,' and 'fall to thefts, murder and other great offences.' Considering this, and 'the great scarcyte of grayne and vytell at this present tyme,' It is decreed, this 10th of Febr. 1529, that no Alien shall keep more than two alien Journeymen, though they may have as many English ones and apprentices as they can get; that they shall pay City and Company charges, subsidies, taxes; shall assist in the Searches required by St. 14 and 15 Hen. VIII, ch. 2; shall be admitted into Companies on swearing fidelity to the King, and obedience to the Laws; and that Denizens only shall set up new Shops, &c. &c.

This Decree was meant specially to protect the Cordwainers; and it was ratified by the Act 21 Henry VIII, ch. 16 (*Record Stat.* iii. 297), A.D. 1529. But as Surgeons are Handicraftsmen—isn't *Chirurgion* from Greek *cheir* the hand, and *ergon* work?—and so are Bakers, Brewers, and Scriveners; onportunity was taken

App. VII. *Alien Surgeons not Handicraftsmen.* 201

by the evil-minded to worry alien Surgeons, Bakers, Brewers and Scriveners under the above-named Act. Consequently Parliament interfered, and by the following Act of 1531, had to class Surgeons with their more lowly brethren, Bakers, Brewers and Scriveners, useful feeders of body and mind.

This Act was  
unduly turned  
against Surgeons,  
&c.

R. 22 Hen. VIII. Chapter XIII. *i.d.* 1530-1.

(*Record Stat.* iii. 332.)

AN ACTE concernyng Bakers, Bruers,  
Surgeons & Scryveners.

**W**HERE dyvers Estatutes penall hertofore have been made ageyn straungers artyfycers for exercysyng of hand craftes within this Realme, and for keepyng of houses, apprentyses, & servauntes estraungeis, as by the sayde severall Estatutes more playnly ys rehersed: Sythen the makyng wherof, bere-bruers and bakers whiche bene comon vitaylers, and also surgens and scryveners, beyng straungers inhabyted and dwelling wythin this realme, hathe bene putte to trouble and great vexacion by occasion of informations brought ageyne them upon the sayde Estatutes, supposyng that Straungers usyng bakynge, bruyng, surgerye, or wrytyng, shulde be hand craftsmen; upon the whiche information greate doutes and ambiguytes have ryssen, whether straungers usyng any of the sayde mysteryes or sciences shulde be understande suche handicraftesmen as were entended by any the sayde Estatutes: For playne declaration wherof [hit is<sup>1</sup>] enacted by the Kyng oure Sovereign Lorde, and the Lordes Spirituall and Temporall, and the Commons in this present parliament assembled, and by auctoryty of the same, that no person nor persones straungers, beyng a comon baker, bruer, surgeon or scyvenour, shalbe enterpret or expounded handle craftsmen, in, for, or by reason of usyng any of the sayde mysteryes, or scyens, of bakynge, bruyng, surgerye or wrytyng. And that all informations, sute, accions and processe, had, taken, or hereafter to be taken, upon eny of the sayde Estatutes, agayn any suche straunger or straungers beyng bakers, bruers, surgeons or scryveners, shall be, by auctoryte of this present acte, voyde and of none effecte.

Statutes against  
Alien Artificers  
for exercising of  
Handicrafts,

have been wrongly  
used against Alien  
Surgeons, &c.

So it is enacted,

that Alien  
Bakers, Bruers,  
Surgeons, and  
Scriveners, shall  
not be accounted  
Handicraftsmen.

<sup>1</sup> be it O.



iv.

Extract from 32 Hen. VIII, ch. 40, A.D. 1540.

*Physicians may practise Surgery.*

The Physicians' Act of 1540, 32 Hen. VIII, ch. 40,

32 Hen. VIII, Chapter XL, A.D. 1540 (*Record Stat. iii. 793*), exempts the Physicians in London and its suburbs from serving as Constables, or on watch and ward, as the Surgeons had been exempted by 5 Hen. VIII, ch. 6. It also lays on four Physicians chosen by their Company, the duty of viewing yearly the wares, drugs and stuffs sold by Apothecaries, and ordering the bad ones to be burnt or destroyed. It fines Apothecaries resisting the inspecting Physicians, 100s.; and those inspectors who neglect their duties, 40s. It then enacts that Physicians may practise Surgery:

enacts, that no

Physic includes Surgery,

any Physician may practise Surgery, &c.

"And forasmuche as the science of phisicke dothe comprehend, include, and conteyne, the knowledge of surgery as a speciall membre and parte of the same, therefore be it enacted, that anny of the said companny or felawship of Phisitions, being hable, chosen, and admitted by the said president and feliship of Phiscians, may from tyme to tyme, aswell within the Citie of London as elsewhere within this Realme, practise and exercise the said science of Phisick in all and every his membres and partes, any acte, statute, or prouision, made to the contrarie notwithstanding."

v.

32 Hen. VIII. Chapter XLII. A.D. 1540.  
(*Record Stat. iii. 794.*)

*Concerning Barbers and Chirurgians.*

THE King our Souveraine Lorde, by thadvise of his Lordis spirituall and temporall, and the Commons in this present parliament assembled, and by auctoritie of the same, by all their common assentis, duely pondering among other thinges necessary for the common welth of this Realme, that it is very expedient and needeful to provide for men experte in the science of fisicke and surgery, and for the helth of man's body whan infirmities and secknes shal happen; for the due exercise and maintenance wherof, good and necessarie actis be

1.  
As it is needful to provide skilful Surgeons for sick men's relief,

App. VII. *Act Uniting the Barbers & Surgeons.* 203

alredy made and provided; yet nevertheles, forasmuche [as]<sup>1</sup> within the Citie of London, where men of great experience, aswell in speculation as in practice of the science and [facultye]<sup>2</sup> of surgery be abiding and inhabiting, and have more commonly the daily exercise and experience of the same science of surgery then is had or used within other partes of this Realme, And by occasion therof manny expert personnes be brought up undre them as their servauntis,<sup>3</sup> apprentices, and other, who by the exercise and diligent information of [their] said maistres, aswell nowe as hereafter, shall exercise the said science within divers other partes of this Realme, to the greate relief, comforte, and soccours of muche people, and to the sure savegard of their bodily helth, their lymmes and lyves; And forasmuche as within the said Citie of London there be nowe two severall and distincte companyes of surgeons, occupying and exercising the said science and facultie of surgery, thone company being called 'the Barbours of London,' and thother company called 'the Surgeons of London,' whiche company of Barbours be incorporated to sue and be sued by the name of 'Maistres or Governours of the mistery and comunynaltie of the Barbours of London,' by vertue and auctoritie of the *lettres patentis* undre the greate seale of the late King of famous memory, Kinge Edward the iiij<sup>th</sup>, dated at Westminster the xxiiij<sup>th</sup> day of February in the first yere of his reigne, whiche afterwarde, aswell by our nowe most dradde Souveraine Lorde, as by the right noble and vertuose Prince, Kinge Henry the vij<sup>th</sup>, father unto the Kinges most excellent Highnes nowe being, were and be confirmed, as by sundry *lettres patentis* therof made (among other thinges in the same conteynid) more at large may appere; And thother company called 'the Surgeons,' be not incorporate, nor have anny maner of corporation; whiche twoo severall and distincte companyes of surgeons were necessary to be unyted, and made one body incorporate, to thintent that, by their unyon and often assemble to-githers, the good and due ordre, exercise and knowlege of the said science or facultie of surgery shulde be, aswell in speculation as in practise, bothe to them-selvis, and all other their said servauntis<sup>3</sup> [p. 795] and apprentices, nowe and hereafter to be brought up undre them, and, by their larnings

and there are many Surgeons in London

who teach younger ones;

And as two Companies of Surgeons exist in London, one, Barbours,

Incorporated in 1 Edw. III, A.D. 1326,

the other, Surgeons, not incorporated,

and there ought to be united into one body;

<sup>1</sup> as O. at, print.

<sup>2</sup> facultye O. facultie, print.

<sup>3</sup> qualified Surgeons, or assistants. See p. 206, below.

and diligent and ripe informations, more perfectt, speedy and effectuall remedy shuld be, [then]<sup>1</sup> it hath ben or shulde be if the said twoo companyes of barbours and surgeons shuld contynue severid a-sundre, and not joyned to-githar, as they bifore this tyme have ben and used them selfis, not meddlyng to-githar; Wherefore, in consideration of the premisses, be it enacted by the King our Sovereaine Lorde, and by the Lordis spirituall and temporall, and by the Comons in this present parliament assembled, and by thauctoritie of the same, that the said twoo severall and distynct companyes of Surgeons, that is to say, both the Barbours and the Surgeons, and every person of them (being a freeman of either of the said companyes after the custume of the Cittie of London), and their successours, from hensafurth ymmediatly be unyted and made one entier and hole body corporate, and one commynaltie perpetuall, whiche at all tymes hereafter shalbe called by the name of 'maistres or governours of the mistery and commynaltie of Barbours and Surgeons of London' for ever more, and by none other name; And by the same name to implede and be impleded bifore all maner of Justices in all Courtis, in all maner of actions and sute, and also to purchase, enjoy and take, to them and to their successours, all maner of landis, tenementis, rentis, and other possessions, whatsoever they be; and also shal have a common seale, to serve for the busynes of the said companye and corporation for ever; And by the same name, peasably, quietly, and indiffeasably, shall have, possesse, and enjoye, to them and to their successours for ever, all such landis and tenementis, and other hereditamentis whatsoever, whiche the said company or cominalty of Barbours have or enjoye, to thuse<sup>2</sup> of the said mistery and commynaltie of Barbours of London; And also shall peasably and quietly have and enjoye, all and singulier benefittes, grauntis, liberties, privileges, [and]<sup>3</sup> franchises and free custumes, and also all maner of other thinges at anny time geven or graunted unto the said companyes of Barbours or Surgeons, by whatsoever name or names they or anny of them were callid, and whiche they or anny of them now have, or anny or of their predecessours have had, by actes of parliament, lettres patentis of the Kinges Highnes, or other his moost [noble]<sup>4</sup> progenitours, or

It is enacted that

the said Two Companies are united and incorporated into one Company of Barbours and Surgeons,

with all Privileges, &c. enjoyed by the Incorporated Company of Barbours,

with a common seal,

power to hold lands,

and all rights of both the old Companies,

<sup>1</sup> than O. (then = than.)      <sup>2</sup> the use.

<sup>3</sup> O omits 'and.'      <sup>4</sup> noble O. nobbe, print.

## App. VII. *Four Felons' bodies for Dissection.* 205

otherwise by anny other lauffull meanes have had, at anny tyme afore this present acte, in as large and ample maner and fourme, as they or anny of them have had, might or shulde enjoy the same, this union or conjunction of the said companies together notwithstanding; And as largely to have and enjoye the premisses, as if the same were, and had ben, specially and particularly expressid and declared with the best and most clearest wordis and termes in the lawe, to all intentis and purposes: And that all personnes of the said company nowe incorporate by this present acte, and their successors, that shalbe lauffully admitted and approved to occupy surgery, after the fourme of the statute in that cace ordeynid and provided, shalbe exempt for<sup>1</sup> bearing of armure, or to be put in anny watchis or inquestis: And that they and their successors shalhave the serche, oversight, punyschement and correction, aswell of freemen as of forreyne, for suche offences as they or anny of them shall committ or doo against the good ordre of Barbery or Surgery, as afore this tyme, amonge the said mistery and company of barbouris of London, hath ben used and accustomed, according to the good and politike rules and ordenaunces by them made, and approved by the Lordis Chauncelour, Treasurer, and two chief Justices of either benche, or anny three of them, after the fourme of the statute in that cace ordeynid and provided.

AND further be it enacted by thautoritie aforesaid, that the said Maistres or Governours of the misterie or comminalty of Barbouris and Surgeons of London, and their successors, yerely for ever, afre their sadd<sup>2</sup> discretions, at their free libertie and pleasure, shall and may have and take, without contradiction, fower personnes, condemned, adjudged, and put to death for felony by the due ordre of the Kinges lawes of this Realme, for anathomyes, without any further sute or labour to be made to the Kinges Highnes, his heires or successors, for the same; and to make incision of the same deade bodies, or otherwise to orde the same afre their [said]<sup>3</sup> discretions at their pleasures, for their further and better knowlege instruction, insight, learning, and experience, in the said science or facultie of surgery.

SAVING unto all personnes, their heires and successors, all suche right, title, interest and demaunde,

<sup>1</sup> from or against.

<sup>2</sup> well-considered, deliberate.

<sup>3</sup> sadde Q.

in the fullest manner.

And all Surgeons of the new Company

are exempted from bearing Armour, &c.

They may also punish all Freemen and Forreyners breaking their Rules.

II.  
Surgeons may yearly take the Bodies of Four Malefactors to anatomize,

and dissect as they like, for their instruction.

III.  
General Saving of other folk's Titles

## 206 App. VII. *Surgery and Barbary separated.*

in the new Com-  
pany's Lands.

which they or anny of them might lauffully clayme or have, in or to anny of the landis and tenementis, with thappurtenauntes, belonging unto the said company of Barbouris and Surgeons, or anny of them, at anny tyme afore the making of this Acte, in as ample maner and fourme as they, or any of them, had or ought to have had heretofore; anny thing in this present acte comprised to the contrary herof, in anny wise notwithstanding.

IV.  
And as Surgeons  
often take diseased  
personne into their  
houses where they  
shave men, which

is dangerous to the  
King's people,

Now, after Chris-  
tmas next, no  
Barber in London  
shall practice  
Surgery, except  
Toothdrawing;

And no Surgeon  
shall be a Barber,  
or shave any one.

Also, all Surgeons  
in London, and a  
myle outside it,

shall have open  
Shop Signs,

AND forasmuche as suche personnes usyng the mistery or facultie of surgery, often tymes medle and take into their cures, and houses, such [sykke]<sup>1</sup> and diseased personnes as ben infected with the pestilence, great pockes, and such other contagious infirmitie, (&) doo use and exercise barbary,<sup>2</sup> as wasshing or shaving, & other feates therunto bilonging, which is very perillous for infecting the Kinges people resorting to their shoppes and houses, there being washed or shaven; Wherefore it is nowe enacted, ordeynid and provided, by thautoritie aforesaide, that no maner of personne within the Cittie of London, subburbes of the same, and one myle compas of the said Cittie of London, after the feast of the Nativitie of our Lorde God next comyng, using [barbary]<sup>3</sup> or shaving, or that hereafter shall use any barbary or shaving within the said Citie of London, suburbes, or one myle circuite of the same Citie of London, he nor they, nor none other for them, to his or their use, shall occupy any surgery, letting of bludde, or any other thing belonging to surgery, drawing of teth onelye except; And furthermore, in like maner, who-soever that usith the mystery or crafte of Surgery within the Circuite aforesaid, as longe as he shall fortune to use the said mistery or crafte of Surgery, shall in no wise occupye nor exercise the feate or crafte of barbarye or shaving, neither by himself, nor by none other for him, to his or their use; And moreover, that all maner of personnes using surgery for the tyme being, aswell freemen as forrens, aliens and straungers, within the said Cittie of London, the suburbes therof, and one myle compas of the same Cittie of London, biforn the feast of Sainte Michael tharchaungell next comyng, shalhave an open signe on the strete side where they shall fortune to dwell,

<sup>1</sup> sykke O. like, print. <sup>2</sup> barbary O. barber . . print.

<sup>3</sup> any barbary O.

## App. VII. *Wardens of Barbers and Surgeons.* 207

that all the Kinges liege people there passing by, may knowe at all tymes [whethir]<sup>1</sup> to resorts for<sup>2</sup> remedies in tyme of their necessitie. to let sctt folk know where to find them.

The Record-Commission print of the Statutes from their MS. leaves out the following Sections of this Uniting Act, 32 Hen. VIII, ch. 42, which appear in the black-letter issues of the Statutes. We print them from Pulton's edition of 1636, p. 798.

And further be it enacted by the authority aforesaid, that no manner of person, after the said feast of Saint *Michael* the Archangell next comming, presume to keepe any Shop of Barbery or shauing within the City of London, except he be a Freeman of the same Corporation and Company.

V.  
None shall be a Barber in London but a Freeman of that Company.

And furthermore, at such times as haue bene heretofore accustomed, there shall be chosen by the same Company, foure Masters or Gouvernors of the same Corporation or Company; of the which foure, two of them shall be expert in Surgery, and the other two in Barbery; which foure Masters, and euery of them, shall haue full power and authority from time to time during their said office, to haue the ouersight, search, punishment, and correction of all such defaults and inconueniences as shall be found among the said Company vsing Barbery or Surgery, as well of freemen, as foreines, aliens and strangers, within the city of London and the circuit aforesaid, after their said discretions. And if any person or persons vsing any Barbery or Surgery, at any time hereafter, offend in any of these articles aforesaid: then for euery moneth, the said persons so offending shall lose, forfeit and pay, five pounds: the one moiety thereof to the King our Soueraigne Lord, and the other moiety to any person that will or shall sue therefore, by action of debt, Bill, plaint, or information, in any the Kings Courts, wherein no wager of law, essoine,<sup>3</sup> or protection, shall be admitted or allowed in the same.

VI.  
Foure Masters or Wardens,—  
2 Surgeons,  
2 Barbers,—  
shall be chosen

to correct all defaults in Surgeons and Barbers,

native and alien.

The Forfeiture of the Offenders

to be 25 a month.

Provided that the said Barbers and Surgeons, and euery of them, shall beare and pay lot and scot,<sup>4</sup> and

VII.  
All Barbers and Surgeons to pay

<sup>1</sup> whyther O. whethir = whither.

<sup>2</sup> for theyre O.

<sup>3</sup> See these terms explained in the York Barber Surgeons' Ordinary below.

<sup>4</sup> *Scot and Lot* (Sax. *Sceat*, para, and *Hlot*, i. e. *Sore*), Signify a customary Contribution laid upon all Subjects, according to their Ability.—*Spelman*. Nor are these old Words grown obsolete; for whoever in like Manner (though not by equal Portions) are assessed to any Contribution, are generally said to pay *Scot and Lot*. Stat. 35 Hen. 8. c. 9.—1744. Gilles Jacob, *New Law Dict.* 5th ed.

208 App. VII. *Any one may cure slight Ailments.*

let and scot in the City.

Any person may keep a Barber or Surgeon as his servant,

who may practice in his Master's house.

such other charges as they and their predecessors have bene accustomed to pay, within the said City of London, this Act, nor any thing therein contained to the contrary hereof, in any wise notwithstanding.

Provided alway, and be it enacted by [the] authority aforesaid, that it shall be lawfull to any of the Kings Subiects, not being Barber or Surgeon, to retaine, have, and keepe in his house, as his servant, any person being a Barber or Surgeon, which shall and may use and exercise those arts and faculties of Barbbery and Surgery, or either of them, in his masters house, or elsewhere by his Masters licence or commandement, any thing in this Act above written, to the contrary notwithstanding.

vi.

34 & 35 Henry VIII. Chapter VIII. A.D. 1542-3.  
(Record Stat. iii. 906.)

AN ACTE that persones being no comen Surgeons maie mynistrer medicines owtwarde.

Recital of Stat. 3 H. VIII. c. 11. (no. I. above) for Regulation of Physicians and Surgeons.

Under it, only examined men were to practice.

But these licenc'd Surgeons, caring for money only,

have used kind salt

who have given herbs &c. to people with common ailments, practice,

WHERE in the parliament holden at Westminster in the thirde yere of the Kinges moste gracious reigne, amongst other thinges for the advojdying of sorceryes, witchecrafts, and other inconveniences, it was enacted, that no persone within the Citie of London, nor within seven myles of the same, shoulde take upon him to exercyse and occupie as Phisician or Surgeon, except he be first examyned, approved, and admytted by the Bisahopp of London and other, undre and upon certayne peynes and penalties in the same Acte mencioned; Sithens the making of whiche saide Acte, the Companie and Felowship of Surgeons of London, mynding onelie theyre owne lucre, and nothing the profite or ease of the diseased or patient, have sued, troubled, and vexed, divers honest persones, aswell men as woomen, whome God hathe endued with the knowledge of the nature, kinde, and operacion, of carteyne herbes, rotes and waters, and the using and mynistring of them to suche as been pained with customable diseases, as Womens brestes being sore, a Pyn and the Web<sup>1</sup> in the eye, uncomes<sup>2</sup> of handes, scaldinges, burninges, sore mouthes,

<sup>1</sup> Web . . . a Pearl or Spot in the Eye.—Kersey.

<sup>2</sup> whitlows or felons.

the stone, strangurye,<sup>1</sup> saucelin<sup>2</sup> and morfew,<sup>3</sup> and suche other lyke diseases, and yet the saide persones have not takin any thing for theyre paynes and cooning,<sup>4</sup> but have mynistered the same to the poore people, conellie for neighbourhode and Goddes sake, and of pitie and charytie; and it is nowe well knowen that the surgeons admytted, wol doo no cure to any pers ne, but where they shall knowe to be rewarded with a greater soome or reward than the cure extendeth unto; for in case they wolde mynistrer theyre cooning to sore people unrewarded, there shoulde not so manye rotte and perishe to deathe for lacke of helpe of Surgerye as dailie doo; but the greatest parte of Surgeons admytted, been muche more to be blamed than those persones that they trouble; for althoughe the most parte of the persones of the saide crafte of Surgeons have small cooning, yet they wooll take greatesoomes of money, and doo litle therfore; and by reasone therof, they doo often tymes impaire and hurte theyre patientes, rather thenne doo them good: IN CONSIDERACIOM wherof, and for the ease, comforte, socour, helpe, relief and healthe of the Kinges poore Subjectes, inhabitauntes of this his Realme, nowe peyned or diseased, or that hereafter shalbe peyned or diseased, Be it ordeyned, establisshed, and enacted, by thauctorytie of this present parliament, that at all tymes from hensforthe, it shalbe lefull to everye persone, being the Kinges Subject, having knowledge and experience of the nature of herbes, rotes, and waters, or of the operacion of the same, by speculation or practyse, within any parte of the Realme of Englande, or within any other the Kinges Domynions, to practyse, use and mynistrer, in and to any outwarde sore, uncoom, wounde, appostemacions, outwarde swelling, or disease, any herbe or herbes, oyntementes, bathes, pultes,<sup>5</sup> and emplasters, according to their cooning, experience, and knowlege in any of the diseases, sores, and maladies aforesaide, and all other lyke to the same, or drinke for the stone, strangurye or agnes, without sute, vexacion, trouble, penaltie, or losse of theyre goodes. The foresaide Statute in the foresaide thirde yere of the Kinges most gracious reigne, or any other Acte, ordinaunce or statute, to the contrarye hereof heretofore made, in any wise notwithstanding.

out of pity.

Licent Surgeons have also askt too high fees,

and have let many folk rot and die,

much to their blame.

Most Surgeons are ignorant too, and often harm their patients.

Therefore good Persons who know the nature of Herbs,

may cure outward Sores by Herbs, Ointments, &c.

and Stone or Agnes by drinke, without being sued under the rected Act of 1311-12.

<sup>1</sup> *Strangury* or *Strangullion*, (*Gr.*) a Disease, when the Urine is voided by Drops, with great Difficulty and Pain, and a continual inclination to make Water.—1706. Kersey. <sup>2</sup> Chaucer's saucelleme, salt flegm, a scurvy face, &c.

<sup>3</sup> *Morfew*, a kind of white Scurf upon the Body: from the French Word *Mort-few*, i. e. dead Fire; because it looks like the white Sparks that fall from a Brand extinguished.—1706. Kersey. <sup>4</sup> cunning, skill. <sup>5</sup> poultice.



## VIII.

SUPPLEMENT TO HENRY VIII's STATUTES,  
FROM THE GUILDHALL RECORDS.

<p><i>The Twelve (pure) Surgeons exempt from Watch, &amp;c., p. 210-12.</i>  <i>Barbers not exempt from Watch, p. 213, 214.</i>  <i>Unlicensed Physicians to be put in</i></p>	<p><i>prison, p. 213.</i>  <i>Physicians to pay for Exemption, p. 215.</i>  <i>Barber-Surgeons' Statutory Exemption modified, p. 215.</i></p>
--	---

1510. Surgeons to dwell in the City, and serve on  
Watches, &c.

(Rep. 2, leaf 101, back) xv<sup>o</sup> die Octobris / Anno regni Regie Henrici viij<sup>i</sup> secundo (1510).

<p>Surgions of London.</p>	<p>Item, At the same Court yt is Agreed, and commaundement gyven to the Surgeons of this Citie, that they, and euery of them, dwell within the libertie of this Citie / And be obedient to all maner of Somons, watches, and all other charges, as other Citysyns be and ought to be.</p>
--------------------------------	---

1517. Inspecimus of the Act 5 Hen. VIII, ch. 6 (A.D. 1513), with a List of the 11 Surgeons exempted under it from bearing Arms, and serving on Watches, Quests, &c., in 1517 and 1525.

(Guildhall Records, Letter Book N, leaf 44, back: between the 2nd and 14th of July, 9 Henry VIII, A.D. 1517.)

We have inspected the Act 5 Henry VIII ch. 6, past in the Parliament held from Febr. 4, 1513.

to Jan. 25, 1517,

in these words:

Henricus, dei gratia Rex Anglie & Francie, & dominus Hibernie, Omnibus ad quos presentes<sup>1</sup> littere pervenerint, salutem! Inspecimus quendam Actum in ultimo parlamento nostro apud Westmonasterium quarto die Februarij, Anno Regni nostri tercio inchoato & tento, Ac per diuersas prorogaciones ad & vsque vicissimum tercium Januarij ultimo preteritam Continuato & prorogato, et tunc tento, De Assensu Dominorum spiritualium & temporalium in eodem parlamento existentium, vnacum in-dorsamento per nos superinde facto in hoc verba, scilicet: Shewen vnto your discrete

<sup>1</sup> MS. per presentes.

wisdomes, your humble Oratours the wardens and felawshippe of the Crafte and Mistere of Surgeons enfranchised in the Citie of London, not passyng in Nombre twelue persones, That where-as they & ther predecessours, frome the tyme that noo mynde ys to the Contrarye, Aswell in this noble Citie of London, as in all other Cities and Boroughes within this Realme or elsewhere,—for the Contynuah seruice and Attendance that they dayly and nyghtly, At All houres & tymes geue to the kynges liege people, for the Ralefe of the same Accordyng to the[ir] science—haue been exempte And discharged frome all offices And besynes whereyn they shulde vse or bere Any maner of Armour or Wepyn; And with lyke p[i]nyllage haue been entreated As herawdes of Armes, Aswell in Batalles & Feldes, As other places, there<sup>1</sup> for to stande vnharneſed And vnwapened,<sup>2</sup> Accorlyng to the lawes of Armes, by Cause they be personnes that neuer used feates of warre, nor ought to vse, but only the besynes and exercise of the[ir] science, to the helpe & comfort of the kynges liege people in the tyme of their nede / And in the forseid Citie of London, frome the tyme of their First in-Corporacion, when they haue been meny moo in nombre than they be nowe, Were neuer Called nor Charged to be on<sup>3</sup> queste, wacche, or other office whereby they shuld vse or occupye Any Armour or defensible G[e]are of warre, where-through they shulbe vnredy And letted to practyse their Cure of Men beyng in perell; Therefore, for that they be so small Nombre of the seid Feaulship of the Crafte And Mistere of Surgeons, in Regarde of the Great Multitude of pacientes that been, [&] dayly, Chaunce & infortune happenyth & Encreasyth in the Foreseid Citie of London, And that many of the kynges liege people sodenly wounded and hurte for defaute of helpe in tyme to theym to be shewed, peryashe; And so, dyuerse of theym haue doone, as Evidently is knowen, by occasion that your seid suppliauntes haue<sup>3</sup> been Compelled to Attend yppon shuch Constableshepe, wacches, And Juryes As Aforeseid / Be it enacted & Establisshed by the Kyng, our soueraygne lord, And the lordys spiritual And temporall, And the Comens of thys present parliament Assembled, And by the Auctoritie of the same, that From hensforth your seid suppliauntes be discharged,

As the Fellowship of Surgeons not exceeding 12 men, have, they and their Forogers,

always been exempt from bearing Arms

both in the battifield and elsewhere,

because they seek only to help the King's folk;

And so, in London

they have never been required to serve on Quest or Watch,

since they are few, and Patients many,

and yet some hurt folk have died for want of timely help,

because Surgeons have been fust to serve as Constables and Watchmen, It is enacted

<sup>1</sup> MS. there there.

<sup>2</sup> See the description of them 'without harnes' in the Citizens' March—past before Henry VIII in 1553, p. 173 above.

<sup>3</sup> MS. haue haue.

212 App. VIII. *List of Surgeons exempt from Watch.*

that Members of the Fellowship of Surgeons shall not be liable to serve as Constables, Watchmen, Inquestors or Jurors, nor shall any licenc'd Barber-Surgeon be so.

This Act, we have, at the request of the late Wardens of the Fellowship of Surgeons, directed to be verified,

as we testify by these our Letters Patent.

Witness Ourself, this 10th of March 1517.

And not Chargeable, of Constableshepe, waoch, And of All maner off office beryng Any Armors / And Also of All enquestes & Juryes within the Citie of London / And Also that this Acte in All thyng do extend to All Barbours Surgeons Admytted & Approued to exercise the seid Mistere of Surgeons Accordyng to the fourme of the Statute latly made in that behalfe / Nos autem tenorem Actus predicti, Ad Requisitionem Johannis Hart & Ricardi Hokekyn, tunc Gardianorum Societatis Artis siue Mistere De le Surgeons Ciuitatis nostre Londonie, duximus Exemplificandum per presentes. In cuius rei testimonium, has literas nostras fieri fecimus patentes. Teste meipso apud Westmonasterium, decimo die Marcij, anno regni nostri quinto /  
/porter/ Ingeramum BydeH

Examinatur per Willelmum Porter } Clericos

The names of the 11 Members of the Fellowship of Surgeons in March, 1517.

Hereafter folowyth the Names of those Surgeons which<sup>1</sup> be exempt from Almaner offices, enquestes & wacches, accordyng to the Acte of parliament heretofore made, enacted, & presented by Doctour Yakealey:

Thomas Thornton	} ward- ens	Richard Hockekyns	} James Monford	
Thomas Rosse		Robert Marshall		Thomas Palley.
Robert Beverley		John Rutter		Edward Holway
Christopher Turner		Garet Pereys		

In Journal 11, lf. 296, lack, is the following list of exempt Surgeons in 1525, entered on a blank page left during the Mayoralty of Sir Jn. Rest, 1516-17. The first names are those above given. On the deaths of Beverley and Turner,<sup>2</sup> 2 fresh Surgeons were added in 1525. All follow a copy of an Inspeximus like that above printed, which Inspeximus is dated March 10, 1514 (5 Hen. VIII).

Intrator Heraftur folowen the Names of those Surgeons whiche be exempt from almaner enquestes and watches accordyng to the Acte of parliament heretofore made, enacted and presented by / Doctour Yakealey.

mortuus	Thomas Thornton †	} Wardeyns
	Thomas Rosse	
mortuus	Robert Beverley	
mortuus	Christopher Turner †	
	Richard Hockekyns †	
mortuus	Robert Marshall †	

<sup>1</sup> MS. which which.

<sup>2</sup> The later deaths of Thornton, Hockekyns, and Marshall, are entered in another hand.

John Rutter  
Garet Fereys  
Jamys Momford  
Thomas Palley  
Edward Holway

Edward Clache } *impositi ad instanciam Gardian-*  
Cristofer Dyxson } *orum & aliorum Misteris predictis,*  
6. 12. Anno 17 (6 Dec. 1525).

1520. The Barber-Surgeons' claim for Exemption from Juries, &c., not allowed by the City.

(Rep. 5, lf. 29) *Jouis*, 15 die Marcij († 11 Hen. VIII, A.D. 1520).

[*Present*] *Maior* [Sir Jas. Yardford], Recorder, Aylmer, Boteler, Exmewe, Brugge,<sup>1</sup> Milburn, Feure, Aldernes, Mundy, Baldry, Bayly, Aleyn, Seymer, Spencer, Kyme, & Ambo *vicecomites* [Jn. Wilkinson, Nicholas Partrich]

*Barbitonsores* *Isto die, lecta fuit Supplicacio Barbitonsorum excerptum Misteram de Surgeons, essendis exemptis<sup>2</sup> ab omnibus Juratis &c: Et dictum fuit per Magistrum Recordatorem, quod omnes Concessionis facte per Edwardum 4, Resumpte fuerunt per Dominum Henricum 7; Et nulla provis[i]o facta fuit.*

(Repertory 4, lf. 62) *Martis*, 28 die Augusti († an. 12 Hen. VIII, 1520)

At this Courte camme Pereson & Bankes, Wardens of the Barbour Surgeons, & Showed forthe their Graunte of Kyng Edward iiiij<sup>th</sup>, wherby they Claymed to be dyscharged & exempte of all maner of Juries & other Inquisions &c. *Et non allocatur.* Whereuppon they hadde in Commaundement to geve warnyng to all theyre Company tappers as others do, vppon their perell, & c [This entry is repeated in Repertory 5, leaf 64.]

1525. Unlicenst Physicians to be put in Prison: All Prescriptions to be filed.

At a Common Council held on Thursday the 18th of April, 16 Henry VIII, A.D. 1525 [*1525*], the following Resolutions were past:—

<sup>1</sup> John Brug or Bruges.

<sup>2</sup> We suppose the ablative, and not the genitive, is the proper case.

214 App. VIII. *Unlicenst Physicians to be imprisond.*

(Journal 12, lf. 281, bk.)

Phisicians	Item, at this Comen Counsell it ys agreed & decreed, that suche as occupie phisike within the liberties of this Citie, not beyng examynede & approuyd by the Colledge accordyng to the statute in that behalf ordeyned & provided, may be, at the Requeste of the Colledge, commaundyd & compelled vpon the payne of imprisonment of xx days, tociens quociens, that they shall no more occupie phisike till they be examyned.
Unlicenst Physicians  may be imprisond for 20 days as often as they practice till they are licenst.	Item, where-as all the Colledge & those whom they admytte, be swore that they shall sell no medicynes theym self, yf they may haue the same of the apothecaries, so that it be prouydyd that thapothecaries may be swore, and vpon a payne commaundid, that they shall not serue eny byll of eny physicians not examyned & approved.
As licenst Physicians won't sell medicines that can be got of Apothecaries, so Apothecaries shall not make up unlicenst Physicians' prescriptions.	Item, that thapothecaries shall kepe the billis that they serue, vpon a fyle, to thentent that, if the paycent myscary / it may be by the Colledge considerid whether the bill were medecynall, or hurtfull, to the siknes.
Apothecaries shall file all Ricipes, to shew whether they were good, or hurtfull.	Item, that when eny persone ys admytted by the seyde Colledge to occupie phisike, that then they shall, from tyme to tyme, Certifie the same to my lord Mayer for the tyme beyng, to thentent that it may here Remayne of Recorde . . .
[Journal 12, leaf 286 or 287] Physicians to be registered in the City.	

These entries are also in *Letter-Book N*, leaf 262.

1525. Barbers to serve on Inquests in the City.

Bayley [Mayor].

Intratur	<i>Commune consilium tentum xx die Julij, Anno Regni Regis Henrici viij<sup>mi</sup> Decimo Septimo [A.D. 1525], in presencia Willelmi Bayly, Militis, Maioris, Georgii Monoux, Willelmi Boteler, Thome Exmewe, Johannis Brugge, Johannis Milbourne, Johannis Mundy, Militis, Johannis Aleyn, Johannis Rudston, Nicholai Lamberd, Johannis Cauntoun, Johannis Hardy, Stephani Pecok &amp; Christoferi Ascus [? Ascus], Aldermannorum, &amp; diuersorum aliorum Cominartorum &amp;c. &amp;c. . . . .</i>
The King's letter asking that the Barbers may not serve on Inquests  is utterly denied.	Also the kynges lettre sent to this Comen Counsell, in the Favour of the Barbouris of this Citie to be discharged of goyng in enquestes, in like wyse was Redde at length, & well vnderstande / and for asmoche as it ys expressly ageynst the kynges lawes, and also ageynst the liberties of this Citie, it ys therefore vtterly denyed &c.

1538. The Physicians' Composition with the City as to Constableness and Watches, &c.

(Repertory 10, leaf 27 back) *Jouis*, xxvii die marcij anno 29 H. 8 [A.D. 1538].

Gresham [Mayor]. Item, my lorde Mayer moved, that phisicyans shall pay xx s to the use of y<sup>e</sup> parysshe where he ys elect constable, & as longe as he remayneth withyn the same parysshe; & iij d for a man to watche<sup>1</sup> whan hys tourne commyth nyghtly; and also all phisicyans shall pay clerkes wages & all other duetyes to the chyrche, &c.

1538 (Repert. 10, lf. 35). *Jouis*, vj Junij, anno 30, H. 8 [A.D. 1538].

Phisicians Item, that the phisicians Inhabyttyng within the Citie of london) shalbe constables, & shall pay xx s / & whan y<sup>e</sup> tourne for watche, shall pay iij d for every tyme.

to pay 2s. for every exemption from Constableness, and 2d. from Watch.

(Repert. 10, leaf 50 back) *Martis*, viij die septembris, anno 30, H. 8 [A.D. 1538].

Phisicyana. Item, Master Yaxley, Master Bartlet, Master Bentley, Master Clement, Master Wotton, Master Freman, Master Gwyn, Master Nycholas, Master Cromer, Master Fryar, Master Burges, Master Pyerson, Master Owen, Master Augustyn, phisicyana, have agreed to doo theyre duetyes accordyng to an Act of comon cownseyll therof made / And it ys agreed that the persones aforesayd shall enjoy the benefytt of the same.

14 Phisicians. (K. Henry's)

agree to the City's terms.

1544-6. The Barber-Surgeons' Contract with the City of London as to Inquest-Duty, Contributions, Constableness and Watches, varying their Statute of 1540, 32 Hen. VIII, ch. 42.

1544. (Rep. 11, lf. 73 ink, 71 pencil) *Sabbati*, xxiiij<sup>th</sup> die Maij, Anno xxxvj<sup>th</sup> Henrici viij (A.D. 1544).

Waren [Mayor] [Present] Mayor, Recorder, Gresham, Forman, Dormer, Cotes, Laxton, Hoberthorn, Amcottes, Wylforde, Judde, Hyll, Jervys, Rede, Ac Tolos & Dobbys, vicecomites /.  
Barbours Item, yt is Agreyd that the Wardyens of the Barbours shalbe warnyd to be here next Court day, for the mater here moved this day by Master Tolos, Shreve, for that, that they refuse to apere & passe vpon Enquestes, &c /

(lf. 73, ink.)

<sup>1</sup> serve on the Watch.

216 App. VIII. *Contract as to Inquests, &c.*

1545. (Rep. 11, lf. 175 ink, 153 pencil) Jouis, xij<sup>o</sup> die Marcij, Anno xxxvj<sup>o</sup> Henrici viij<sup>i</sup> (A.D. 1545).

(lf. 175, or 154 pencil)  
Laxton) Item, the petycion of the Wardeyns of the barbour-  
Mayor. surgeons to be dyscharged of Constableshepe, Watche, &  
Barbour- all enquestes savyng the Enquestes of Wardemote onys  
surgeons in the yere, was red; And aunswer made vnto theym  
by the mouth of Master Recorder, that theyr seyde  
Offer, mencioned in theyr seyde petycion, to go Apon  
enquestes of wardemote, shulde be Allowed & entred of  
Recordes, And that for the resydue of the mater of the  
seyde byH, the Court wolde be further Advysed, &c /

(Repertory 11, lf. 187 ink, 185 pencil. Guildhall Records.)

1546. Martis xxviiij<sup>o</sup> die Aprilis, Anno xxxvij<sup>o</sup> Henrici viij<sup>o</sup> (A.D. 1546).

(leaf 187, back)  
[L]axton) Item, the Court, At the petycion of dyverse of the  
Mayor barbours & surgeons, made vnto theym in the name of  
[Ba]rbours theyr hole Fellowshipe, is contentyd that theyr Offer her-  
tofore made to the sayde Court, to go vpon the Warde-  
mote enquest At Crystmas, shall so be pennyd that yt  
shall not be preiudyciall or hurtefull to theyr graunte  
made vnto theym by acte of parliament

(Repertory 11, lf. 229 bk., ink; 206 bk., pencil.)

1546. Jouis, viij die Octobris, Anno 37 H 8 (A.D. 1546).

Barbours Item, the Barboursurgeons haue day ouer vntyH this  
day sevennyght, for theyr olde matter of dyscharge from  
Offices & other charges / And Are wyllyd to send  
Aylyff Maister Aylyffe worde to be here vpon Tuysday next,  
for the fyndyng of suertes for thoffyce of Blakwell  
hall, wherof he hath the reuersyon.

(Repertory 11, lf. 231 ink, 208 pencil.)

Jouis, xv<sup>o</sup> die Octobris, Anno 37 Henrici viij<sup>i</sup> (A.D. 1546).

(leaf 232 or 208)  
The Barbours and  
Surgeons are  
to embody their  
Proposals in  
Articles.  
Item, the petycion of the Barbours & Surgeons to be  
dyscharged of bering of Armoure & other charges,  
Accordyng to the tenour of thacte of parlyament Anno  
33 / Henrici viij<sup>i</sup>, Capitulum / 52<sup>1</sup> / was this day redd,  
& by the Court well debatyd; And Fynally Agreyd,  
that they shall drawe the hole effectes of the same theyr  
byH in Artycles, Ageynst the next Court day; And that  
then, the same beyng reasonable, shalbe Allowed vnto  
theym, & entred here of Record.

<sup>1</sup> That is, chapter 42.

(Repertory 11, ff. 234 ink, 211 pendl.)

Jouis, xxij<sup>o</sup> die Octobris, Anno 37 Henrici viij<sup>i</sup> (A.D. 1546).

Laxton) [*Present*] Mayor, Recorder, [R.] Gresham, Hoberthorn,  
(Mayor) Amcottes, Tolos, Wylford, Lewen, J. Gresham, Judde,  
Dobbys, Hyll, Whyte, Chertsey, Lok; ac Berne &  
Aleyn, vicecomites [sheriffs].

Barbours & Surgeons Att this Court, the boke conteynynge the Artycles of  
certeyn charges, & the exercyse of certeyn Offyces to be  
bourne from hensforward & exercysed by the Barbours  
& Surgeons of this Cytie, grauntyd & Agreyd vnto the  
seyd Barbours & Surgeons, was redde; And the same,  
by the Courte well perceyvyd & vnderstandyn, thought  
good & reasonable, And therupon grauntyd by the  
same Court, & Agreyd, that the same Artycles shalbe  
entryd here of Recorde, Att All tymes hereafter to be  
iustely obserued & kepte, & putt in due exocucion from  
tyme to tyme for euermore; the true tenour of whiche  
boke hereafter ensuyth in these wordes:

Their Articles  
being reasonable,  
are agreed to by  
the Court.

[*The Barber-Surgeons' Agreement with the Corporation of  
London for varying the Statute 32 Hen. VIII, ch. 42.*]

To the ryght honourable sir Wylliam Laxton,  
knyght, lorde Mayer of the Citie of London, &  
his ryght Worshipfull Brethern, thaldermen of the  
same /

Intratur

Forasmuch as  
some Citizens  
grudge the  
Barbers and  
Surgeons being  
exempted by  
Parliament from  
Services that  
other Citizens  
perform,

In theyr moste humble wyse, shewen vnto your good  
lordeshipe & Maistershippe, your humble besechers, the  
maysters or gouernours of the mystery or cominaltye of  
the Barbours & Surgeons of the seyde Citie: that for  
asmoche As some grugge & dyspleasure ys lately, syth the  
vnyon & Coniuncyon of theyr seyde Fellowships [felt]  
by dyuerse of theyr neighbours, beinge Citezeins of this  
Citie / As they<sup>1</sup> be, by reason that they, your seyde Sup-  
plyantes & theyr seyde Fellowships Are nowe of late, for  
sundry good & reasonable cawses & Consyderacions (As  
yt hath semyd vnto the kynges highnes & his graces  
moste high Court of parlyament,) sumwhat Allevyatyd,  
exoneratyd & dyscharged,—Aswell by vertue of sundry  
lettres patentes of his graces moste noble progenytours  
by his maiestie most graciously Confyrmed, As Also  
by Auctoryte of dyuerse Actes of parlyament hertofore  
made & establihed in that behalfe /—of & from certeyn  
Offyces & other charges that other the Citizeins of this  
Citie Are elygyble & lyable vnto, for the whiche

<sup>1</sup> That is, the Barbers and Surgeons are also Citizens.



218 App. VIII. *Contract as to Inquests, &c.*

the Company of  
Barbers and  
Surgeons are will-  
ing to do such  
Services as follow:

1. That all Bar-  
bers and Surgeons  
shall serve on the  
Wardmote Quests,

but not on any  
other Jury or  
Quest.

2. That all Free-  
men Barbers and  
Surgeons not  
practising as  
licenset Surgeons,

shall pay all City  
dues,

and serve as  
Constables and  
Watchmen, like  
other Citizens.

3. That all prac-  
tising Surgeons  
shall pay and do  
all City dues and  
services,

[12. 224 or 211, bk.] gruge & displeasure, your besechers Are  
nott A lytle sorye / for the playn declaracion wherof,  
& for the eschuyng' & Avoydng' & vtter extingguyshe-  
ment of the seyd grugge & dyspleasure from hensfor-  
warde / They, for & in the name of theyr hole Felowshipe  
Aforesayd, Are now Agreeable & contentyd that yt may  
be ordeyned, enactyd, & decreyd by your good lordshipe  
& Maistershipes, by the Auctoryte of this honourable  
Court, that they, your seyd Supplyantes, shall & may be  
from hensforwarde, charged & Chargeable with other  
the Citezens of this Citie, in all the affayers of the  
same, Accordyng to the Tenour, true meanyng, pur-  
porte & effecte of the Artycles herunder wrytten), And  
no further, nor in eny otherwyse / And that the same  
Artycles may here be entred of Record / Att All tymes  
herafter perpetually to be Obserued & kepte.

[1] Fyrst, that the seyd hole felowshipe of Barbouris &  
Surgeons shhall, for euer (As theyr Course & turne  
shall happen) be sworne, go & passe, vpon the Ward-  
mote enquestes of this Citie from tyme to tyme, in lyke  
maner as all other the Citezens of this Citie, for theyr  
partes, do go & passe vpon the same; So alwayes that  
they & euery of theym may clerely be dyscharged of  
Almaner of Sumons & passyng' vpon any maner of  
Jurye or enquest Att All tymes herafter within the  
seyd Citie bytwene party & partye, or otherwyse to be  
taken), Accordyng to theyr lybertyes & privileges to  
them hertofore grauntyd, Asweh by Acte of parlya-  
ment / As other wyse.

[2] Item, that All & euery person & persones that nowe  
Are, or that herafter shalbe, free of this Citie, of & in  
the seyd Company of Barbouris & Surgeons, nott vsyng',  
practysing', or occupying the Facultye & Seyens of  
Surgerye, laufully therunto Admytted & approvyd',  
shalbe Contrybutorye to the charges of this Citie Att  
eny tyme herafter growyng' or arysing' for the affayers  
of the same Citye, after theyr rate & substance; And  
also be Constables, & kepe Almaner of Watches, as  
theyr turne & Course [12. 224 or 211] shall duely yt requyre,  
As other the Cytezens of the seyd Citie shall do / eny  
graunte, lybertye or pryvilege to theym or eny of theym  
Att eny tyme hertofore, by eny maner weyes or meanyes  
made or grauntyd to the contrary, in eny wyse nott  
withtondyng' /

[3] Item, that All & euery person & persones fre, &  
that herafter shalbe free of the Mysterye & felowshipe  
of Barbouris & Surgeons, vsyng', exerceysing' & practys-

ing the Faculty & Scyence of Surgerye, shalbe Contributorye to All maner of charges, paymentes, & impositions / other then the seyd offices of Constableshepe & Watching / that Att eny tyme hereafter shull fortune / to be bourned, payed & Susteyned by the Citizens of this Citie, for the honour, welth & necessarye Affayres of the same Citie, in lyke maner & fourme in every poynt, After theyr substance & value / As other the Citezens of this Citie shal be here, susteyn & paye / eny lawe, Acte, Ordenaunce, graunte, vantage & privilege, Att eny tyme hertofore to theym made, grauntyd or obteyned to the contrary, in eny wyse notwithstanding.

save Constableshepe and Watching.

[4] Item, that Aswell those xij persons<sup>1</sup> free of the seyd Mysterye of barbours & Surgeons, that hertofore haue bene named & presentyd to this Court, to haue & enioye suche lybertyes & privileges as the Surgeons of this Citie hitherto haue had, obteyned & enioyed, & yett do enioye / As also all & every other person & persones of the seyd Felowshipe & Mysterye of Barbours & Surgeons that hereafter shal be named & presentyd to the seyd Court to be of the seyd number of xij / And lykewyse All & every other person & persones that nowe are, & that hereafter shal be Freemen of this Citie of & in the seyd Company of Barbours & Surgeons vsyng & exercysing the facultye & Scyence of Surgerye, shal be clerely exoneratt & dyscharged of beryng any maner of Armour wythin the seyd Cytie, & of & from the offyce of Constableshepe & kepyng any maner of Watche Att eny tyme hereafter wythin the seyd Citie / eny lawe, Acte, Ordenaunce, vse or custome, Att eny tyme hertofore made, provyded, Allowed or used to the contrary, notwithstanding /

4. That the present and future 12 Surgeons privileged under the Act 5 Hen. VIII, ch. 4, shall enjoy all their old exemptions,

and shall be free from bearing Armes and serving as Constables and Watchmen.

<sup>1</sup> See the Act 5 Henry VIII, ch. 6, p. 198 above, and the Insuperimus or Letters Patent of March 10, 1517, p. 210-212.

## IX.

TEN RECIPES<sup>1</sup> BY HENRY VIII AND HIS PHYSICIANS,  
DR. AUGUSTYNE, DR. BUTTS, AND DR. CROMER.*From the Sloane MS. 1047.*

WITH A POEM "WHAT VEINS TO BLEED IN."

## I.

## [leaf 1] The Kinges Maiesties owne plastre.

Take the rootes of marche mallowes; washe and pike them cleane; then alytte them, and take owt the Inner pythe, and cast it awaye, and take the vttre parte that is faire and white, and cutt them in small peces, and brysse them a lytle in a mortre; And take of them half a pounce, and putt them in a newe erthen panne: Then putt therto, of limesede, and fenigrec,<sup>2</sup> of eche ij vnces, a lytle bryssed in a mortre. Then take malvesie and white wyne, of eche a pynte, and styrrer all these to-guether, and lett them stande infuse two or thre dayes. Then sett them over a softe fyre, and styrrer it well, till it waxe thick, and lyke a alyme: then take it from the fyre, and strayne it thorough a pece of newe canvas. [leaf 1, back] Thus haue yow the [mu]scallage redye to make the plastre with. Then take fyne oyle of rosys, a quarte, and washe it well with rose-water and whyte wyne; then take the oyle cleane awaye from the wyne and the water, and sett it over the fyre in a brasse panne, allwaies stirring it; and put therto the pouldre of lytherge, of golde, and of silver, of eche of them viij vnces; ceruse, vj vnces; redd corall, ij vnces; bole armoniac,<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> They are taken at random, by their titles.<sup>2</sup> *Fenum Græcum, Carphos, siligua Columella* . . . Fenugreek . . . outwardly it helps all inflammations, and alleviates paines in raw and excoriated places, Impoethumes, Ulcers, &c. (p. 57) . . . The Meal is Emollient and Emplastick; and boyled with Mead, and applied, it helps all inflammations, and dissolves hard swelling . . . It discusses, and is Anodyne, inasmuch that its mucilage (made by decoction in water) is put into most Cataplasms for those intentions.—1678. W. Salmon, *London Dispensatory*, p. 147.<sup>3</sup> *Bolus Armenus* . . . *Bols Armoniac*. It is so called because it comes from Armenia; but it is also found in Germany. Schroder saith, it is a pale red Earth, impregnated chiefly with Iron Vapours. It is very dry, Astringent and strengthening . . . often used outwardly in strengthening Cataplasms and binding powders.—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Disp.* p. 423.

App. IX. *Recipes by Hen. VIII & his Physicians.* 221

sanguinis draconis,<sup>1</sup> of eyther of theſe, one vnce: And in any wyſe lett them be fynely [p]uldered and ceſed [ſifted]. Then putt them into the oyle over the fyre, allwaies ſtyrring; and lett not the fyre be to bigge, for burnyng of the ſtuff. And when it begynneth to waxe [ſeet] thicke, then put in x. vnces of the ſaide muſcellage, by a lytle at ones, or elles it wold boyle over the panne. And when it is boyled ynough, ye ſhall perceauſe by thardenes or ſofternes thereof, when ye droppe a lytle of it vpon the botom of a dyſſhe, or a ſawcer, or on a colde ſtonne / Then take it frome the fyre; and when it is nere colde, make yt in rolles, and wrappe them in parchement, and kepe them to your vſe. This plaſtre reſolveth humours where as is ſwelling in the legges.

II.

[leaf 5] A blacke plaſtre deviſed by the kinges hieghnes.

Take gummi armoniaci .ʒ.iiij. olei omphacini<sup>2</sup> ʒ.iiij. fyne therebinthine .ʒ.vj. gummi Elennij<sup>3</sup> .ʒ.j., Reſun [leaf 5, back] pini ʒ.x. Boyle [them] to-guether ſtrongly on a ſofte fyre of coolys in a faire lateſn baſyn, allwaies ſtyrring it vntill it be plaſter-wyſe; and ſo make it vpe in rolles, and kepe it to your vſe.

III.

[leaf 6, back]

A plaſtre deviſed by the kinges Maieſtie at G[r]enewich, and made at Weſtminſtre, to take awaye inflammacions, and ceaſe pay[n]e, and heale excoriacions.

Take of plantaigne leaues, violet leaves, honye-suckle leaves, con-

<sup>1</sup> It is the Tear of a Tree, red like blood, the Fruit of which is like to a Cherry, whoſe ſkin being taken off is like a Dragons, from whence came that name. It comes from *Portus Sanctus* in America . . . It is temperate, drying and binding . . . Outwardly, it heals Wounds, ſtops Bleeding, ſtensens Teeth, dries up Catarrhs, and laid to the Naval, ſtops Dysenterica.—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Diſp.* p. 172.

<sup>2</sup> MS. omphatini. *Omphacinum Oleum*, Oil made of unripe Olives.—1706. Kersey's Phillipps. It is cooling, drying and binding, and ſtrengthens the Stomach, heals exulcerations, cools the heat of burning Ulcers, repercusses Tumors in the beginning.—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Diſp.* p. 167.

<sup>3</sup> *Elemi*, a ſort of transparent Gum or Roſin, which iſſues from a Cedar-tree in Ethiopia; being of a whitiah Colour, and mix'd with Yellow Specke.—1706. Kersey. *Elemi Gummi*, Gum Elemni . . . It diſſolves in oily bodies, heals Wounds and Ulcers in the Head, . . . ripens and eaſes pain. It is mild and agreeable with the Body, and gently cleaſes and fills Ulcers up with fleſh.—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Diſp.* p. 161.

## 222 App. IX. *Recipes by Hen. VIII & his Physicians.*

solide<sup>1</sup> maior<sup>2</sup> and minor<sup>2</sup>, solatr,<sup>3</sup> the buddes of rosys<sup>4</sup> of eche one hanfule.<sup>5</sup> Beate all these to-guether, and strayne hem. Take, the fatte of capons or hennys ʒ. xij. Boyle hem with your Iuces, vntyll the Iuces be consumed: then strayne it; and putto, these thinges following: lytherge of silver<sup>6</sup> ʒ. iiij., redde corall ʒ. ij., cornu cerui vsti ʒ. j., cornu vnlicorum<sup>7</sup> ʒ. ij., margaritarum ʒo [ $\frac{1}{2}$  oz.]. Preparete and pouldre (seale) all these fynely, and putt them to your fatter, and boyle them all to-guether over a softe fyre, styll styreing it vntyll it be [plaster] lyke: then putt therto thiese muscellages following: Take of quynsede,<sup>8</sup> of linessede, ana, ʒ. j. Drawe the muscellage of them with rose-water and white wyne, wherin therebintyne hath lyen iiij dayes infuse, being oftymes moved ones or ij in an howre. And take of that ʒ. ij. and putto the other, and make thereof a plaster, or a spasmadrapp.<sup>9</sup>

### IV.

#### Jacobbes Plaster.

[leaf 18, or fo. 17, back]

Take lapidis colaminaris,<sup>1</sup> terre sigillate,<sup>2</sup> lapidis lazulj,<sup>10</sup> lapidis

<sup>1</sup> See notes to Recipes VII, VIII, below.

<sup>2</sup> *Solanum, Solatrum* . . . Nightshade . . . The Essence helps St. Anthony's fire, the Shingles, pain of the Head, Gout, Sciatica, pains caused by hot, sharp and biting Humours, heart burning, heat of the Stomach, and hot Inflammations: it is to be used with caution, yet is not so dangerous as Opium.—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Disp.* p. 104.

<sup>3-5</sup> In a corrector's hand, over the line.

<sup>6</sup> *Silver* . . . To purge it from other more imperfect Metalla. This is done . . . By melting of it with Lead, continuing the fire till the imperfect Metalls with the lead turn to fume, or come off like froth or dross, which is called *Litharge* of silver.—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Disp.* p. 277.

<sup>7</sup> See Salmon's *London Dispensatory*, p. 207, and 220. <sup>8</sup> quince seed!

<sup>9</sup> See The Table of Spasmadraps, or dipt plasters, on leaf 32.

<sup>10</sup> *Calaminaris lapis* . . . Caliminare. It is a yellow stone, not hard, which when burning, gives a Yellow fume: found in Metallick mines: Of this, Copper-smiths make Brass . . . This stone dries, cleanses, binds, cicatrizes and incarnates; fills Ulcers with flesh; and made into powder, and sprinkled upon gold places in Children, dries and heals them suddenly.—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Disp.* p. 407.

<sup>2</sup> *Terra Sigillata, Silestiac* . . . Sealed Earth. There are several sorts . . . as the . . . Turkish, which is properly so called, and that which is intended here, viz. that from Constantinople, which is of an ash-colour, and indeed the best of all Earths which are known to us . . . *Terra Sigillata* is drying, binding, sudorifick, and alexipharmick, resisting Plague, Poyson, Putrefaction, and all kinds of Malignity and Venom . . . Outwardly, it cures the bitings of Venemous Beasts, and cleanses malignant Wounds.—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Disp.* p. 436.

<sup>10</sup> *Lazuli lapis* . . . the Azure Stone . . . Of this stone is made that glorious colour called *Ultramarine* . . . It is a wonderful thing (according to the Opinion

App. IX. *Recipes by Hen. VIII & his Physicians.* 223

sanguinarij,<sup>1</sup> lapidis emerj, of eche two vneces; sang[u]inis draconis, boli armenj,<sup>2</sup> of eche .j. vneces; lytherge of golde, cerusa, of eche one vneces; lett all these be pouldered small, and cersed [sifted] fynely. Then take oyle of rosys a pynte, and sett it over a softe fyre, and putt therto white waxe small cut, half a pounce; deres suett, iiij vneces; And when they be relented, put therto all the poulders, and styrrer thein well, and [leaf 14, or 15] lett them boyle a lytle while; and then take it from the fyre, and putt therto mastique and olibanum,<sup>3</sup> of eche one vneces fynely [pouldered]; And when it is almost colde, putt therto ij vneces of therebintyne, and ij drammes of camphere in fyne pouldre, and make it vppe in rolles, and kepe it in lether. This plaster is goode for all maner of olde sores.

V.

[leaf 24, back]

An other plaster deuised by Master Chambre, Doctour Buttes, Doctour Augstytne and Doctour Cromer, the which doith both consolidate and comforte the membre, and temperately heate, and healeth the Ulcer.

Take oyle of rosys, ʒ. viij., succorum plantaginis,<sup>4</sup> centinodij,<sup>5</sup> bursae pastoris,<sup>6</sup> foliorum rubei, ana, ʒ. i. : boyle the oyle to the consumption of Fioravantus) in the Cure of Malignant Fevers, and the worst of Ulcers.—Salmon, *London Disp.* p. 413.

<sup>1</sup> We don't see this in *Salmon*, unless it means Coral (p. 422-4, 'the Tincture of the Coral like blood) or Ruby, *Pyropus*, p. 417.

<sup>2</sup> See note 3, p. 220, above.

<sup>3</sup> *Olibanum*, Gum of the Male Frankincense-tree (p. 167). Thus, Frankincense. It is a native Resin from an Arabian Tree called *Loosa*, which we call the Frankincense Tree. It is Male or Female: the Male is called *Olibanum*, which is a Resin, hard, clear, of a yellowish white within, fat, and round like drops. The female is softer . . . *Olibanum* is the best of the two (being from Trees which grow on Mountains) . . . It is Pectoral, Cephalick, Stomatick, Anodyne, and Vulnerary. It cleanses, fills Ulcers with flesh and heals them, cures green Wounds, chiefly of the Head; is good against Kibes and Chilblains, and helps Ulcers in the Fundament.—1678. Salmon, *London Disp.* p. 179.

<sup>4</sup> *Plantago* . . Plantain . . it cures old Ulcers, Issues, Rheums . . heals Ulcers, and soreness of the mouth and Privy parts.—1678. Salmon, *London Disp.* p. 89.

<sup>5</sup> *Centinody*, an Herb having as it were a hundred Knots, Knot-Grass. Knot-grass, an Herb lying on the Ground, with long narrow Leaves like a Bird's Tongue. It is good against the Stone, Strangury, Bloody-flux, hot Swellings, fistulous Cancers, &c.—1706. Kersey.

<sup>6</sup> *Bursae pastoris* . . sheppards Purse . . It binds and astringeth, is good in

tion of the Iuces; then putt therto myrtylles, hipocistidos,<sup>1</sup> galles brusyd [leaf 27], of eche ʒ.ʒ [½ oz.], plantaign water, rosewater, water of honye-suckle flowres, of eche ʒ.ʒ. Boyle all thiese to-guether with the oyle to the consumption of the waters; then strayne them thorough a fayre clothe into a clayne vessel, and putt therto lytherge of golde and syluer, and ceruse, and rodde corall combusted. All these well prepared, of eche one vnce: lapidis Ematitis,<sup>2</sup> tutie,<sup>3</sup> cornu cerui vsti, perlys; of eche of thiese finely pouldered, half an vnca. Boyle all thiese to-guether over a softe fyre, tyll it be almoost plaster wyse: then putt therto of muscellage seminis consilij<sup>4</sup> drawen with rose water, ʒ.ij. And when yt is [leaf 27, back] boyled ynough, take it besyde the fyre, allway stirring it; and in the cooling, putt therto half an vnca of fyne pouldre of redde dammaske rosys, and ʒ.ij. of fyne pouldre of camphere; And so make it vppe in rolles, and kepe it for your vse.

## VI.

[leaf 66]

An Oyntement devised by D. Chambre, D. Buttes, D. Cromer, and D. Augustyne, against the eville complexione of hoote cawses of Vlcers in the legges, and partes that be soore.

Take lytherge of golde,<sup>5</sup> lytherge of silver, ana, ʒ.ij., Tutie<sup>2</sup> prepa-  
bleeding at the Nose, spitting of Blood, pissing of blood, bloody flux, and the flux of Womens courses; it stops a looseness, cures Wounds, and stops bleeding in any part of the Body.—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Disp.* p. 89.

<sup>1</sup> *Hypocistia*. It is the juyce of the root of the Shrub *Cistis* or Holly Rose, dried in the Sun . . Is binding, stops all fluxes . . It strengthens parts debilitated through superfluous moisture, stops vomiting and spitting of Blood, binds violently, and is Vulnerary.—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Disp.* p. 164.

<sup>2</sup> Hematite, the sesqui-oxide of iron, red, from *haima* blood.

<sup>3</sup> *Tutty*, *Pompholix* or *Spodium*, is a thin Volatile Ash, which sticks to the upper part of the Furnace when brass is melted; looking almost like flocks of Wool, and falling down when touched. It is also made of *Cadmia*, by calcining of it with a violent fire to Ashes. But that is properly *Spodium* which is heavy, and falls down to the bottom, called *Nil*, *Nihil* *Gryscum*, or Greek *Spodium*. Being washed, it dries without sharpness, and is the best of all drying medicines, exceeding good in all malignant and cancerous Ulcers, and other old and running Sores which abound with moisture.—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Disp.* p. 255.

<sup>4</sup> We can't find *Consilium*, but suppose it is Consound, like *Consolida*: Fr. 'Consire, Consoude': f. The hearbe Comfrey, Consound, Asse-care, Kuitbacke, Backwort'.—1611. Cotgrave.

<sup>5</sup> *Of Vnprepared Litharge*. It is an Excrement arising from the refining of Silver or Gold with Lead: it is twofold, either white or yellow, (called Litharge

rate, calcis nonies lote,<sup>1</sup> cerusse, ana ʒ.ii (½ oz.): make these in verray fyne pouldra. Take the Iuce of nightshade, the Iuce of plantaigne, the Iuce of Rubee,<sup>2</sup> ana ʒ.i.; worke them in a loaden morter with the pouldra. Take oyle of rosys, ʒ.i.; washe it well in [leaf 64, back] rose water, and so make vpps your oyntement therewith. Et fiat.

## VII

[leaf 65] A Decoccioxn devised by the Kinges Maiestie.

Take of Rose water, honysuckle flowres, ana ti .iiij; mallowes, nightshade, consolida maior<sup>3</sup>, consolida media<sup>4</sup>, plantaigne, sage, holy-ockes, chamomell flowres, dammaske rose leaves, ana, M.j. Take beane flowre, M.ʒ. and boyle all these to-guether over a softe fyre, tyll the thirde parte be consumed; then strayne it, and putt it in a fayre glasse, and take such quantitie thereof as shaft suffice, and warme yt a lytle, and wasshe the membre therwith; and weete your [leaf 62, back] clothes therin, and wrappe them abowt, and so rowle it vpon.

## VIII

[leaf 62] A Water made and devised by the Kinges Maiestie.

Take the flowres of rosys, the flowres of [leaf 62, back] barberies, the of Silver and Gold,) but they only differ in boylng; for the yellow is that which is most boyled or burnt, and is indeed only Lead half calcined. It dries, coole, bindes, repels, generates flesh, fills up hollow Ulcers, cleanses, cicatrizes raw places . . .—1678. Salmon, *Lond. Disp.* p. 354/l. See note 4, p. 222, above.

<sup>1</sup> Chalk washt nine times to purify it.

<sup>2</sup> *Rubie maior, ou des tincturiers.* The hearb Madder, red Madder. *Rubie mineur.* Clauer, Lous-man, Goose-share, Goose-grasse.—1611. Cotgrave.

<sup>3</sup> *Consolida*, (Lat.) the Herb Consound, or Comfrey, of great Virtue for curing Wounds, looseness of the Belly, Sharpness of Humours, Consumptions, &c.—1706. Kersey. 45. *Consolide maioris, Symphiti*, of Comfry, cold in 1°, dry in 2°. It is mucilaginous, Vulnerary and Conglutinative. It heals all wounds external and internal, stops fluxes of blood in wounds, helps spitting of blood, and Ulcers in the Lungs: It is good against Raptures and pains in the back: It Cures broken bones and dislocations, and very powerfully stops the Terms, Whites, and running of the Reins: It may be used in powder, but a Muclage is best; otherwise a Decoction in strong Ale will serve the turn: The bruised root applied, immediately easeth the Gout.—1678. Salmon. *London Dispensatory*, 6/l.

<sup>4</sup> 46. *Consolida media, Bugula*, of Bugle; Temperate and dry in 1°. It is an exceeding good Vulnerary, both inwardly and outwardly, healing Raptures, bruises, and the like: Inwardly it helps the Jaundice, and opens obstructions.—1678. Salmon. 46. 6/2.



226 App. IX. *Recipes by Hen. VIII & his Physicians.*

flowres of pomme granate, the flowres of honye suckle, ana equaliter. Boyle all these to-guether; And in the boyling, putt to these poulders following: the rootes of consolida maior and minor<sup>1</sup>, Cinquefoile, water lyllie: Boyle them all to-guether a goode space, and straigne them, and putt therto of mirobolane cytrine<sup>2</sup> pouldered, one vnce, and of met rosarum<sup>3</sup> ʒ.ij, and boyle a decoccion.

IX.

[leaf 20]

A Cataplasme made vngtment-lyke of the Kinges Maiestics devise, made at Westminster.

Take a quartr of mylke, a fyne manchett<sup>4</sup>, a handfull of mallowes, a handfull of rose leaves: Boyle these to-guether tyll they be softe; then strayne them, and drawe the pulpe of them, and putt therto the muscillage of paraly, ʒ.j., the yolkes of ij newe layd egges, the pouldre of long wormes well washed and dried ʒ.ʒ [½ oz.], the pouldre of mellilote flowres<sup>5</sup>, and chamomel flowres, of eche, half an vnce, oyle of gardeyn lyllies<sup>6</sup> as much as shall suffice: Et fiat.

<sup>1</sup> 47. *Consolida minoris*, *Prunella*, of Self-heal: Temperate [ʒ] dry in 1°. It is, like the former, a good Vulnerary, and has all the same Virtues.—1678. Salmon. *London Disp.*, 6/2. (For *Consolida Regalis*, Larks-spur, see 48/1.)

<sup>2</sup> 63. *Myrobalant Bellerica*, *Chebula*, *Citrina*, *Emblica*, *Indica*. The five sorts of Myrobolana. The Bellerick purge Flegm: The *Chebula* first purge Flegm, then Choler: The *Citrina* or yellow purge Choler: the *Emblia* purge Flegm and Water: The *Indian* or black purge Melancholy, Dose ʒ 3vj ad ʒj ss. The Bellerick are round; the *Chebula*, long, with corners; the *Citrina* are round like the Bellerick; the *Indian* black, and eight-cornered. *Horstius* saith that they are *Prunorum quadam genera*, a kind of Prunes found growing in the Kingdom of Cambala, which the Arabians call *delegi*. *Sala* makes an Extract of them (being stoned) by beating the pulpy part, and steeping it in water for some days, then straining and inspissating; others add juyce of Pearmaina, and then inspissate.—1678. Salmon. *London Dispens.*, 136/2. See also p. 79, col. 2, no. 429. *Myrobalanus*, Myrobalan Tree, a kind of Outlandish Prune, not known to the Greeks, but found out by the Arabians. . . They grow in the East-Indies, and are found wild in Goa, being a Fruit sharp in taste, much like to Service-berries.

<sup>3</sup> 75. *Mel Rosarum commune*, sive *Foliatum*, Honey of Roses.

Colledg.) *Recipe Red Roses not quite opened lb.ij. Honey lb.vj. set them in the Sun according to Art.* Salmon.) It strengthens the Stomach, and heals Ulcers of the Mouth and Throat.—1678. Salmon. *London Dispensatory*, 605/2.

<sup>4</sup> *Manchet* or *Manchet-Bread*, the finest and smallest sort of Wheaton Bread.—1736. Kersey.

<sup>5</sup> 404. *Mellilotus*, *Corona Regis*. . . Mellilot is a kind of strong-scented Trefoil: It is Emollient, Discussive, Anodyne, Traumatick, Vulnerary, wasting.

<sup>6</sup> See next page.

X.

[leaf 94, back]

An other pultes devised by *Master Cham-  
bre, Doctour Buttes, Doctour Cromer, and  
Doctour Angustyne.*

Take a gallon of milke, and a quarte of faire water, and the herbes folowyng: of nightshade leaves, lactuce leaves, henbayne leaves, howseleke leaves, plantaigne leaves, mallowe leaves, violett leaves, thre [leaf 94] swete appuls: Boyle all these to-guether tyll the moyستure be consumed, and that it be thick. Then drawe the pulpe of them thorough a strainer, and putt therto these thinges folowing: of bariye meale, beane meale, Ote meale, ana, ʒj. Mixe all these to-guether, and boyle them on a softe fyre, tyll it be somewhat thicke. And in the coolyng, putt in thiese thinges folowing: the yolkes of thre egges, of the pouldre of rose leaves, of chamomeit flowres, of mellilote flowres, [leaf 94, back] ana ʒ.ij. [½ oz.], oyle of rosys<sup>1</sup>, quantum sufficit. Worke all well to-guether, and [sprede] on a faire clothe, and use it warme to the membre.

[End of the MS.]

ripening, Diaphoretick, Diuretick, Lithontriptick, and an Opener of Obstructions: the Juyce or Essence dropt into the Eyes, clears the Sight, consumes the Pin and web (see note 1, p. 208), and dissolves the Pearl and other Spots which offend them. See our *Synopsis Medicina*, lib. 3, cap. 22, Sect. 198; and cap. 59, Sect. 3.—1678. Salmon. *London Disp.*, 76/1.

<sup>0</sup> *Oleum Lilliorum*, Oyl of Lillies.

Colledge.) It is made in the same manner as Oyl of Roses. [See next note.]

Salmon.) It eases pain, and ripens Tumors: It was much used in Pestilential Bubo's.—1678. Salmon. *London Disp.*, 728/2.

<sup>1</sup> *Oleum*, seu *Pinguedo Rosarum*, vulgo *Spiritus Rosarum*, Oil, fat, or spirit of Roses.

Colledge.) Recipe as many fresh Damask Roses as you will; steep them 24 hours in a sufficient quantity of warm water; press them out, and repeat the infusion certain times, till the liquor is sufficiently strong, which distill in an Alembick with its Refrigeratory, or a Copper with its Worm: separate the Spirit from the water, and keep the water for another infusion: you may also do the same being pickled with Salt (as is taught, Chap. 2, Sect. 9, of this Book). And in the same manner you may draw *Oleum*, seu *Spiritus Rosarum rubrarum*, Oyl or Spirit of red Roses.

Salmon.) It is a great Cephalick and Cordial; It cheers and recreates the Animal and Vital Spirits, quickens the Senses, and revives the heart, exhilarates the mind, expells Melancholy, is wonderful against all fainting and swooning fits, and, in a word, performs whatever any Cordial can do. Dose ʒ gut. ij. ad vj.—1678. Salmon. *London Dispensatory*. . . Lib. IV. Cap. 3, p. 465, col. 1. See too the Oyls of Roses, Omphacine and Compleat, p. 726.

*What veins to bleed in.*

Egerton MS 2572 (Statutes of the Company of Barbers and Surgeons of York), leaf 69.

To knowe the vaynes to let blode one.

Only certain veins should be bled from.	3e that wyH lette gude men blode, And vaynes wyth all 3owre lynes fode, Some vaynes, vse 3e, And many other lette 3e be.	4
	Therefore nowe wyH I them schawe, <sup>1</sup> And tell 3owe them apone a rawe, And where they lye, euer ylke ane, <sup>2</sup> And for what thyng they shall be tane. <sup>3</sup>	8
	Ilke a mane hath xxx and thre: Lythe <sup>3</sup> and I shall tell them the; Some er abowne, and some benethe; Lithe, <sup>3</sup> and thowe shall knowe them othe <sup>4</sup> :	12
	Behynde the heres, fyndes thowe twa; If thowe lett blode of tha, <sup>5</sup> His syght shall neuer fale, And heles of torne-seke, and of scale.	16
2 behind the ears,	Two at the templys shall nocht be leuyde, [leaf 69, back] For werke and stangynge of the he[ad].	
1 amid the fore- head,	In the myddis the forehede, fyndis thowe ane, <sup>3</sup> For lepir and sausefeme shall be tane. <sup>2</sup>	20
1 under the nose,	Vndir the nose lyes a wayne, There-wythe shall the frensi <sup>6</sup> be sclayne, And the gome rosage alwa <sup>7</sup> ; And when the eien <sup>8</sup> tholis wa, <sup>7</sup>	24
1 on each side the nose, by the eye; (3)	Apone the nose, fast by thy ne, <sup>9</sup> Schall thowe lete blode, if thowe be ale <sup>10</sup> ; For yH blode and the scome, Then shall thowe hele them all and some.	28
2 in the neck- holes,	Two in the neke holes shall thowe fynde, For lepir and for stratnes of wynde.	
2 in each lip, (4)	Two vaynes er in ether lippe; Those wyH I nocht thowe ouer lyppe	32

<sup>1</sup> MS schewa. The copier has altered the dialect forms in many words. We don't change all back.

<sup>2</sup> MS one, tone, altering the dialect; *tane* is 'taken.'

<sup>3</sup> Heton <sup>4</sup> easily

<sup>5</sup> MS *two, also*, altering the dialect: see *the*, l. 33.

<sup>6</sup> MS *aroud*

<sup>7</sup> MS *alwa*, *wo*, changing the dialect. See *we* in l. 52. *tholis* is 'suffers.'

<sup>8</sup> MS *euen*. <sup>9</sup> *thyn a*, *thine eye* <sup>10</sup> *aly*, *clever*.

Tyff oppyne <sup>1</sup> whene the mouthe is flane, <sup>2</sup> And other euels euer ilke ana. Vndir the tonge, two, seys <sup>3</sup> thowe lye, For euyl of tongis and awynayay. <sup>4</sup>	36	2 under the tongue.
Nowe benethe <sup>5</sup> wyff I ga, So that thowe may knawe all tha <sup>6</sup> ; Ilke man that is on life, In his arme hath vaynes fyfe :	40	5 in each arm, (10)
Abowne the hede he behovis them blede, Whene the hede hath ony nede ; For all thy body, in myddis the Arme ; Beneth, when y <sup>7</sup> leuer takis harme.	44	
Above y <sup>7</sup> thovme is the make ; That shaft thowe take for the cardiaka. Thy ryght hande has I wane, <sup>7</sup> in fay, Thy litill fynger hath yt aye.	(leaf 70) 48	1 in the right hand,
When the leuer hath ony qwyke, In the left hande for the mylts ; Wythin the Ankeles, domistica, When the bledir hath ony wa ;	52	1 in the left hand, 1 inside each ankle, (2)
Wythout the Ankeles, Siatica, For siatica, that shaft thowe ta ; And wemen that hath tynt ther floures, Lete them blede in there bowres.	56	1 in women's bowres. (30 in all.)
[? poem incomplete]		

These lines are a metrical version of the prose descriptions (in circles) of the drawing of *Homo Venorum* on leaf 50, a naked man with vermilion direction-lines running from his bleeding-points. These lines—each with its circular label—start from the head :

- (1, 2) Be-hynde þ<sup>8</sup> eres er twa vayns þat<sup>9</sup> er gude to be opynd for turnseke and for scall, & also for euyl sight.
- (3, 4) þe vayns in þe tempyls of þe hede, for warkyng & stangyng<sup>10</sup> in þe hede ; & also it wyll lett<sup>11</sup> þe sheddyng of þe schett.
- (5) þe vayn in þe forhed is calde 'ariote,' to opyn for þe fransy & sauce-flemyng<sup>12</sup> in the face, and also for þe emoraudes & for lunatikus.
- (6, 7) Opyn þe vayn on þe nese, fast by the eghe, for bleryd eghen, & for þe scome of mense eghen, & dymnes of þama.
- (8) Vndyr þe nese, on þe end þerof, lyggys a vayn þat is gud to oppyne for þe gut roset, & for þe fransy in þe heff.

<sup>1</sup> overleap to open, omit to bleed from.    <sup>2</sup> ? MS slane.    <sup>3</sup> seest  
<sup>4</sup> quinsy.    <sup>5</sup> MS beneath benethe    <sup>6</sup> MS thay    <sup>7</sup> One vein.

- (9, 10) Twa vayns er in þe lippis,<sup>1</sup> þat er gude to be opynd when þe mouth es flayne wyth abundans of blude. [*left col.*]
- (11) It es gude for to blede on þe tonge for þe sqvnesy, and for bolny[n]g [swelling] of þe tonge. [*right col.*]
- (12, 13) In þe nek hole er ij vayns þat er gude to opyne for leper and for straytnes of wynde. [*right col.*] (*See Poem, l. 29.*)
- (14, 15) Opyn þe hed vayns þat es called cyphalica, and lyggis hiest in þe arme, for clensyng of þe hede and of þe brayne. [*left col.*]
- (16) þe vayne of þe hert es callyd cardiaca,<sup>2</sup> for rysyng at þe hert, & for þe impostoum [f] of spirituale membris. [*left col.*]
- (17, 18) þe vayn of þe lyuer þat lyggis beneth in þe arme, & es called basilica, for yuell of þe lyuer and splene. [*left col.*]
- (19, 20) It es better to blede on þe purpur vayn in þe left arme in wynter, þan on þe right arme, and eyuer so.
- (21) þe vayne in þe bake, it es gud to be opynd for þe purgyeng of melancolya. [*right col.*] (*Not in the Poem.*)
- (22, 23) It es gud to blede on þe left hande for þe passyone and deses of þe mylt & oder membris. [*right col.*]
- (24, 25) þe vayns betwix þe lityll fynger & þe next fynger es gude to opyn for þe litarge and for ylle eghen. [*left col.*]
- (26, 27) þe vayne betwyx þe fyngers & þe thombe es gud to be opyd for het of warke in þe swldys & migran in þe heue[de].
- (28) þe vayne on þe pyntyl es gude to blede for hete & scaldyng þerof, and for bolny[n]g or bryssyng þerof. [*middle.*]
- (29, 30) þe vayn vnder þe ankle within þe fute, þat es called domestica, for þe bledder, and for yuelle humora.
- (31, 32) Opyn þe vayn vnder þe ankylle with-owten, þat es callyd saluatica, for þe sciaticke and for þe emorodya.

<sup>1</sup> The Poem above puts 2 veins in each lip (line 31), and two under the tongue (l. 38); but has only 1 temple vein, and no back vein.

<sup>2</sup> See the Poem, l. 46.

## X.

PAYMENTS BY HENRY VIII AND PRINCESS MARY,  
TO DOCTORS, &c. OTHER THAN THOS. VICARY,  
IN 1517—1543.

We could not find Vicary's name in the Harl. MS. 21,481  
(Henry VIII's Accounts 1509-1518), leaf 257, at foot.

ib. leaf 263 [July 1] a° ix<sup>mo</sup> (1517).

Wedenysday at Grenewycha.

Item to Doctour Vernando de Victoria, phe-  
sicion with the queenes grace, for his half  
yeres wages, due vnto hym at his mydsomer } xxxiiij li. vj s. viij d  
last passed ... .. }

leaf 266. Quarter Wages due at Michellmas, anno ix° (1517).

Item for Pyers, barbour, wages <sup>1</sup>	...	...	lxvj s. viij d.
Item for Pero, the frenshe coke, wages	...	...	lxvj s. viij d.
Item for Massy, barbour, wages	...	...	lxvj s. viij d.

leaf 271. Anno ix<sup>mo</sup>, xxv<sup>to</sup> die Octobris (1517).

[back] Item to the Prior of saint bartilmewe, opon a }  
warrante towards the making of the manour } M ti  
of Newe Hall in Essex<sup>2</sup> ... .. }

<sup>1</sup> The December (1517) wages are on leaf 276, back. The Easter (1518) ones on leaf 286.

<sup>2</sup> New Hall is 1½ miles N.W. of Boreham (which is 3½ miles N.E. from Chelmsford), and stands a mile back from the road. Its fine old avenue of trees, nearly a mile long, is now much curtailed. It was probably built about 1500, was soon after owned by Sir Thos. Boleyn, Q. Anne B.'s father, and past from him to Henry VIII about 1517. He made it a Royal Residence—one of the grandest in the kingdom—called it *Beaulieu*, and in 1524 celebrated the Feast of St. George there (Hall's *Chronicle*, The .xvi. yere, p. 677, ed. 1809). He enlarged the building. His arms are still over a door at the back of the Hall, with a Latin inscription saying that 'K. Hen. VIII, renowned in arms, executed this sumptuous building.' Q. Mary lived there several years before her accession. Q. Eliz. also enlarged New Hall: her arms, with an Italian inscription, are still over the entrance door. The Palace consisted of 2 large quadrangles, with all necessary offices. It had a most splendid chapel, with a grand East window, which is now in St. Margaret's, Westminster. This window was originally meant as a present from the magistrates of Dordt in Holland, to Hen. VII. Perhaps about a fifth of the original building is left

232 App. X. *Payments to Doctors, &c.; not to Vicary.*

Henry VIII's New Year's Gifts in 1518.

Harl. MS. 21,481, leaf 279.

Fryday, Newyeres day, primo die Januarij, anno ix<sup>o</sup> (1518).

Item to Doctor taillour seruaunt	...	...	...	xx. s.
Item to master Chambre [Henry's physician] seruaunt	...	...	...	xx. s.
Item to Doctor Fairfax, for a pricksonge boke	...	...	...	xx. li.
[back] Item to the blynde poyete	...	...	...	Cs.

leaf 282. Tewesday at Wyndesore, Candelmas Day  
(2 Febr. 1518).

Item to Doctor Vernando, p <sup>r</sup> quenes Fesicion,	}	lxvj li. xiiij s. iiij d.
opon <sup>d</sup> a Warrants for transporting his wyf oute of Spaigne into England		

leaf 284, back. Primo die Marcij a<sup>o</sup> ix<sup>mo</sup> at Wyndesore (1518).

Item to Doctor Farnando, the quenes phisicion,	}	xxxiiij li. vj s. viij d.
for his half yerres wages due primo die marcij,		
anno ix <sup>mo</sup> ... ..		

X<sup>o</sup> die Maij anno ix<sup>mo</sup> (1517) Sonday at Richemounte.

✓ Item to Richard Pynson <sup>1</sup> opon <sup>d</sup> a warrant for	}	li xiijs iiij d.
prentying of certan <sup>d</sup> bokes concernyng the		
kinges subsidye ... ..		

Vicary's name does not occur in *The Privy Purse Expenses of King Henry the Eighth*, from Nov. 1529 to Dec. 1532, ed. (Sir) N. Harris Nicolas, 1827, though those of Henry's Physicians and Apothecary do. See for Dr. Chambers, p. 194, 243; for Dr. Butts, p. 262, 305; for Dr. Bartelot, p. 146; † Dr. Goodryke, p. 8; Dr. Nicholas (who attended Wolsey in his last illness), p. 192.

For payments of the bills of Cuthberd, the king's apothecary, see p. 44, 124, 165, 203, 251. See also Master John, the apothecary, p. 147; and the Sergeant Apothecary, p. 79, and 146 (July 11, 1531: 'paied to Jacson for certeyne gloves fetched by the sergeant Apoticary, iiij s. x d.').

in the present large mansion, a red brick building in the Tudor style, with stone facings. The old hall is still intact, and is used as a Chapel. It measures 50 ft. by 20, and is 45 ft. high. New Hall is now a Roman-Catholic school or training-college, founded by some nuns of the Order of the Holy Sepulchre, who took refuge there when driven from Liège by the first Revolution in 1793.—Durrant's *Handbook for Essex*, ed. W. H. Utley, p. 48-50.

<sup>1</sup> 'William Copland of London, merchaunt,' gets £380 at Christmas 1517, leaf 277, back, 'for certan<sup>d</sup> stuf by him provided for the manour of New-Hall, & also for certan<sup>d</sup> Inuelles by hym delyuerd to the kinges grace.' Was he any relation of the printers, Robert and William Copland?

## App. X. *Payments to Doctors, &c.; not to Vicary.* 233

The Surgery entries are only :

- p. 67. Aug. 19, 1530. "Item the same daye to the frenche fletcher in Rewarde towards his Surgery ... .. xl. s."
- p. 128. April 15, 1531. "Item the same daye paid to a surgeon that heled litle guilliam [one of the King's crossbow makers] xl. s."
- p. 245. 17 Aug. 1532. "Item the same daye paid to graunde guilliam<sup>1</sup> [another cross-bow maker] by the kinges commaunde-ment, for his surgery, when he was syke at London ... xxx s."

In Madden's *Privy Purse Expenses of the Princess* (afterwards Queen) *Mary*, Dec. 1536-44 (London, 1831), Dr. Owen appears as Physician both to her and Prince Edward :

- p. 52. Jan. 1537-8. "Item to Doctour Owen, the Prince phesicion, in likewise [a Dublet clothe of Satten] xxiiij s."

Then on p. 114, in April 1543, "Item, payed to Doctour owen, x li;" and afterwards, 3 entries of payments to messengers sent for him :

- (p. 129. Sept. 1543) "Item to crabtre for goyng to Doctour owin, from grafton to Dunstable ... .. xiiij d."
- (p. 133. Oct. 1543) "Item paid to Crabbetre for his Costes, sent vnto Doctour owen) ... .. xij d."
- (p. 134. Oct. 1543) "Item geuen to nycholas, grome of the Stable, sent from grafton to Doctour owen) ... .. ij s."

And on p. 164, Sept. 1544, Mrs. Owen's servant gets 5s. for bringing the Princess a present.

Dr. Michael<sup>2</sup> († Delasco) was another Physician of the Princess, and there are several entries relating to him, and gifts of money to (?) his wife, Mrs. Mary.

<sup>1</sup> Item, for Guiliam le Craunt, crossbowmaker, x s. Payments on 1 April, anno xxxj Hen. VIII [A.D. 1539], Arundel MS. 97, leaf 72, at foot. Another payment to him of x s. iiij d. in May, anno xxxj (1539), ff. 75; others elsewhere, and another of ix s. viij d. in Feb. 1540, ff. 118.

<sup>2</sup> The same instrument which appoints John de Sodo apothecary to the Princess (*Rymer*, xiv. p. 578), dated 29th Jan. 1537, also nominates *Michael Delasco*, "in Medicinis Doctorem" to be her Physician, with a salary of 100 marks sterling per annum; and in the "Book of Payments" his name occurs in Midsommer, 1539, as "phesicion to the Lady Marye," with the quarterly allowance of 16l. 13s. 4d. Mrs. Mary Mychaell is presumed to be his wife; and it is probably her picture that occurs in the list of those at Westminster (*M.S. Harl.* 1419, A). She appears in the roll of New Year's gifts, 1556, and presents "twelve pistyllets," which are valued at 3l. 14s., and receives in return a gilt jug. Quære, whether the above Michael Delasco be the same with Michael de Securis, a physician "in partibus Normannia oriundus," who receives letters of naturalization, dated 28th Nov., 25 Hen. VIII, 1533.—*Rymer's Coll.*, vol. iv. MS. Addit. 4622.—*Madden*, p. 219, col. 2.



234 App. X. *Payments to Doctors, &c.; not to Vicary.*

- p. 28. May, 1537. Item, for j hoggeshed wyne for Doctour mighell ... .. xxxj s. viij d.  
 p. 30. 1537, June 30. Item, payd for the hyre of a Barge for Doctour mychaell, and m<sup>r</sup> Iohn poticary, commyng to my lades grace, beyng sicke ... .. vij s. vj d.  
 p. 36. Aug. 1537. Item, geuen) to Cristofer Wright, sent vnto Doctour michael ... .. v s.  
 p. 37. Aug. 1537. Item, geuen) to Thomas guye, sent vnto Doctour michael ... .. v s.  
 p. 45. Nov. 1537. Item geuen) at the Cristenyng of Doctour mychaell Childe, a Salt, siluer and gilt, my ladies [grace] being godmother to the same: price ... .. lxxvj s. viij d.  
 Item geuen) to the mydwylfe and the norce ... .. xij s. vj d.

(There are many payments (as in Hen. VIII's book) to midwives and nurses.)

Dr. Nicholas, who attended Henry VIII and Wolsey (see above), is another Physician who, in April 1543, bleeds the Princess Mary, as 'one Harry does her women and her: p. 113—

- Item, geuen) to Doctour nicholas, letting my ladies grace Blode xx s.  
 Item, geuen) to one Harry, letting my ladies women Blode<sup>1</sup> x s.  
 p. 123. July 1543. Item, to Harry, surgion, for letting of hir grace blood ... .. xx s.  
 Item, paid to ferrys,<sup>2</sup> the kinges surgion) ... .. x s.

Dr. Nicholas was also sent for to the Princess in 1543; and he attended the laundress at Greenwich:

- p. 107. Jan. 1543. "Item, paid to Crabtre, sent vpon) my ladies busynes for Doctour Nycholas ... .. iij s."  
 p. 121. June 1543. "Item, to Doctour Nicolas for comyng to the Launder, beyng seek at grenewich ... .. x s."  
 p. 121. June 1543. "Item, to one of the gromes, for goying for Doctour Nicholas ... .. xx d."

In July 1526, Dr. Wootton was Dean of the Princess's Chapel, and her Physician (Harl. MS. 6807, leaf 3); and at a later period Dr. Fynch is her Physician, when she is in the Marches of Wales (MS. Cott. Appendix xxix, leaf 51).—*Madden*, p. xxxix, xl

<sup>1</sup> Below is Item, paid for a payr of Shoes for Jane the sole ... .. vj d.  
 Item, to the Barbour for shaving hir hed ... .. iij d.  
 and on p. 111, March 1543. 'Item to [the] Barbour for shaving of Jany's hed, iij d.'

<sup>2</sup> See him in Holbein's picture, no. 8, the right-hand head in the lower row of the kneelers. 'He receives 0 s. per quarter in the King's Household Book, 1542-4, in Sir Tho. Phillipps's collection.'—*Madden*.

## App. X. *Payments to a Surgeon and Dr. Huyck.* 235

Christopher the Surgeon<sup>1</sup> (*not* Christopher Bradley, keeper of the Princess's greyhounds,) is paid four times for bleeding her:

- p. 30. June 1537. "Item, payed to Cristofer, who dyd let my ladies grace Bludde ... .. xx s."
- p. 74. July 1538. "Item, geuen to one Cristofer, a surgion, letting my ladies grace Blood ... .. xxij s. vj d."
- p. 89. April 1540. "Item, geuen to Cristofer the Surgion, letting my lady maryes grace blode ... .. xxij s. vj d."
- p. 90. May 1540. "Item, geuen to Cristofer the Surgion, comyng from London to tittenhanger<sup>2</sup>, to lett my ladies grace Bloode ... .. xxij s. vj d."

Exch. Q. R. Anc. Misc. Y, (71 Mary, A.D. 1553-4,) ff. 16, in a List of the Members of the Household, are

### Physicians

Thomas Hues  
George Owen  
Thomas Wendie

† Rowland

### Potecary

John Savarye ./

## Dr. Robert Huyck's Annuities of £50 and £100.

Tellers' Roll, No. 110.

Mich. 4-5 Elizabeth (1562).

- m. 46<sup>a</sup> Roberto Huyck, Doctori Medicine, de annuitate sua ad lli. per annum, sibi debita pro tribus quarteriis anni finitis ad festum Sancti Michaelis Archangeli, Anno iiii<sup>o</sup> Elizabethæ Regine, denariis receptis per Marke Steward xxxvij li. x s.
- m. 51. Also another quarter's payment to him at Christmas 15<sup>o</sup> 10<sup>o</sup>
- ib. He also had another annuity of £100, a quarter's payment of which was made at Christmas. —

<sup>1</sup> ? The Christopher Samon of Holbein's Picture.

<sup>2</sup> The hamlet of Tittenhanger in Hertfordshire is 3 miles South of St. Alban's, and 17½ from London. Henry VIII and Queen Katherine staid at Tittenhanger Park in 1528, during the sweating sickness in London. The Colne flows along its western boundary.—Thorne, *Environs of London*, under 'London Colney.'

## XI.

## PAY OF ARMY AND NAVY SURGEONS TO HEN. VIII.

(*t. Hen. VIII. Royal MS. 7 P. XIV, art. 24, leaf 188 bk.*)

A Declaracion made by Iohn Ienyns, of all the Charges of the Kynges Armye Roiall nowe beyng on the See, Aswell in his Navye and Fleets Roiall, beyng then in the Retynue of my Lord Admyraill, As in the Retynue of Sir William Fitz-William, knyght, Vice-Admyraill; that is to wete, for come hooles moneth, Accomptyng xxviij daies for the moneth, as here after foloweth /

[in margin] The Henry grace de dieu, M<sup>r</sup> and VC ton.

Sir Iohn Walloppe and sir Iohn Wyseman, Capitaynes, for theirs Dyettes for the said moneth	iiij ti iiij s.	}	Somme of men ix C vij
Robert Basford and Isley, pety Capiteynes, either of theym at xij d by the day	lvj s.		
Souldiours — CCCL —	iiij vij ti x s	}	of money CCxlvj ti xiiij s ij d
Thomas Spert, Maister —	v s		
Maryners — VC —	Cxxv ti		
Gonners — 1 —	xij ti x s		
Dedesharys — xlvj —	xj ti x s		
Rewardec to gonners —	iiij ti x s x d	}	
Surgeons — ij —	xxiiij s iiij d		

The other crews are given at length; but we just state the number of tons, Surgeons—2 at 23s. 4d. a month, and 19 at 10s.—and men (soldiers, mariners, &c.) in each:

- 'The new Spanyard' 260 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 182 men.
- 'The Mary Rooce' 600 ton, 2 Surgeons at 23s. 4d., 405 men.
- 'The great Galey' 700 ton, 2 Surgeons at 23s. 4d., 454 men.
- 'The Peter Pomegarnade' 400 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 304 men.
- 'The Barbara' 400 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 303 men.
- 'The Iohn Baptist' 400 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 303 men.
- 'The greates Nicholas' 400 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 303 men.
- 'The Mary Jamys' 300 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 253 men.

App. XI. *H. VIII's Army & Navy Surgeons' pay.* 237

- 'The Mary George' 300 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 193 men.
  - 'The great Barke' 400 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 213 men.
  - 'The lesse Barke' 240 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 193 men.
  - 'The new Barke callid the Mynyon' 160 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 133 men.
  - 'The Swepestake' 80 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 60 men.
  - 'The Swalowe' 80 tons, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 60 men.
  - 'The Kateryne Galey' 80 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 63 men.
  - 'The Galey Foyste': no tonnage or Surgeon named; 62 men.
  - 'The Mary Gonson' 460 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 303 men.
  - 'The Nicholas Draper' 180 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 123 men.
  - 'The Margarete Bonaventure' 180 ton, no Surgeon, 122 men.
  - 'The Mighell Fowler' 40 ton, no Surgeon, 41 men.
  - 'The Cryste' 180 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 123 men.
  - 'Sir Robert Iohns Shippe' 160 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 143 men.
  - 'The Mary Harper' 80 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 73 men.
  - 'My Lord Admiralles Bark' 80 ton, 1 Surgeon at 10s., 53 men.
- 



Elizabethan Ships, Whale, and Dolphin from Christopher Saxton's Maps, 1578-9.  
(From the *Fall Mall Gazette* blocks.)

## XII.

HENRY VIII'S PAYMENTS TO HANS HOLBEIN,<sup>1</sup> 1538-1541,  
AND TO PLAYERS, MUSICIANS, &c.*From the Arundel MS. 97, in the British Museum.*

## Quarter's Wages, Lady Day, 1538.

(lf. 11) Item, for Hans Holben, paynter<sup>2</sup> ... .. vij ti x s

(lf. 26, bk.) Yet quarter Wages at Midsomer a° xxx° (1538)

Item, for Hans Holbyn, paynter, for one hole yeres annuitie  
advaunced to him beforehand, the same yere to be accompt- } xxx ti  
edde from our ladye dey last past [1538], the somme of / }

## Yet paymentes in Decembre, anno xxx° (1538).

(lf. 48) Item, payde to Hans Holbyn, one of the kingis payn- }  
ters, by the kingis commaundement, certefyed by my lorde }  
pryviscales lettre, x ti for his costes & charges at this tyme } x ti  
sent abowte certeyn his graces affaires into the parties of }  
High Burgony, by way of his graces rewardes }

(lf. 67, bk.) Yet Quarter Wages at our Lady day a° xxx° (1539)

Item, for Hans Holbyn, paynter ... nihil, quia prius per warranto

(lf. 81, bk.) Yet quarter wages in June A° xxxj° (1539)

Item, for Hans Holbyn, paynter ... .. vij ti x s

## Michaelmas, 1539.

(lf. 90) Item, Paide by the Kyngis highnes commaundement, }  
certified by my Lord Pryviscales lettres, to Hans Hol- }  
benne, paynter, in the advauncement of his hole yeres }  
wages beforehande, after the rate of xxx ti by yere, which } xxx ti  
yeres advauncement is to be accompted from this present }  
Michaelmas [1539], and shall ende vltimo Septembris }  
next commyng, the somme of }<sup>1</sup> These have been printed before (we find) in the *Archæologia* and in Wornum's *Life of Holbein*: perhaps elsewhere too.<sup>2</sup> See the payments to Anthony Toto and Bartilmewe Penn, paynters, xij li, x s (lf. 81, bk.), &c., in note 3 on p. 101, 117, above.

App. XII. *Henry VIII's Payments to Holbein.* 239

(lf. 93, bk.) Yet quarter Wagis [in Septembre] Anno xxxj (1539)

Item, for Hans Holben, paynter ... .. vij ti x s

(lf. 107) Yet quarter Wagis at Cristmas A° xxxj° (1539)

Item, for Hans Holbyn, paynter, ... .. vij ti x s

(lf. 125) Yet quarter Wagis at our lady day A° xxxj° (1540)

Item, for Hans Holben, paynter ... .. vij ti x s

Yet quarter wagis, at midsomer, A° xxxij° (1540.)

(lf. 137, bk.) Item, for Hans Holben, paynter ... .. vij ti x s

Yet paymentes, in Septembre, A° xxxij° (1540.)

(lf. 147) Item, paid to Hans Holbyn, the kinges paynter, in  
aduancement of his wagis for one half yere beforehande; } xv ti  
the same half yere accompted and reconned, fromme }  
Michaelmas last paste [1540], the somme of

Yet quarter wagis at michaelmas, a° xxxij° (1540.)

(lf. 151) Item, for Hans Holbyn, paynter,—nil, quia prius, per  
warranto

Quarter's Wages, Christmas, 1540.

(lf. 163) Item, for Hans Holbyn, paynter, wagis—nil, quia prius per  
manibus

Yet paymentis in Marche, Anno xxxij° (1541)

(lf. 179) Item, paid to Hans Holben, the kinges painter, in  
aduancement of his half yeres wagis beforehande, after  
the rate of xxx ti by yere, which half yere is accompted to } xv ti  
beginne primo Aprilis, anno xxxij° [1541] domini Regis  
nunc / and shall ende vltimo Septembris then next ensuyng, }  
the somme of

Yet quarter Wagis at our Ladyday, A° xxxij° (1541.)

(lf. 181, bk.) Item, for Hans Holben, paynter, wagis—nil, quia prius  
[per] manibus

Yet quarter Wagis at midsomer, A° xxxij° (1541.)

(lf. 195) Item, for Hans Holbyn, paynter—nil, quia prius.

[Mr. Fenwick says there are no payments to Holbein in the  
Phillips MS, A.D. 1542-3, at Cheltenham.]

240 App. XII. *Hen. VIII's Payments to Players, &c.*

Some Payments to Players, &c.

(lf. 53) Rewardes geuen on Wensday New Yeres day at Grenewiche, a° vt supra (xxx°, 1539).

(lf. 55, bk.) Item, to y<sup>e</sup> *kinges* players for playng before y<sup>e</sup> king this *Christemas* ... .. vj ti xiijs iiij d

(lf. 56) Item, to y<sup>e</sup> *quenes* players for playng before y<sup>e</sup> king this *Cristemas* ... .. iiij ti

Item, to the Princes pleyours for pleyng before the kinge this *Christemas* by y<sup>e</sup> *kinges* commaundement ... .. iiij ti

(lf. 68, bk.) Item, for Iohn Slye, pleyour ( $\frac{1}{4}$  years wages) xxxiij s iiij d

Rewardes geuen on Thursday, Newyeres day, at Grenewiche, as hathe be accustomed. Anno tricesimo primo (1540).

[*Arundel MS. 97, Brit. Mus.*]

(lf. 108) Item, to *master* Crane, for playng before y<sup>e</sup> king with the children ... .. vj ti xiijs iiij d

(lf. 110, bk.) Item to y<sup>e</sup> *kingis* players, for playng before y<sup>e</sup> king this *Cristmas* [1539] ... .. vj ti xiijs iiij d

(lf. 111) Item, to the *Quenes* players, for playing before y<sup>e</sup> kinge iiij ti

Item, to the *Princis* players, for playng before y<sup>e</sup> kinge ... iiij ti

(lf. 125, bk. : 25 March, 1540) Item for Iohn Slye, pleyour  
xxxij s iiij d

Rewardes geuen on Saturday, Newyeres day, at Hampton-courte, Anno xxxij° (1541).

(lf. 164, bk.) Item, to *Master* Crane, for playng before the king with the children of the chappell, in rewarde ... vj ti xiijs iiij d

(lf. 167, bk.) Item, to the *kingis* players, in rewarde vj ti xiijs iiij d

Item, to the *Quenes* players, in rewarde ... .. iiij ti

Item, for the *princes* players, in rewarde ... .. iiij ti

(lf. 181, bk. : Lady Day, 1541) Item, for Robert Hinscot,<sup>1</sup> George Birche, & Richard Parloo, players ... .. xxxiij s iiij d

(lf. 194, bk. : Midst. 1541) Item, for Robert Hinscot,<sup>1</sup> George Birche, & Richard Parow, players ... .. xxxiij s iiij d

Some New Year's Gifts to Minstrells, &c. 1540-1.

1 Jan. 1540.

(lf. 108) Item, to Thomas Evans / Thomas Bowmān & Andrewe Newmān / the *Quenes* minstrelles, in rewarde ... .. xls

1 Jan. 1541.

(lf. 164, bk.) Item, to Thomas Evans, William More, and Andrewe Newmān the *Queen's* minstrellis, in rewarde ... .. xxxs

<sup>1</sup> This may be Hinscoe.

App. XII. *Henry VIII's private Band*, 1540-1. 241

- (lf. 164, bk.) Item, to Lewes de Basson, Anthony de Basson,  
& Baptist de Basson, Jasper de Basson, John de Basson,  
the kingis minstrellis, by the kingis commaundement cer- } iiij li  
tified by maister Charles Hawarde  
(lf. 167, bk.) Item, to Guilliam de Trosshes, Guilliam dufaute, } iiij li  
and Petie John, minstrellis, in rewarde<sup>1</sup>

*Henry VIII's private Band in 1540-1.*

[As a sample of the Monthly Payments to the Band all thro' the Arundel MS. 97, we take those of March, an. xxxj, 1540; and as a specimen of the New Year's Gifts to them, those of Jan. 1, 1541. Note Anthony 'Mary,' the sackbut-player; and the Italian fiddlers or violists at the end.]

(lf. 122, bk.) Yet Paymentes in Marche, Anno xxxj\* (1540).

Item, for xij Trumpetters, wagis in xvj d a dey, eueryon.	xxiiij li
Item, for fyve other Trumpeters, in viij d a dey, eueryon	... v li
Item, for Philip Welder, luter, wagis	... lxxvj s viij d
Item, for Petir Welder, luter, wagis	... xxxj s
Item, for Iohn Seuernake, Rebeke, wagis	... nil
Item, for Thomas Evans, Rebeke, wagis	... xxs viij d
Item, for William More, Harper, wagis	... xxxj s
Item, for Thomas Bowman, minstrell	... xxs viij d
Item, for Andrewe Newman, the wayte	... xs iiij d
Item, for Arthur Dewes, luter, wagis	... xs iiij d
Item, for Hans Highorne, Viall, wagis	... xxxiijs iiij d
Item, for Hans Hosenet, Viall, wagis	... xxxiijs iiij d
Item, for Marke Anthony, Sagbut	... xls
Item, for Pilligrine, sagbut, wagis	... xls
Item, for Nicholas Vorcifall, sagbut	... lvs vj d
Item, for Guilliam Duwayte, minstrell	... lijs iiij d
Item, for Guilliam de Trosshes, minstrell	... lijs iiij d
Item, for Iohn Buntanus, tabret	... xls iiij d
Item, for the Children of the Chapell, bordwagis	... xxvj s viij d

- <sup>1</sup> Item, to a womā that gave a booke [tablet] of wax ... xs  
Item, to diuerse pore mēn, women and children, that brought  
capons, hennes, egges, bookes of waxe, and other trifelles: in } lxxiijs  
rewarde } liij d  
Item, to Robert Morebus, that gave the kinge a purse withe  
bottonnes of golde } vjs viij d  
Item, to Francis, a straunger that gave y<sup>e</sup> king perfumed gloves } xls  
and other perfumes /. }  
Item, to Cornelis Smith, that gave a basket of Iron ... vjs viij d  
VICARY.



242 App. XII. *Henry VIII's Musicians, 1540-1.*

(lf. 123) Item, for Burtill and Hans, dromslades	...	xxxij s	iiij d
Item, for Hans quere, dromslade	...	xx s	vij d
Item, for Iohn Pretre, fyfer, wakis	...	xx s	vij d
Item, for Nicholas Andrewe, Sagbut	...	xx s	vij d
Item, for Anthony Symon, Sagbut	...	xx s	vij d
Item, for Anthony Mary, Sagbut <sup>1</sup>	...	xli s	iiij d

(lf. 164, bk.) Rewardes geuen on Saturday, Newyeres day, at Hamptoncourte, Anno xxxij<sup>o</sup> (1541).

Item, to the Kinges Trumpeters, in rewarde	...	v li
Item, to the Sagbuttes, in rewarde	...	ls
Item, to the Kinges Drumslades, in rewarde	...	xx s
Item, to the stille minstrelles, <sup>2</sup> in rewarde	...	iiij li
Item, to the newe Sagbuttes, in rewarde <sup>3</sup>	...	iiij li

(lf. 165) Item, to Vincent da Venitia, Alexandro da Venitia, Ambroso da Milano, Albertus da Venitia, Ivam Maria da Cramona, and Anthony de Romano, the Kinges Vialles, by like commaundement, certified by maister Charles Hawarde } iiij li

<sup>1</sup> Item, for sir Iohn Wolf, prest, devisowr of herbers ... xx s

Item, for Mathewe de Iohna, caster of the barr ... xx s viij s

<sup>2</sup> ? What was a still Minstrel? Surely not one who didn't sing.

<sup>3</sup> See the Queen's and King's Minstrels, above.



[From  
Andrew  
Boorde,  
p. 125.]

## XIII.

## THE 185 FREEMEN OF THE BARBER-SURGEONS' COMPANY,

THE MOST NUMEROUS IN LONDON, IN 1537,

WITH THE NUMBERS OF THE OTHER 28 CITY COMPANIES.

IN order to show that the Barbers' (or Barber-Surgeons') Company was—even before its statutory union with the Surgeons—the strongest Livery Company in the City of London, the following list of its 185 Members has been copied from the Return (in the Record Office) of all the Companies' members, in 1537, the year in which Thomas Lewyn was sheriff, with Sir John Gresham, while Sir Richard Gresham was Lord Mayor (Stow, *Survey*, p. 445, ed. 1598; p. 532, ed. 1603).

The Barber-Surgeons are 185 strong. Then come the Skinners, 151; the Haberdashers, 120; the Merchant-Tailors are 7th, with their 96; the Tilers (a Rafe Burbage among them) have 90; while the others dwindle away so that the Barbers make half-a-dozen (or more) of them. The point of numbers is of moment, not only as witnessing the importance of the Company to which Vicary belonged, but also the share which the Barbers took in the civic processions, and the number of armed men they could produce when called on.

[A.D. 1537.<sup>1</sup>] Chapter-House Books B 1.

The seuerall compaynes of all the Mysteryes, Craftes and occupacionnes within the Cytie of London, with the names of euery free man<sup>2</sup> beyng householder within the same / first / Mercers . .

<sup>1</sup> 'Thomas Lewyn, Shiref of London,' is 2nd of the Yrenmongers, on M. 18 of the MS.

<sup>2</sup> Among the Freemen of 'the Paynter Stayners,' is 'Agnes Best, widowe.'

244 App. XIII. *Freemen of the Barber-Surgeons, 1537.*

[leaf 21]

Barber Surgeons.

Nicholas Symson	Cristofer Samond	Thomas Mede (p. 22, bk.)
William Kyrckby	Robert Waterford 46	John Anger
*Thomas Vycars	Henry Atkyn	Thomas Worseley
John Bankes	4 Cristofer Bolling	John Gilbert 92
John Potter	Robert Stocdale (p. 23)	Cristofer Haynes
Thomas Twyn	Mathewe Iohnson 50	William Smythe
John Iohnson	7 Davy Sambroke	John Mosseley
John Holland (p. 21, bk.)	John Atkynson	William Hill 96
William Rewe	Thomas Waryn	George Wenyard
John Ayllyff	Robert Grove 54	John Barker
Edmond Harman	Robert Brownhill	William Barker
John Pen	12 William Spencer	James Wod 100
Richard Tayler	Thomas Butfilane	John Stere
Harry Carrier	Robert Forster 58	William Hetherley
Rauf Garland	Edmond Tyrell	Olyver Wilson
John Enderbye	16 John Philpott	William Grene 104
Peter Devismand	John Thowlmod	Henry Rawshold
Robert Postall	Edward Ingalby 62	Bartilmewe Dobynson
John Bird	Richard Elyott	Henry Patterson
James Tomson	20 Thomas Wilson	Philip Pegott 108
William Kydd	John Smythe	Robert Downys
John Yong	William Hiller 66	Antony Barowes
Thomas Sutton	Richard Tholmod	James Hogeson
Charles Wyght	24 John Awcetter 68	Robert Wevir 112
John Newman		John Surbut
Thomas Crome	26 Richard Sermond 69	William Sewell
	Hugh Lymcocke	John Denys
William Higges	27 John Bordman	John Page 116
John Dene	Rauf Stek 72	Robert Todwell
Thomas Surbutt	Henry Hogekeynson	John Cutberd
William Billing	30 John Tomson	John Gray
William Lyghthead	Hugh Dier	William Dauntess
John Raven	Edward Freman 76	Thomas Appilton 121
Robert Hutton	Thomas Mone	John Crayell
Henry Pemberton	34 William Yenson	Thomas Arundell
William Shirbourne	John Banester	William Iohnson 124
George Genne	William Trewise 80	Henre Adam
Thomas Iohnson	Cristofer Hungate	William Downham
Robert Spignall	38 John Hutton	Rogier Skynner
Richard Boll	John Browne	John Gerard 128
Nicholas Alcocke	John Grene 84	Richard Rogiers
William Tylley	John Tymber	Thomas Dison
John Northcote	42 John Shreue	Thomas Gylman
William Wetyngton	Thomas Staynton	Thomas Dester 132
Henry Yong	Thomas Pays 88	Edward Hewett (p. 23)

# App. XIII. *Barber-Surgeons & other Companies.* 245

John Dormot	John Robynson	152	John Edlyn	
George Batman	Richard Coley		John Samond	
Thomas Vivian	136	John West	Henry Bodeley	172
George Brightwelton	William Welfed		Thomas Stanbrige	
John Waren	John Smerthwaite		William Borrell	
John Grenway	John Lybbe	157	Richard Nicols	177
John Ball	140	George More	Edward Hughbank	
Laurens Mollyners	Thomas Burnett		John Charterane	177
John Cobbold	John Hamlyn	160	Henry Wotton	
William Draper	Richard Child		Robert Hastynges	
Richard Smythe	144	Thomas Baily	Alexander Mason	180
Robert Ledes	George Vaughan	163	Thomas Darker	
John Gamlyn	Thomas Wetyngnam		Thomas Fyshe	
Thomas Cutbert	John Bonair		Edward Rollesley	
Robert Chamber	148	Richard Cokerell	John Braswell	
Lewis Bromefeld	William Walton		William Symsyn	185
Richard Worsley	Geferey Fraunceis	168		
John Oskyn	Thomas Fayles			

It will interest some Readers to see the comparative and actual strength of the City Companies and Trades in 1537. The first column below shows how they rank in point of numbers; the second, their rank in the City. The Stationers and other trades are left out (we assume) because they were not then incorporated.

## A.D. 1537.

<i>Order by number of Members.</i>	<i>Order in the M.S. and City.</i>
1. 185 Barber-Surgeons	1. Mercers, 55
2. 151 Skinners	2. Drapers, 77
3. 120 Haberdashers	3. Merchant Tailors, 96
4. 113 Leather Sellers	4. Fishmongers, 109
5. 109 Fishmongers	5. Goldsmiths, 52
6. 99 Tallow-Chandlers	6. Grocers, 59
7. 96 Merchant Tailors	7. Salters, 40.
8. 90 Tilers	8. Vintners, 33
9. 89 Brewers	(1. Sir James Spencer, knight
10. 77 Drapers	2. Mr. Carter, King at Armes)
11. 69 Cloth Workers	9. Haberdashers, 120
12. 65 Cutlers	10. The Broiderers, 33
13. 65 Founders	11. The Paynter Stayners, 53
14. 65 Bakers	12. Bakers, 65

246 App. XIII. *London City-Companies in 1537.*

*Order by number of Members.*

15. 63 Coopers
16. 60 Sadlers
17. 59 Grocers }
18. 59 Ironmongers }
19. 56 Cordwainers
20. 55 Mercers
21. 53 Painter-Stainers
22. 52 Joiners }
23. 52 Goldsmiths }
24. 48 Armourers
25. 47 Pastelers
26. 45 Wax-Chandlers
27. 44 Fletchers
28. 43 Innholders
29. 40 Salters
30. 39 Fruiterers
31. 38 Curriers
32. 37 Freemasons
33. 33 Broiderers }
34. 33 Vintners }
35. 30 Weavers
36. 25 Plumbers }
37. 25 Blacksmiths }
38. 20 Spurriers
39. 19 Bowyers

*Order in the MS.*

13. Ironmongers, 59  
(1. William Denton, Alderman  
Thomas Lewyn, Shiref of  
London.)
14. Skinners, 151
15. Brewers, 89
16. Waxchandlers, 45
17. Cloth Workers, 69
18. Leather Sellers, 113  
(leaf 18 back, foot Lawrence  
Cornewe, sergeant)
19. Innholders, 43
20. Bowyers, 19
21. Fletchers, 44
22. Barber-Surgeons, 184
23. Plumbers, 25
24. Weavers, 30
25. Cutlers, 65
26. Sadlers, 60<sup>1</sup>
27. Cordwainers, 56
28. Curriers, 38
29. Tallow-Chandlers, 99
30. Freemasons, 37
31. Armourers, 48
32. Pastelers, 47
33. Fruiterers, 39
34. Coopers, 63
35. Founders, 65
36. Blacksmiths, 25
37. Spurriers, 20
38. Tilers, 90
39. Joiners, 52  
[No Stationers, &c.]

Readers will note that the Barber-Surgeons have only one Light-head among them (no. 31). Let us hope that their one Well-fed (no. 155) showed the condition of Vicary and all his mates, Surgeons and Barbers alike.

<sup>1</sup> The 3 last Sadlers are 'The good wife Pounde, The good wif Coupis, The good wif Yong.' The Company still has Women as Freemen.

## XIV.

## ORDINANCES

OF THE

## BARBER-SURGEONS' COMPANY OF LONDON,

SEPT. 1529,

as approv'd by the City's Committee, and submitted (on Oct. 20, 1529) to the Chancellor and Treasurer of England (Sir Thomas More, and Thomas, Duke of Norfolk), and the Chief Justices of the King's and Common Benches (Sir Jn. FitzJames and Sir Robert Norwich), and by them revised into, and ratified as, the Company's Ordinances from May 14, 1530.

(From the Guildhall *Letter-Book O*, leaves 114 back, to 118.)

WITH

LISTS OF THE WARDENS OF THE SURGEONS AND  
BARBER-SURGEONS 1488—91 (p. 260)

AND

ACTS OF THE COMMON-COUNCIL RESTORING TO THE  
BARBER-SURGEONS THEIR OLD PLACE AS 17<sup>TH</sup> IN  
THE RANK OF CITY-COMPANIES (p. 261).

248 App. XIV. *Barber-Surgeons' Draft-Rules*, 1529.

The late Mr. John Flint South, or his Guildhall copiers, seem to have mist the following Document, which is described in the 1530 Revision of it printed in South's *Craft of Surgery*, p. 339—350, as

'a Boke conteynyn dyuers Statutes, actes and Ordynauces, heretofore devysed, ordeyned and made, for the Fellowship of Barbour Surgeons, and their Successors, and for the Common weale and conservacion of the good estate of the sayd Crafts and Mysterye of Barbors Surgeons aforesayd, and for the better Rules and ordynauces of the same Fellowship, establyshed, ordeyned and used.'  
—*Id.* p. 340.

As the Act 19 Henry VII, chapter 7 (A.D. 1503),<sup>1</sup> required all Ordinances of London Gilda or Fraternities to be examin'd and approv'd by the Chancellor and Treasurer of England, and the Chief Justices of the King's Bench and Common Bench, or three of them, Vicary and his Brethren, on Oct. 20, 1529,<sup>2</sup> duly submitted the Barber-Surgeons' proposed Rules to these Officials, and on May 14, 1530, had them return'd, revised and duly ratified, with a change of the order of Clauses and of some words, a Prolog reciting the Act 19 Hen. VII, ch. 7, and the 'Boke' following, &c., and an Epilog saving the King's rights, and adding the Proviso on p. 254, below, that no Freeman of the Company might 'open any Shoppe of Barbarye' till he ownd goods of the value of 10 Marks sterling, £6 13s. 4d.

<sup>1</sup> Statutes, ed. Pulton, p. 434-5. He notes references to 28 Hen. VIII, ch. 5, and 31 Hen. VIII, ch. 41.

<sup>2</sup> The MS. and South's print give the date a year later, making the Revised Ordinances of May, 1530, recite these Draft ones as sent-in in Oct. 1530. It is plain to us that the Draft Ordinances were submitted to More and his Colleagues directly they were clear of the City Committee in Sept. 1529.

1528, Dec. 17. A Committee appointed to revise the .  
City Companies' Ordinances.

(Letter-Book O, leaf 131, back.)

A Committee of 6  
and the Common  
Clerk appointed  
to look over the

Ordinances  
granted by the  
City to City  
Companies,

with power to

revise them,

and to authorise  
all such Ordin-  
ances as they  
think reasonable.

Comune Consilium Tentum die Jouis, *videlicet*, xvij<sup>o</sup>  
die Decembris, Anno regni Regis Henrici octavi vicesimo  
[1528], in presencia Johannis Rudstone, Maioris, Brugge,  
Mylbourn, Mundy, Baldry, Seymer, Spencer, Englishe,  
Dodmer, Hardy, Pecok, Askue, Champneys, Hollys,  
Pergetour, & Waren *vicecomitis*<sup>1</sup>

Johannes Clarke, Draper  
BonJamyn Dygby, mercer  
Ricardus Fermour, Grocer  
Poule Wythypolle, merchaunt-  
tailleur

Olyver Leder, Fishemonger  
William Hampton, Skynner

with the Comen  
Clarke Attendaunt  
vpon theym/named  
and appoynted to  
peruse and oversee  
suche Bookes of Actes  
& ordynaunces as

heretofore were given and graunted by the Maier and  
Aldremen to dyuers Felishippes of this Citie / whether  
that they be good and Resonable, and ought to be con-  
fermyde by Auctoritie of Comen Counsell or not, & c. /  
That they, or the more parte of theym, haue full power  
and Auctorite to peruse, oversee, examyne, Refourme,  
& correcte suche Bookes and ordynaunces as heretofore  
were geuyn and graunted by the Maier and Aldermen  
then for the tyme beyng, to dyuerse Felishippes of this  
Citie / And alle suche of the saide Actes and Ordyn-  
aunces As vpon the examinacion and Reformation of  
theym as they shalle thynke to be good and Resonable,  
and ought to be confirmed by Auctorite of Comen  
Counsell, They soo to allowe & admytte & c. /.

/ finis.

1529, Feb. 3. The Ordinances of the Mystery of Barber-  
Surgeons of London.

(Letter-Book O, leaf 114, back.)

Where at A Comen Counselle holden yn the Guy-  
hart of the Cytie of London, the xvij<sup>th</sup> daye of December

<sup>1</sup> Raphe Waren and John Long were the Sheriffs.



250 App. XIV. *Barber-Surgeons' Draft-Rules, 1529.*

Recites the above  
Appointment of  
the Ordinance-  
Revision Com-  
mittee on Dec.  
17, 1822,

with power to  
amend all Com-  
panies' Rules,

and pass such as  
they think  
reasonable;

and that THOS.  
VICARY, and  
other Wardens  
of the Barber-  
Surgeons, on Feb.  
3, 1822, showed the  
Committee

a Book of the  
Ordinances of  
their Company;  
and the Com-  
mittee have  
revised and past  
these, in the form  
following:

yn the xx<sup>th</sup> yere of the Reigne of our soueraigne lorde,  
Kyng Henry the viij<sup>th</sup>, thiese persons foloyng, that ys  
to say / John Clerk, draper, BenJamy<sup>n</sup> Dygby, Mercer,  
Rychard Fermour, Grocer, Paul<sup>l</sup> Wythypolle, merchaunt  
Tayllour / Olyuer Leder, Fysshemonger, and Wylliam  
Hampton, Skynner, with the comen Clerke, wer named,  
appoyntid and Auctorysed, by auctorytie of the same,  
that they, or the more parte of theym, shulde have  
full power and auctorytie to peruse, ouerse, examyne,  
Refourme and correcte suche bookes, Actes and orden-  
aunces as heretofore wer geuen and graunted by the  
Mayre and Aldremen then<sup>n</sup> for the tyme beyng, to  
dyuers Felyshipps of this Cytie / And all suche of the  
sayde Actes and ordenaunces As vpon the examynacyon  
and Reformacyon of theym, they shall thynke to be  
good and Reasonable, and ought to be conformed by  
Auctorytie of comen Counsey<sup>ll</sup>, they so to Allowe and  
Admytt; Whervpon, Walter Kelett, Thomas Vycar,  
John Potter and Thomas Sutton, Wardleyns of the  
Crafte or Mystere of Barbour Surgeons, Afterward, that  
ys to say, the iij<sup>th</sup> day of February, the xx<sup>th</sup> yere afore-  
sayd, exibytet to the sayde persones so named and  
Appoynted, A certeyn booke or volume concernyng  
dyuers Articles for the good ordre of the sayd Mistere,  
whiche booke they have, by good deliberacyon perused  
& ouerseem / & dyuers of the sayd Articles they have  
corrected & [word rubd out] yn maner and fourme  
ensuyng:

To the Right honourable and their Singuler  
good lorde and Maisters, my lord Mayre and  
his worshipfull Bretherne, Thaldermen of  
the Citie of London

The Suppli-  
cacyon)

Mekelye besechen your good Lordshippe and Maister-  
ships, the Maisters or Gouerners and Cominaltie of the  
Mystere of Barbours Surgeons of London, That for  
the better Rule & more quyete ordre hereafter to be  
had and vsed yn the sayde Mystere / It maye please  
you to graunte vnto theym the Articles, ordynaunces  
and othes ensuyng, whiche they, by your Favours, sup-  
pose to be verye necessarye and behouefull for theym  
to haue & execute; And they shall praye to god for your  
good contynewaunce and prosperous preseruacyons. /

(1) Paying of  
quarterages.

Liverymen shall  
pay 6d. a quarter,

Firste it ys enacted and ordeyned that euery man yn  
the Clothyng or lyuere of the sayd Mistere shall paye  
quarterly to the mayntenaunce of the Comen charges of  
the same / vj<sup>d</sup> / and euery man oute of the Clothyng,

App. XIV. *Barber-Surgeons' Draft-Rules*, 1529. 251

other Freemen,  
and widows, *2d.*

under penalty of  
*2s. 6d.*

[leaf 115]  
(2) All Som-  
mons to be  
observed<sup>1</sup>

under penalty of  
*2s. 6d.*

(3) The  
howre of  
Sommons to  
be kepte

under a fine of *2d.*  
for the Almes-fund,

and *2s. 6d.* penalty  
for disobedience.

(4) To  
Auoyde  
disorde  
amonges  
theym of the  
company.

No Freeman shall  
sue another till he  
has first com-  
plained to the  
Masters of the  
Company.  
They shall try  
and settle the  
matter.  
If they can't,  
in 14 days,

and euery wydowe kepyng an open Shoppe / *iiij d* /  
And this to be payde quarterly, vpon payne and For-  
feiture at euery tyme offendyng or dooyng the con-  
trary / *iiij s iiij d* / the oon halfe thereof to be Applied  
to thuse of the Chambre of London, And the other  
halfe to the Almes of the sayde Felishippe / So Alweys  
that the sayde quarterage be lawfullye demanded

<sup>1</sup>Also it ys ordeyned that euery persone enfraunchesed  
yn the same Crafte, shalbe redye at all maner of Som-  
mons of the Maysters or Gouverners of the sayde Crafte  
for the tyme beyng / And yf any suche persone Absent  
hym from any suche sommons wythoute cause Reason-  
able, to be tryed by his othe before the Maisters or  
Gouverners, yf they thinke yt necessarye / Than he to  
paye for euery so doynge / *iiij s iiij d*, <sup>2</sup>to be denyded  
and Applied yn maner and fourme Aforesayde /—/<sup>3</sup>

<sup>4</sup>Also that euery man enfraunchesed yn the sayde  
Crafte, beyng duely warned or sommoned, that kepeth  
not his howre accordyng to his Sommons, wythoute  
cause reasonable, to be tryed yn maner<sup>4</sup> aforesayde, for  
euery tyme so doynge, shall paye to the Almes of the  
sayde Crafte / *ij d*. And he or they that disobeyeth  
this ordennance, shall paye for his or their disobeyence  
yn that behalf, for euery tyme so offendyng / *iiij s iiij d* /  
to be denyded yn fourme Aforesayde /

<sup>5</sup>Also, yf any mater of Stryff or debate hereafter be  
betwene eny persones<sup>6</sup> of the sayde Crafte (as god for-  
fende!) That noon of theym shall make any persute yn  
the comen lawe; butt that he whiche fyndeth hym  
Agreved, shall Fyrste make his complaynte to the  
Maysters or Gouverners of the sayde Crafte for the tyme  
beyng, to thentent that they<sup>7</sup> shall ordre the sayde  
Matier or cause of complaynt so made, yf they can /  
And yf it fortune that they can nott, or<sup>8</sup> doo nott,  
ordre & Appese the same matier withyn xiiij dayes  
than next ensuyng, That than yt shalbe lyefull to the  
partye Aggrevyd, to take hys Aduantage at the  
Comen lawe / So Alweys that the partye Ayenat

<sup>1</sup> South, p. 342.

<sup>2-3</sup> the one half to the Chamber of London, and the other to the Almes  
of the Crafte.—Sir Thos. More's Statutes, in South, p. 342.

<sup>4</sup> amalgamated with the preceding article, in South, p. 342.

<sup>5</sup> to be fixed in the maner and forme.—More.

<sup>6</sup> More's Ordinances put this after No. 7, p. 252, below, that no Freeman  
shall teach any one but his apprentice.—South, p. 343.

<sup>7</sup> person, M.

<sup>8</sup> he, M.

<sup>9</sup> nor, M.

252 App. XIV. *Barber-Surgeons' Draft-Rules*, 1529.

<sup>1</sup>the plaintiff may go to law<sup>1</sup> and the defendant mustn't bolt. Penalty, 12s. 4d.

whome the compleynt ys made, be nott fugitive / And who so doith the contrary herof, shall paye for euery tyme so dooyng<sup>1</sup> / xiijs iiij d / to be deuyded and Applyed yn fourme aforesayde /—//

(5) No man to Reuyle Another.

<sup>1</sup>Also, that no person of the sayde Felyshippe shall Reuyle, Rebuke, nor Reproue an other of the same Felyshippe by eny vnsittyn<sup>2</sup>, opprobrious, cedicyous,<sup>3</sup> or dishonest wordes, yn the presence of the Maysters or gouerners, or eny of theym, nor before eny other persones yn eny other places / And he that offendyth yn this behalfe, & due profe thereof had, shall paye for euery suche defaulte, vjs viij d, to be deuyded and Applyed yn fourme Aforesayde.

Penalty, 6s. 8d.

(6) A Remedy agaynst theym that wyll not be of the lyuerey, nor bere offyce.

<sup>4</sup>Also, that no person of the sayde Crafte shall Refuse to be of the Clothyng of the sayde Mystere, or to bere office yn the same, at any tyme whan he, by the Maysters or gouerners & Assistentes of the sayde Mystere, or the more parte of theym, shalbe Abled therto, vpon payne to pay xls., to be Applyed yn fourme aforesayd. And that the Maysters or gouerners of the sayde Mystere for the tyme beyng, shall nott take nor Admytt any person ynto the Clothyng or lyuerye of the same Mystere, withoute the comen Assent of<sup>5</sup> xxiiij<sup>6</sup> Assistentes of the same, or the more parte of theym, vpon lyke payn as ys aforesayd for euery tyme so dooyng, to be deuyded & Applyed yn fourme aforesayd.

Liverymen to be elected by a majority of the 24 Assistants.

[leaf 115, back]

(7) Ayeynst theym that techen Forrena.

<sup>6</sup>Also yt ys ordeyned that no persone enfraunchesd yn the sayde Mystere, shall enfourme or teche<sup>7</sup> eny Foren, other than hys Apprentyce, eny poynte of his Crafte belongyng to Barberie or Surgery, vpon payn, for euery tyme so dooyng, xls / to be Applyed yn fourme Aforesayd.

(8) No Apprentice to be taken but he be Fyrst presented to the Maysters.

<sup>8</sup>Also yt ys ordeyned that no persone enfraunchesd yn the sayde Crafte, shall take any Apprentyce vnto<sup>9</sup> the tyme that he Fyrst present the same person before the Maysters or Gouerners for the tyme beyng, that they maye see he be clene, withoute contynueh<sup>10</sup> Diseases or grevous Infyrmities, wherby the Kynges lyge people myght take hurte, vpon payne for euery tyme so dooyng, of xls / to be Applyed yn maner Aforesayde.

<sup>1</sup> South, p. 345. <sup>2</sup> vnfything. More: South; (vnsittyn is unsuitable).

<sup>3</sup> condycions. M. <sup>4</sup> South's *Craft of Surgery*, p. 345, line 1.

<sup>5</sup> of the, M.

<sup>6</sup> South, p. 345.

<sup>7</sup> charge, M.

<sup>8</sup> South, p. 343.

<sup>9</sup> until.

<sup>10</sup> chronic, permanent.

(9) What  
shalbe  
payde at the  
takyng of  
Apprentice.

22. 66.

Penalty 10s.

(10) None  
yn the  
lyuerey to  
have aboue  
iiij Appren-  
tices & seru-  
auntes [As-  
sistants]  
togyder at  
ona.

(11) None  
oute of the  
lyuerey to  
have aboue  
iiij Appren-  
tices & seru-  
auntes to-  
gyder at ona.

(12) For  
Takyng  
seruauntes  
Alowes  
[hired] or  
Alyauntes,

Also yt ys ordeyned that euery persone of the sayde Felyshippe shaft pay towards theyr <sup>1</sup>comen Charges, for euery Apprentice that he taketh / iij s iiij d / To be payde / xx d / at his presentacyon, & the other xx d withyn the same yere / And yf it fortune the sayde Apprentices to dye or awoyde Awey withyn the Fyrste yere, wherthorow hys Mayster taketh noon Aduantage of hym / That than the sayde iij s iiij d to stonde for the payment of hys next Apprentyce, So that he brynges ynto theyr hall the Indenture of the sayde Apprentice so ded or gon Awey / And he or she Refusyng this to doo, shaft forfeyte & paye / x s /, to be Applied & deuyded yn fourme Aforesayde /—//<sup>1</sup>

<sup>2</sup>Also yt ys ordeyned that no persone of the sayde Felyshippe, beyng yn the clothing or lyuerye, shaft have any mo seruauntes, Apprentices or conenauntes,<sup>3</sup> vsyng the facultie or mysterye of Barbery or Surgerie togyder at ona, aboue the nombre of iiij persones / Prouyded Alweys that withyn halfe A yere of the goyng oute or endyng of the terme of oon of the sayde iiij persons, yt shalbe lyefull to euery suche persone to take and<sup>4</sup> have an other Apprentice or seruaunte, the sayde Acte not withstondyng. And he that offendyth yn brekyng this<sup>5</sup> Acte, shaft forfeyte and paye / x s / to be douyded and Applied yn fourme Aforesayde /—/

<sup>6</sup>Also yt ys ordeyned, that no maner persone<sup>7</sup> of the same Felyshippe, beyng oute of the Clothynge, shaft have togyders at ons aboue the nombre of Three Apprentices or seruauntes to occupye the sayde Mystere and Facultie / Prouyded<sup>8</sup> as yt ys prouyded aforesayde yn<sup>9</sup> the later Article, and vpon lyke payn.

¶ Also yt ys ordeyned that no persone of the sayde Felyshippe shaft take to hys seruyce as seruaunte Allowes [hired], any Englysheman<sup>10</sup> Forren, or Alyaunt Straunger, to occupye the facultie of Barbery or Surgery / But Fyrste the<sup>11</sup> sayde persone shaft present the same seruant<sup>12</sup> withyn iij dayes next after hys comyng to the sayde person, to and before the Maysters or<sup>13</sup> gouerners of the sayde Felyshippe for the tyme

<sup>1-1</sup> charge for every Apprentice that he taketh, iij s vj d, to be payed at the presentacion and allowyng of euery Apprentice.—More, in South, p. 343.

<sup>2</sup> South, p. 343. <sup>3</sup> apprentices or Foreins, M., p. 343.

<sup>4</sup> or, M. <sup>5</sup> of this, M. <sup>6</sup> South, p. 344. <sup>7</sup> of person, M.

<sup>8-4</sup> as ys prouyded in, M. <sup>9</sup> Englyshe, M. South, p. 344.

<sup>10</sup> but the, M. (but = except). <sup>11</sup> person, seruaunt, M. <sup>12</sup> and, M.

254 App. XIV. *Barber-Surgeons' Draft-Rules, 1529.*

and Ratyng beyng, to thentent that he, before theym, maye be  
of theyr Sessed, what wages he shall take / And yf he be An  
wages Alyaunt Straunger borne, he<sup>1</sup> to paye yerely of hys  
wages, to the Almes of the sayd<sup>1</sup> Felyshippe, iij s iij d /  
And that money to be taken quarterly, of the Mayster  
of the same straunger, and of his wages / And who that  
doyth contrary to this Rule, shall forfeyt, at euery tyme  
so dooyng, xls / to be deuyled and Applyed as ys  
aforesayde /—// . .

Penalty, 6s.

(13) None<sup>2</sup> Also yt ys ordeyned, that no persone of the same  
that ys made Felishipe, after that he be admytted and sworne Fre-  
Free, shall man of this Citie afore the Chamberleyn, presume to  
open his opyn his Shoppe wyndowes before he hath presented  
his Shoppe tyll hymself to & before the Maysters or Gouverners of the  
hee have sayde Mystere for the tyme beyng; and with theym  
doon his duetye at hys dutye accustomed, that ys  
theyr half to saye, to the vse of the Companys vs vij d<sup>3</sup>, & to  
the Clerk iij d<sup>4</sup>, to the mayntenaunce of their comen  
charges, And yn takyng his othe afore theym, accord-  
yng to the lawdable custome & ordre, yn the same  
Mistere of olde tyme vsed, vpon payne to lose, forfeyte,  
& pay xls / to be deuyled and Applyed yn fourme  
aforesayde.<sup>5</sup>

Paid 6s. 8d. to  
the Company,  
and 4d. to the  
Clerk.

Penalty, 6s.

(14) For en-<sup>6</sup> Also yt ys ordeyned that no persone of the sayde  
tisyng of Crafte shall entice or desire any seruaunte from his  
seruauntes, Maister, nor shall take any Forren ynto his seruyce for  
& takyng of lesse terme than for oon yere; and he to be cessed or  
Foreyna Rated for his wages, by the Maysters or gouerners of  
the same Mystere: And this to be doon yerly euery  
yere, vpon payne for euery tyme doyng the contrary,  
of xij s iij d; The oon halfe to be Applyed to thuse  
of the Chambre of london, And the other halfe to thuse  
of the Almes of the sayde Felyshippe.

Penalty, 12s. 6d.

<sup>1</sup> More leaves out 'he' and 'sayd.' <sup>2</sup> South, p. 344.

<sup>3</sup> iij s iij d, M. <sup>4</sup> xij d, M.

<sup>5</sup> The Revised Ordinances of May 14, 1530, add the following:—

Provided alwayes, that for dyvers conyderacions, as well for the welthe  
of the kinges leige people, as for the honestye of the sayde Crafte, yt is now  
condescended and agreed that, from hensforthe, no parsons of Felyshippe, after  
he or they be made Free of the sayd Companys, shall presume to sett open  
any Shoppe of Barborye, unto suche tyme as he or they be abled by the sayd  
Maister or gouernors, without he be of the clere value, of his owne proper  
goods, to the value of Tenne markes sterlinge, upon payne of Forfayture of  
xls, the one half to the Chamber of London, and the other half to the Almes  
of the sayd Crafte.—South, *Craft of Surgery* (1686), p. 342.

<sup>6</sup> South, p. 344.

(15) A penal-<sup>1</sup> And Where, by dyuers and<sup>2</sup> high Auctoryties for  
tye of xls the honour & Reuerence of the Sondaye, yt is or-  
for shavyng deyned<sup>3</sup> of olde Antiquytie, that no barbour dwelling  
on the Son- withyn this Citie, or Suburbs of the same, nor elles-  
day. where,<sup>4</sup> shaft occupye shavyng on the Sondayes, neyther  
withyn theyr hous nor withoute, pryvely nor Appertly /  
It ys nowe therefore ordeyned and enacted, that no per-  
sons free of the sayde company, fromhensforth occupye  
<sup>5</sup>any maner Shavyng, priuy or peirt,<sup>6</sup> [on the Sondayes,]<sup>6</sup>  
withyn this Citie nor liberties of the same,<sup>7</sup> vpon payne  
and forfeiture for euery tyme so doying, of xls / The  
oon halfe therof to the Chambre of London, And the  
other half therof to the Almes of the seyde Crafte

[leaf 116, back]

(16) For tak- Free of the sayde Felishippe, shall take any seke or  
yng of Syke hurte persone or persones to hys cure, whiche ys in  
or hurte per- perell of deth or mayne, but yf he shewe the same seke  
sones vnto or hurte persone, by hym receyved, to the Maysters or  
theyr Cure. gouerners of the sayde Mystere, or twoo of theym for  
the tyme beyng,<sup>8</sup> for savegard of the kynges people<sup>10</sup> /  
And that withyn iiij dayes next after the Receyvyng  
of the sayde seeke or hurte persone; vpon payne for  
euery tyme doying the contrary, of xx s; <sup>11</sup>The one half  
thereof to the Chambre of London, And the other half  
therof to the Almes of the sayde Felyshippe.<sup>11</sup>

(17) For the<sup>12</sup> Also yt ys ordeyned, that euery man enfraunchesed  
lecture of yn the sayde Felishippe, occupying Surgery, shall comme  
surgery to theyr hall to the Redyng of the lecture concernyng  
wekely at Surgery, euery Courte daye<sup>13</sup>; And euery man, after  
their hall. his Course, shaft Rede the lecture hymself, or elles  
fynde An Able man of the sayde Felyshippe to Rede  
for hym, And nott to Absent hymself at hys daye of  
the same Redyng withoute cause Reasonable, And with-  
oute he gyve lawfull warnyng therof before the daye,  
vpon the payne to forfeyte and loose for euery tyme

<sup>1</sup> South, p. 346. <sup>2</sup> More leaves out 'and.'

<sup>3</sup> ordeyned and enacted, M. <sup>4</sup> elle who, M.

<sup>5</sup> any Shaving, M. (peirt = appert, open, public).

<sup>6</sup> on the Sondayes, M. not in Letter-Book O.

<sup>7</sup> M. puts in 'prevely nor apertlye.' <sup>8</sup> South, p. 346.

<sup>9</sup> See earlier provisions to this effect in South's *Craft of Surgery*, p. 17 (A.D. 1369), p. 19 (1390), p. 25 (1416), &c. Also in Riley's *Memorials*, 537, 593, 519, &c. M. leaves out 'for the tyme beyng.'

<sup>10</sup> Liege people, M.

<sup>11-12</sup> to be deuyded and applyed in maner and forme foresayd, M.

<sup>13</sup> South, p. 347. <sup>14</sup> Days of assemble therof.

doying the contrary, *xxs*, To be denyded yn fourme  
aforesayd

(18) Noman  
to supplant  
Another yn  
takying from  
hym his  
Cure.

Penalty, *12s. 6d.*

But a Patient  
may change to a  
2nd Surgeon,  
after paying the  
1st.

<sup>1</sup>Also yt ys ordeyned that no man) of the sayde Fely-  
shippe shaft take any Cure from) Another of the same  
Feliashippe, nor supplant oon) Another, nor geve or  
speke any Slaunderus wordes yn disablyng hym) of hys  
science or connyng / but be rather yn a Redynes to  
geve good CounseyH to helpe the Kynges people: And  
euery man) offendyng yn this behalf, to pay at euery  
tyme so offendyng, *xiiij s iij d* / the oon) half therof to  
the Chambre of London), And the other half to the  
Almes of the sayde Felyshippe / Provyded Alwey that  
yf the pacyent fynde hymself Aggreved with his  
surgeon), That than) the same pacyent, paying to hys  
Fyrst Surgeon) Reasonably for hys labour, shall and  
maye take and have eny other Surgeon), at his libertie  
and pleasure.

(19) What  
euery man)  
shaft paye  
for his  
Dyner.

152.1, and 8d. for  
his wife,

[<sup>o</sup> leaf 117]  
unless she helps  
prepare the  
Dinner.

<sup>2</sup>And where, of olde custume, yerely vpon) the Sondaye  
next ensuyng the Feast of Seynt Bartylmewe Thap-  
postell [Aug. 24], A dyner ys kepte & prouyded for  
theym) of the lyuerye of the sayde company yn theyr  
comen hall called Barbour's hall, And on the <sup>3</sup>morwe  
foloyng<sup>4</sup> A dyner for theym) of the same Company  
beyng oute of the lyuerye / It ys ordeyned and enacted  
that euery man) that hath been) vpper Mayster or vpper  
Gouerner of the said company, shall paye at and for  
the same dyner, *xij d* for hymself, and *viiij d* for his wif,  
yf she<sup>4</sup> com); And euery other man) beyng of the lyuerye  
of the same company, shaft paye yn lykewyse for hym-  
self *viiij d*, and for his wyf, yf she com), *iiij d*; Prouyded  
Alwey that the Maisters or Gouerners of the sayde com-  
pany<sup>5</sup> for the tyme beyng, shall paye nothyng for their  
wyfes commyng to the dyner for that yere, Forasmoch  
as theyr wyfes muste of necessitie be there to helpe  
that euery thing there be sett yn ordre<sup>6</sup>; And that euery  
man) of the sayd Company beyng oute of the lyuerye,  
shall pay at and for his dyner on the sayde morowe,  
*iiij d*,<sup>6</sup> And for his wyf, yf she com), *ij d*—//

(20) 'The  
otheof euery  
man) of the  
Companye.

Ye shalle swere that ye shalbe good and true vnto our  
liege lorde the Kyng, and to his heyres, Kynges of  
Englond, and obedyent to the Mayre, and his Brethern)  
the Aldermen) of the Citie of London); And also ye

<sup>1</sup> South, p. 347.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 347.

<sup>3-5</sup> days of Saynt Cosme and Damian, yf it be not on the Satterdaye.—More.

<sup>4</sup> they, M.

<sup>5</sup> Lady Aylf once gave a table-cloth.

<sup>6</sup> *viiij d*, M.

<sup>7</sup> M. puts this and the next oath first, after the Proem.—South, p. 340-2.

App. XIV. *Barber-Surgeons' Draft-Rules, 1529.* 257

Swear to obey the King, the Mayor and Aldermen, the Governours of your Company, and its Rules, present and future.

(21) The othe of the Maisters or Gouvernours.

To maintain the well-being of the Company, and its good old Customs:

to make Searches thro' the Craft,

reform defaults,

punish offences,

and not admit Aliens,

save by consent of the majority of the 24 Assistants.

Not to misapply the Company's Seal.

[\* leaf 117, back]

shalbe obeyent to the Maysters or gouerners that nowe be, & hereafter shalbe, of the Crafte of Barbour Surgeons, wherof ye be nowe made Free / ye shall Also obey, kepe, & obserue all the good orders, Rules, and ordynasnces of the said Crafte heretofore made and not Repelled, and hereafter to be made, So helpe you god and all seyntes, and by this Booke /—//

Ye shalle swere that ye shall obserue, kepe, & maynteyne the worshippe, profyte, and comen wele of the Crafte of Barbour Surgeons, yn all poyntes lawfull and lyefull<sup>1</sup>, as good and profytable Maisters or Gouverners and Rulers ought to doo, after your Connyng,<sup>2</sup> good diligence, and power / Also ye shall kepe and maynteyne, and doo to be kepte and maynteyned duryng your tyme, asforforth as ye lawfully maye / Aswell all suche good vsages, custumes, liberties and ordynasnces of this same Crafte, and at this day vsed, Approved and contynued / And alle and singuler poyntes comteyned yn the premysses, duely and truly<sup>3</sup> ye shall putt yn execucyon, whan & As often as the caas shall Requyre duryng your tyme / And also ye shall duely and truly make your Serches thorough all the company of the same Crafte withyn the Citie of London and Suburbs of the same ; And thervpon, as the caas shall Require, alle the defaultes and neglygences, concilementes<sup>4</sup> and inconuenyences that may hapne or fall to be founde yn the Crafte of Barbery or yn Surgery<sup>5</sup> yn your tyme, ye diligently shall Refourme and sett yn good Rule, And truly correcte and punyshe, accordyng to the power and Rules for the Reformacyon had and made for the same yn the sayde Crafte / And for and duryng your tyme, correcte and lawfully punyshe, after the qualtyes and Gravyties of & vpon the demerytes & defaultes founden yn the same, after your connyng and power / Also ye shall not Admytte any Forreyn to be of this Misterie,—whiche hereafter shall sue to be A free man<sup>6</sup> of this Citie by Redempcyon, and to be enfranchised yn this Misterie,—withoute thassent of the xxiiij<sup>7</sup> Assystentes of the same Crafte, or the more parte of theym / And ouerthat, ye shall not charge the hole bodye of this Felyshippe by putting the comen Scallo of the same Mysterie to any maner wrytyng, \*cause or matore, wherby the same Company yn any wyse may be charged, hurte,<sup>7</sup> or hyndred /

<sup>1</sup> leafull.—More. <sup>2</sup> good connyng, M. <sup>3</sup> when ye, M (wrongly).

<sup>4</sup> of comytementes, M (wrongly, for 'concylementes' of the MS).

<sup>5</sup> or Surgerye, M. <sup>6</sup> be fireman, M. <sup>7</sup> hurted, M.



In all thinge

to behaue up-  
rightly,not heeding  
preiudice, &c.And to administer  
this Oath to your  
successors.(22) Howe  
euery man  
shall behaue  
hymself yn  
the Courte  
tyme.No one to talk  
more than is  
necessary;  
and to stop when  
he's told so.

Penalty, 2s.

Also yn alle the premysses, and other thinges neces-  
sarye concernyng the weale & profytt of the sayde  
Crafte, ye<sup>1</sup> shall truly, lawfully, dilygentlye, and In-  
differently behaue yourself, after your connyng and  
power; and neyther for nede, love,<sup>2</sup> Fauour, Affec-  
cyon, nor for drede, malyce, hatred or enuye, other-  
wyse procede, Rula, or conclude, to or with any persones  
or persones with whiche ye shall haue to doo, by Reason  
of your sayde office / Than the good vsages, Rules,  
liberties and ordinaunces for the good ordre of the  
same Crafte heretofore made, and nott Repelled, and  
hereafter to be made / Also, at thende of your office, ye  
shall geue vnto the Maisters or Gouerners that shall  
succeede you nexte yn the same occupacyon, this pre-  
sent othe, So that they shall duely and truely in all  
thynges duryng the tyme that they shalbe yn lyke office,  
perfourme & fulfyll the same othe; So god you helpe,  
and all Seyntes, & by this boke.

<sup>3</sup>Also yt is ordeyned, that at euery Courte<sup>4</sup> holden  
yn the comen hall of the sayde Mystere, no man beynge  
there present, shall multiplie langage yn the Courte<sup>5</sup>  
tyme, that ys to saye / yf any man there<sup>6</sup> speke mo  
wordes, or multiplie more langage yn the Courte,<sup>7</sup> then  
the Maisters or Gouerners for the tyme beynge there<sup>7</sup>  
present, thinke to be good and necessarye / That than,  
yf they or oon of theym commaunde hym to keepe  
cylence, that than he shall so doo, yn kepyng his obedy-  
ence / <sup>8</sup>And also no man commyng to any of the sayde  
Courtes,<sup>9</sup> shall departe from thens duryng the Courte<sup>10</sup>  
tyme, withoute licence of the Maisters or gouerners  
there<sup>11</sup> present, or oon of theym / And the Offender yn  
any of the sayde / ij / poyntes or cases, to forfeytt and  
paye at euery tyme so offendyng, xx d, to be deuyded  
and Applie<sup>d</sup> yn fourme aforesayde.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>1</sup> that, M. (misread or miswritten for 'ye').<sup>2</sup> Love, meeda.—More.<sup>3</sup> South, p. 348.<sup>4</sup> assemble, M.<sup>5</sup> assemble, M.<sup>6</sup> mans othere, M.<sup>7</sup> then, M.<sup>8</sup> This is a separate article in South, p. 348.<sup>9</sup> Assembles, M.<sup>10</sup> Assemble, M.<sup>11</sup> then, M.<sup>12</sup> After this, and before the final clause of the Barber-Surgeons' 'Boke' in Letter-Book O, comes the following repetition of a general Act of 1364:

A generall Be yt remembred that the thurdaye next before the Feaste of  
Acts for all Seynt Thomas Thappostell [Dec. 21], the yere of the Reigne of  
of the Occupa- Kyng Edward the ij<sup>th</sup> after the conquest, the xxxviij [A.D. 1364],  
cyons and in the presence of Adam A Bery, than Mayre of the Cite of London /  
Mysterees John Louekyn / Adam Franceys / Stephyn Cauendish / John  
of London'. Noot / Thomas Ladlowe / Wylliam Holbech / Wylliam Tuden-

App. XIV. *Barber-Surgeons' Draft-Rules, 1529.* 259

(23) All Livery-  
men are to walk  
and sit by order of  
Seniority in their  
Company,

according to their  
Beadle's Roll,

under a Penalty  
of 12d.

<sup>1</sup>Also yt ys ordeyned that no man of the Clothyng or lyverye<sup>2</sup> of the said Company, presume to go, oon Afore Another of theym, yn processions, buryalles, or Anniversaries, nor yn sitting yn their Courtes,<sup>3</sup> Assemblies, or yn their hall at dyner or other Repastes there, or yn any other honest place, to be hadde otherwyse than he ys yn Auncyentie yn the same companye, And Accordyng to the true entraunce therof yn theyr bodylles Rolle<sup>4</sup> / Nor that any of theym, of eny scrupulositie, Frowardenes, follye, or<sup>5</sup> pusillanimytie, Refuse to take hys owne Rowme or place Accordyng to the ordre aforesayd / Butt that euery man yn thiese ij Cases kepe and occupye his owne Rowme and place, yn fourme aforesayd (wyth he, nyll he) yn good and<sup>6</sup> oherdyent maner / And he of theym that offendyth yn brekyng the ordre yn any of the sayde ij Cases, shall forseytt and paye at euery tyme so offendyng, xij d, to be Applied and denyded yn fourme aforesayde<sup>7</sup>—//—//

All the City  
Crafts shall be  
so ruled that no  
false work be  
done in them.

Each shall be  
governd by 4  
or 6 (or more or  
lesse) persons.

Rebellious  
Members shall  
be fined and  
imprisoned more  
heavily for suc-  
cessive offences.

ham / John Biernes / John A Chichester / Wylliam Welde / Water Forester / Symon Worsted / John of Seynt Albones / James of Thame / Thomas Pykenham / James Andrewe / Bartholomew Frestelyn<sup>1</sup> and John Little, Aldremen of the same Citie, this ordinance ensuyng was made (amonges other) for the profytt of the commons of alle mysteres of the Citie of London, that ys to saye / It is ordeyned that alle the craftes and occupacyons of the Citie of London shalbe lawfully Ruled and Gouerned, euerieche of theym yn his nature, yn due maner, So that no falsed, nor fals worke ne deceyte, be founde yn nowyse yn the sayde Craftes or occupacyons, for the honour of the good people of the sayde Craftes, And for the comen profyts of the Kynges liege people / And that of euery occupacyon<sup>2</sup> be chosen and [leaf 118] sworne, liij or vi, or mo or lesse, after the busynesse of the occupacyon<sup>3</sup>; whiche persones so chosen<sup>4</sup> and sworne shall haue full power of the Mayre, the sayde occupacyon<sup>5</sup> wells and lawfully to Rule and Gouverne / And yf eny persones of the sayde occupacyons be Rebelle, contraryous or disturbing, So that the sayde persones chosen and Sworne can nott duely performe & execute their office, And therof be Atteynt, that euery suche persones so disorderyng hymself, shall, at the Fyrste tyme be Imprisoned by x dayes, and shall paye to the cominaltie for the contempts / x s / And at the ij<sup>th</sup> tyme, he shall have Imprysonment by xx<sup>th</sup> dayes, And shall paye to the cominaltie xx s, And at the liij<sup>th</sup> tyme, he shall have Imprysonment by xxx dayes, and shall paye to the Cominaltie xxx s / And at the liij<sup>th</sup> tyme, he shalbe Imprysoned by xl dayes, And shall paye to the Cominaltie xl s /—//

<sup>1</sup> This is the last Clause before the Epilog or wind-up in South, p. 348-9.

<sup>2</sup> More omits 'or lyverye.'

<sup>3</sup> M. omits 'Courtes.'

<sup>4</sup> in the Bedylls Skroll, M.

<sup>5</sup> frowardnes na.

<sup>6</sup> M. omits 'and.'

<sup>7</sup> above rehearsed.

## 260 XIV. *Surgeons' and Barber-Surgeons' Wardens.*

### The Wardens of the Surgeons and Barber-Surgeons, 1488—1491.

As we chanst to see some early entries of lists of Wardens of the Surgeons and Barber-Surgeons, we copied them, and here they are :

When Robert Tate was Mayor (Nov. 1488-9), the officers were (Journal 9, ff. 322 ink, 290 pencil) :—

Robertus Palmer	} Gardiani Artis de barbouris Surgions, Jurati 15 die Septembris
Ricardus Haymonde	
Jacobus Jugolby <sup>1</sup>	
Andreus Mayne	

<sup>1</sup> or Ingolby

If. 325 ink, 293 pencil :—

Thomas Ropesley	} Gardiani Artis Chirurgicorum, Jurati 2 die Octobris &c
Thomas Thornton	
Johannes Hert	

In 5 Henry VII (Aug. 1489-90) Wm. White, Maior (Nov. 1489-90), the officers sworn (Journal 9, ff. 312 ink, 280 pencil) were :—

Robertus Halyday, Magister	} Gardiani Artis de barbouris-Surgeons, Jurati 16 die Septembris
Ricardus Snodnam	
Johannes Johnson <sup>1</sup> , Junior	
Thomas Walton	

Willelmus Witwang	} Gardiani Artis de Surgeons, Jurati iij <sup>te</sup> die Octobris.
Robertus Taillour	
Johannes Hert	

[Journal 9, back of leaf 293 ink, 261 pencil, between an entry of 23 June, 6 Hen. VII (1491), and one of 6 Nov., 6 (i.e. 7) Hen. VII (1491), are lists of those Crafts who have paid their share of the cost of repairing the City Walls, and those who haven't. Among the latter are both the Barbers and the Surgeons.

Thise been the Craftes that haue doon<sup>1</sup> their Costes to the Reparacions of the walles.

Mercers  
Grocers  
Drapers  
Fishmongers  
Goldsmithes  
Tailloers  
Skynners

Thise ben<sup>1</sup> the Craftes that must be desyreds to do theyr<sup>1</sup> Cost vppon<sup>1</sup> the Reparacion of the walles, And yit haue no thyng doon<sup>1</sup>.

Haberdasshers

Barbours	} ]
Surgeons	
Chesemongers	
Stacyoners	
Vpholders	

In 6 Henry VII (August 1490-1).—Jn. Mathewe, Mayor (Nov. 1490-1), the following officers of the Barber-Surgeons, and Surgeons, were sworn (Journal 9, ff. 304 bk., 305 ink ; 272 bk., 273 pencil) :—

Johannes Johnson, Magister	} Gardiani Artis de barbouris-Surgeons, Jurati 12 die Septembris
Jacobus Scot	
Radulphus Dowelle	
Nicholas Lyveryng	

Willelmus Witwang	} Gardiani Artis Chirurgicorum, Jurati, 4 die Octobris
Robertus Taillour	
Thomas Ropesley	
Nicholas Duraunt	

App. XIV. *Barber-Surgeons the 28th Company.* 261

The Barber-Surgeons' right to the 17th Place in the  
Order of the City Companies.

Two years after the Barber-Surgeons had got their Ordinances revised and authorised by Sir Thomas More and his fellows, they claimed their old place of 17th Company in the City gatherings and processions, out of which they had been ousted; and it took them four years and a half to get the matter finally settled. The first document shows them 28th, in 1516; then they were 17th, then 18th; then they were stopt for a time; but at last they secured their old 17th place.

1516, Jan. 31. The Order of the City Companies in  
City Processions, &c.

(Letter-Book N,  
K 4, back.)

Willelmus Boteler, Maior.

Die Jouis, vltimo Die Januarij [7 Hen. VIII, A.D. 1516].

First, the disputes for precedence between the Salters and Ironmongers, and between the Shearmen and Dyers, are settled by declaring that the Salters shall go before the Ironmongers, and that the Ironmongers 'shall Charitably & louyngly Folowe next the' Salters; and that the Shearmen shall precede the Dyers, who 'shall Charitably & louyngly folowe next the' Shearmen. Then comes, on leaf 6, a cooler for the hot blood stirring in the Dyers:

Item, where the seyd Wardens of Dyers, this seyd Daye expressly seyd that they wolde not goo in procession, but absente theym Frome thens, Rather than they wolde obey this Rule, Decree, & Jugment / Therfor nowe Iniunccion ys geuen to John Axe, & other his Felawes the Wardens, that they go to-morowe in the generall procession accordyng to the order Abouetaken, vppon the payne of xx li.

Then follows a General Order for all the Companies, putting the Barber-Surgeons 28th, instead of 17th, where they claimed of right to be (leaf 6).

Here After ensuyth thorder & direccion taken at this Court by the Mayer & Aldremen aboueseid, of & for all the Craftes & Misteres ensuyng, For their Goynges, Aswell in all processions, as all other Goynges, Standynges [leaf 6, back] And Rydynges for the busynessys & Causes of this Citie / The seyd order or direccion to be fromehenaforth firmly obserued & kept / Eny other Rule, order, or direccion heretofore made to the Contrary, notwithstanding / Provided Alwayes, that the Feliships whereof the Mayer ys for the yere / Accordyng to the olde Custume, shall haue the preeminance in Goyng Afore All other Felishippes, in all places, duryng the tyme of Mayralte, & c

262 XIV. *Barber-Surgeons' Company 28th or 17th.*

*Ordo processionum pro Misteris sequendis.*

Mercers	Bruers	Plummers	(32)
Grocers	Lethersellers	Inholders	
Drapers	Pewterers	Founders	(16)
Fisshmongers	Cutlers	Pulters	
Goldsmaythes	Fullers	Pastelers	(36)
Skynners and Taylours	Bakers	Coupers	
According to thordinaunce	Wexchaundelers	Tylers	(20)
therof made in the	Talughchaundelers	Bowyers	
tyme of Master	Armorsers	Flechers	(40)
Billesdon, in L,	Gurdelers	Blakesmythes	
fol. 196	Bochers	Joynours	(24)
Haberdasshers	Sadelers	Weresellers	
(8)	Carpenters	Wevers	(44)
Salters	Cordeweners	Wolle pakkers	
Iremongers	Barbours	Sporiors	(28)
Vynteners	Payntour	Felmongers	
Shermen	Steynours	Fruterers	(48)
(12)	Coriours		
Dyers	Masons		

But early in 1532, the Barber-Surgeons have got their right old 17th place :

(Rep. 8, lf. 271, bk.) 4 Feb. 1532.

Also yt ys Agreed that, for diuerse Consideracions this Courte movyng, The Barbour Surgeons shaft go in all processions.

On Feb. 9 (or 6<sup>1</sup>), lf. 272, bk., it is agreed and decreed that the Barbours Surgeons shall go 17th in all processions,

1 Mercers	10 Iremongers
2 Grocers	11 Vynteners
3 Drapers	12 Stokfysshmongers
4 Fysshmongers	13 Clotheworkers
5 Goldsmaythes	14 Dyers
6 Skynners	15 Brewers
7 Merchauntayllours	16 Lethersellers
8 Haberdasshers	17 Barbours Surgeons
9 Salters	Pewterers Dyers

and that at the next Assembly of the Livery, the Lord Mayor shall send one of his Serjeants to the Pewterers, to 'showe theym that the seyde company of Barbours Surgeons be Restored ageyn to their olde Rowme.'

<sup>1</sup> We think the clerk's *infrascripta* meant *suprascripta*; in which case, Feb. 6 is the date.

#### XIV. *Barber-Surgeons' Petition for 17th Place.* 263

But on May 13 'infrascripta' (or 8 'suprascripta'), 1532, *lf* 387, bk. :

This day was made a Mociō to the Barbour Surgeons that they shuld be in the Rowme of the xvij<sup>th</sup>, Notwithstandyng the graunt made afore tyme therof to theym.

Next year the Barber-Surgeons petitioned the City Court to give them their old 17th place :—

1533, Feb. 4. The Barber-Surgeons' right to the 17th place in City Processions and Assemblies.

(Letter-Book O, *lf* 313.) Pecok, Maior. [Nov. 1532-3.]

As the Barber-Surgeons have told the Lord Mayor and Aldermen

that their Company was always the 17th, till put back about 16 years ago,

and they have now askt for their old place;

the Court, considering the request reasonable,

and that the Barber-Surgeons have always paid their dues well,

Memorandum, that the iiij<sup>th</sup> day of February, the xxiij<sup>th</sup> yere of the Reigne of Kynge Henry the viij<sup>th</sup>, The Master, Wardens and Company of Barbour Surgeons of London, made humble sute and Request vnto the Right honourable sir Stephyn Pecok, knyght, Mayre of the sayde Cytie, and hys worshipfull Bretherne Thaldremen of the same, Shewyng & Alledging, that where they, the sayde Master, Wardeyns, and Company, yn thordre of goynges, standynges, Rydynges, syttynges, and other Assemblies of occupacions lawdabylve used and contynued withyn this Cytie, for the worshippes of the same, haue used, and were wonte, tyme oute of mynde, to be taken and accepted the xvij<sup>th</sup> Companye, tyll about xvj<sup>th</sup> yeres nowe passed / At whiche tyme, and always sythen that tyme, they have been putt farre back from theyr sayde Rowme and place accustomed, So that they be nowe the xxix or xxx<sup>th</sup> Companye yn thordre of suche goynges, Rydynges, standynges, syttynges, & other Assemblies, The cause whye, or by what occasyon, they been nowe so used, they sayde they coulde not tell; and prayed yn humble maner that yf no suche cause or occasyon were / That then yt wolde please the sayde Mayre and Aldremen to Restore and Admytt theym vnto theyr sayde former place and Rowme of olde tyme accustomed / Wherupon the sayde Mayr and Aldremen, consydering not onlye the sayd Request to be good and Reasonable, but also the good qualytyes and humanytie whiche the sayde Companye have and shewe from tyme to tyme yn

264 App. XIV. *Barber-Surgeons to be 17th Company.*

Vide *Journalen*  
incipientem  
a tempore Ed-  
mundi Shaa  
[A.D. 1482] in  
folio 18 ibidem,  
et ultimo folio  
eiusdem.

the Court agree

that the Barber-  
Surgeons shall always  
be the 17th Company,

after the Furriers,  
and before the Dyers  
and Cutlers,

almaner Taskes, contrybucyons, and other charges borne and leuyed of [and<sup>1</sup>] amonges the seuerall occupacions of this Cytie, wheryn they be founde alweys Ryght tractable, redye and conformable / And also forasmoche as yt appereth by tholde Recordes withyn this Cytie, that they have vsed to be yn the sayde xvij<sup>th</sup> Rowme, as on theyr behalf ys afore Alledged / Therefore, and for dyuers other causes & consideracions theym specyally mouyng / The vj<sup>th</sup> day of the sayde Moneth of February [1533], at and by A full Courte of Aldremen then beyng present, the sayd lord Mayr, Master John Baker, Recorder, sir Wylliam Butler, sir Thomas Baldrye, sir Nycolas Lamberd, knyghtes / Master John Hardy, Master John Champneys, Master Rafe Warren, Master Wylliam Forman / Master Wylliam Roche, Master Wylliam Denham, Master Mighih Dormer, Master Rychard Choppyn, Master Robert Paggett, And Master Water Champyon, Aldremen, with good delyberacyon and aduysement, fully Agreed and graunted, that fromhensforth, at all tymes to come foreuermore / the Master, Wardeyns and Companye of the sayde Mysterye for the tyme beyng, shalbe accepted, taken and Admytted the xvij<sup>th</sup> Companye, And so, at all tymes to come, shall goo yn thordre of all suche goynges, [1533, 212, text] Rydynges, standynges, syttinges and other Comen Assembles, vsyng and contynewyng theyr sayde olde place and Rowme Accustumed, after thys maner and ordre ensuyng, that ys to wyte / Mercers / Grocers / Drapers / Fysshemongers / Goldamythes / Skynners / merchaunttayllours / Haberdasshers / Salters / Iremongers / Vynteners / Stokfysshemongers / Clothwerkers / <sup>2</sup> Brewers / lethersellers / Pewterers / Barbour surgeons / Dyers / Cutlers, <sup>3</sup> And so forth, by ordre, as more playnly yt appereth the last Daye of January, the vij yere of the Reigne of kyng Henry the viij<sup>th</sup>, yn the tyme of Mayraltye of sir Wylliam Butler, knyght, entred yn the booke of .N. folio Sexto. <sup>3</sup> And to thentent that this present graunte and Agreement shall fromhensforth foreuermore stonde and be contynewed ferme and stable as concernyng the sayde Barbour surgeons, the sayde Mayr & Aldremen have com-

<sup>1</sup> MS of of.

<sup>2-3</sup> In a later hand, on an erasure.

<sup>3</sup> This Order made the Barber-Surgeons 28th instead of 17th.

# App. XIV. *Barber-Surgeons the 17th Company.* 265

and that this Order  
shall be recorded in  
Letter-Book O, leaf  
264.

maunded yt here to be entred of Recorde yn the  
booke of O,<sup>1</sup> folio ij iiij, perpetually to be observed  
and kept Accordynglye /—//

On Oct. 22, 1534 (Rep. 9, lf. 79), it was agreed that the above Act of 1533 should be 'vtterly Revoked, adnulled & repelyd,' and that an order made in the mayoralty of Sir Wm. Butler (Nov. 1515-16: p. 261-2, above) as to the order of the Crafts in assemblies, &c. should be observd, so that the Barbers would be 28th again. And 'the Wardeyns of the mystery of the Barbour-surgeons of London' were 'orderd that theyre company shall no more goo yn processyons, standynges, Rydynges, goynges, & other assembles from hensfurth, tyll it be otherwyse orderd by thys courte.'

Nevertheless, on March 11, 1535 (Repertory 9, leaf 9) it is 'agreed that the sayd Company of barbours shalbe the xvij company, & immediyntly to goo afore y<sup>e</sup> companye of Cutlers, & after the Pewterers, as they be set yn order yn the tyme of y<sup>e</sup> mayoraltye of Master Butler, yn the Repertory N folio [6] vltimo die Januarii.'

But on March 16, 1535 (Letter-Book P, lf. 61), it was again agreed 'that the saide Company of Barbours shalbe the xvij Company, and ymmediatly to goo afore the Company of Cutlers / and after the pewterers.'

On July 29, 1535 (Rep. 9, lf. 118, and Letter-Book P, leaf 66, bk.), this last Act or Order is repeated, and the place of 'the barbour surgeons of london' settled as that of 'the xvij Company,' before the Cutlers and after the Powterers. On Oct. 12, 1535 (Rep. 9, lf. 130, and Letter-Book P, lf. 71, bk.), 'the barbour surgeons' are again given the place of 'the sevyntenth company yn the order of the mysteryes of the companyes . . yn all theyre stondynges, goynges, Rydynges, & other comon assembles of thys Cytie.'

On Wednesday, Dec. 15, 1535 (Rep. 9, lf. 195, and Letter-Book P, lf. 78, bk.), a further Order again gives the barboursurgeons the 17th place: 1. Mercers, 2. Grocers, 3. Drapers, 4. Fysahemongers, 5. Goldsmynes, 6. Skynners, 7. Merchanttayllours, 8. Haberdashers,

<sup>1</sup> On leaf 248 back, the Barbours have to provide 4 Bowmen to attend the Lord Mayor in the Watch of the Vigils of St. John and St. Peter. The 4 first Companies—Grocers, Mercers, Drapers, Goldsmiths—find 8 Bowmen each.



266 App. XIV. *Barber-Surgeons the 17th Company.*

9. Salters, 10. Iremongers, 11. Vynteners, 12. Clothworkers, 13. Brewers, 14. Lethersellers, 15. Pewterers, 16. Dyers, 17. Barbour-surgeons, 18. Cutlers, 'and so furthe, as apperyth yn the booke of O, fo. 204' (Rep. 9, lf. 195), p. 263-5, above.

This Order was confirmd on March 30, 1536 (Rep. 9, lf. 166). Then on July 20, 1536 (Rep. 9, lf. 184), it was orderd that the Barber-Surgeons should have a new Boke or Charter made, under the Common Seal of the City,<sup>1</sup> granting them their 17th place for ever. This was duly made, and is enterd in full in Repertory 9, leaf 201 bk. to 203 bk. (headed 'xviij die Julij, anno 28 H. 8 [A.D. 1536], ante 184'), and in Letter-Book P, leaves 97 bk. to 98 front. It is dated Oct. 1, 28 Hen. VIII, A.D. 1536, the Order for sealing it with the Seal of Office having been made on Sept. 26 (Rep. 9, lf. 195). It is given under 'the seale of the offyce of Mayoraltye of the Cytye of London.'

---

1547. The Numbers of the Freemen of each Company who shall ride to meet K. Edward VI on his Coronation.

(Journal 9, lf. 18, bk.)

*Commune Consilium tentum Die lune, xxj die Aprilis, Anno primo [Ed. VI, A.D. 1547].*

[*Presentibus*] *Maiore*,<sup>2</sup> *Recordatore*, Tailour, Drope, Brome, Gardynier, Haryot, Stal brow, W. Stokker, Hiß, Billesden, Rawson, Colet, Warde, J. Stokker, Fisher, Tate, Hern, Pawson, Norlond, Nailer, Whit, Mathewa. Consideratum est per Maiorem & Aldermannos, de qualibet Mistera subscripta, certe persone equitant erga Dominum Regem venientem ad Ciuitatem Londonie ad Coronacionem suam, induis Togis coloris Murrey [dark red].

<sup>1</sup> (Rep. 9, lf. 184) *martis, xvij die Julij, anno 28 H. 8 [1536] postea 201.* 'Item that the Company of barbour-surgeons shall have a newe booke written, & the comen' seale of the Cytye to be setto the same. vide postea 201. scribe librum hie, vt intraret postea, fo. 201 /'

At the back of leaf 201 is the 'newe booke' written accordingly.

<sup>2</sup> Nov. 1546-7. Sir Henry Hobberthorne, Lord Mayor; Richard Jarveis and Thomas Curteis, Sheriffs.

# XIV. *City-Freemen at Edw. VI's Coronation.* 267

numerus personarum eorundem subscribitur.

Goldsmithes ... xxx	Wexchaundlers iiij	Wolmen ... .. vj
Mercers ... .. xxx	Taloughchaundlers vj	Plommers ... .. ij
Drapers ... .. xxx	Shermen) ... .. viij	Stacioners ... .. ij
Grocers ... .. xxx	Fullers ... .. viij	Founders ... .. iiij
Fishmongers ... xxx	Gyrdellers ... .. iiij	Paynters ... .. ij
Skynners ... .. xx	Bochers ... .. x	Staynours ... .. ij
Salters ... .. x	Bakers ... .. vj	Wodemongers ... .. ij
Vynters ... .. viij	Bruers ... .. x	Turnours ... .. ij
Tailours ... .. xxx	lepersellers ... .. x	Curriours ... .. vj
Irmongers ... .. x	Hurers <sup>1</sup> ... .. iiij	Pulters ... .. ij
Haberdasshers ... xx	Vpholders ... .. iiij	Pastelers ... .. ij
Scryvaners ... .. iiij	Cordewaners ... .. iiij	Coupers ... .. ij
Diers ... .. x	Joyners ... .. ij	Wyremongers ... .. ij
Peautrers ... .. vj	Masons ... .. ij	Glasiers ... .. ij
Cutlers ... .. vj	Carpenters ... .. ij	Tilers ... .. iiij
Sadlers ... .. viij	Fleccchers ... .. ij	lynnyndrapers ... .. ij
Barbours ... .. viij	Bowiers ... .. iiij	Summa iiij x persones
Armerers ... .. iiij	Inholders ... .. iiij	

In the torn list of Companies or trades on the last page of Journal 9 (A.D. 1548), the names are not given in the order above, and the Surgeons are put before the Barbers. The complete names (after the torn ones) are Scryvaners, Diers, Peautrers, Cutlers, Surgions, Sadlers, Barbours, Armerers, Brasiers, Wexchaundlers. Glovers are put before the Hurers; Coppersmiths follow the Founders; Broiderers and Pouchemakers the Steynoura. Between the Coupers and Wire-sellers (for Wyremongers) come the Greytawyers, Blaksmithes, Wevers, Sporiours, Lorymers, Horners; then the Lynnyndrapers, Fuysters (saddle-tree makers), Fruterers, Chosemongers, Netters, Glasiers, Tapicers, Tylers, Felmongers, Whelwrightes, Shipwrightes, Pavyours, Corsers (horsedealers), P[astellers], Marblers.

On April 22, 1604 (Repertory 26, no. 2, leaf 327, 329 pencil, back), the Court ordered that—as the Stockfishmongers' Company had been 'wholly dissolved and abrogated, and noe Companye or corporation [was] remayning within this Cittye, of that name,'—

y<sup>e</sup> sayd Masters or governours of y<sup>e</sup> sayd mesterye and Cominaltie of Barbers and Surgeons shall, from henceforth, be reputed, taken & placed, as y<sup>e</sup> sixteenth Companye within this Cittye, in all their goings, rydinges, sittings, standinges and assemblies whatsoever.

<sup>1</sup> Makers of shabby caps, 'cappers & hurers.'

This was to make amends for a snub to the dignity of the Barber-Surgeons five weeks before, when, though the Company was entitled to its old 17th place,—then practically the 16th,—

yet notwithstanding, at the royall passages of the king and quences most excellent maiesties, and the Prince of Wales, attended by the nobility and gentrye of the land, through *this* Cittye on the xxth of march last past, through ignorance were misplaced by the Comittyes appointed by this Cittye for the managing of those affaires.

#### A FEW NOTES.

p. 64, *Zirbus*. See Lib. II, Cap. XIII, p. 78 of *Opera Chirurgica Ambrosii Peracii*, Frankfort, 1594. 'De Epiploo seu Omento, quod *Zirbus* etiam appellant. Post partes continentes, sequuntur contenta, quarum prima est Epiploon, sic dictum, quodd intestinis omnibus innatet.' And on p. 79, in the references to the *icœa* or woodcut, 'Omentum, seu *sirbum*, aut epiploon, in omnia intestina effusum, vnde & hoc epiploi nomen traxit.'

p. 80, *Perfection of the Fœtus*. For 18 and 46 days, Ambrosio Paré allows 30 and 60: *Op. Chirurg.* 1594, p. 667:—'Ceterum infans in vtero, vt ante trigessimum diem conformationem perfectam non adipiscitur, sic, non ante sexagesimum movetur: quod tempus scipius etiam mulieres latet, propter motionis exilitatem.' He also insists that the soul comes to the fœtus, not from man, but from God, and quotes Augustine on the point, 'Itaque ab Adamo, aut parentibus, deriuari animam non est credendum: sed singulis momentis, & in ipso conformati fœtus articulo, à Deo creari, & in fœtum infundi.'

p. 163, *Gifts to Barts*. By his will of May 9, 1399, Thomas de Baumburgh, clerk, gives all his tenements in Holbourn to the Master and Brethren of the Hospital of S. Bartholomew de Smethefeld, for providing 2 Friars Regular of that order to celebrate divine service in the Hospital Church. See Dr. Reg-Sharpe's forthcoming *Calendar of the Wills in the Court of Hustings*, Guildhall, London, Pt. I, p. 437. (A.D. 1388.)

p. 157, *Lazar Houses*. See the Order, Oct. 15 (8 Edw. VI), 1549, for yearly appointing Governors of them, in Letter-Book B, ff. 36, Guildhall Records.

p. 163, note 2. *The Plague of 1563*. Among those who must have died of it, and were buried at St. Giles's, Cripplegate, was the Rev. Richard Bullein, writer of a book on the Stone, brother of William Bullein, author of the *Bulwarke* 1563, *Dialogue* 1564, &c. *Dict. Nat. Biog.*, vii. 246/1. (William Bullein died in 1576.)

p. 177. *Archery*, 1633 Gerv. Markham. *Countrie Contentments*, p. 57.

The markes to shoote at are three, Buts, Prickes, or Roavers: the But is a leuell Marke, and therefore would have a strong Arrow with a very broad Feather; The pricke is a marke of some compasse, yet most certaine in the Distance, therefore would have nimble strong Arrowes with a mikkle Feather, all of one weight and flying; and the Roaver is a marke incertaine, sometimes long, sometimes short, and therefore must have arrowes lighter, or heavier, according unto the distance of place.

p. 188, *Vigs*. 'Other haue at hand, maister *Vyggs* boke of *Chirurgi*, where ye shall finde, euen to the full, how to purge an humour. 1562-3, W. Bullein. *Bulwarke: Sorenes and Chyrurgi*. Fol. xxx.

XV.  
THE  
Ancient Ordinary  
OF THE  
BARBERS AND SURGEONS OF YORK,  
A.D. 1486,  
AS REVISED AND AUGMENTED A.D. 1592;  
TOGETHER WITH THE FRESH ORDINANCES OF 1614 AS TO THE  
MASTER OF ANATOMY, DISSECTIONS, READING OF LECTURES,  
ETC. ETC.  
*from the Egerton MS. 2572, in the British Museum.*

[inside the fly-leaf]

[A.D. 1697.]

**Civitatis Ebor-** Ad Generalem Quarterialem Sessionem Pacis Domini  
**aci Sessio** nostri Regis, tentam per Adjournamentum pro Civitate  
Eboraci et Comite ejusdem Civitatis, apud Guildhall  
in eadem Civitate, die Martis ultimo (!), xij die  
Octobris, Anno Domini 1697, Coram Marco Gill,  
Majore Civitatis Eboraci, Georgio Prickett, Serviente  
ad Legem, Recordatore ejusdem Civitatis, Gilberto  
Metcalf, Militi, Ricardo Wynn, Armigero, de Con-  
silio cum Civitate predicta, Johanne Foster, Samuel  
Dawson, Georgio Stockton, Andrea Perrott, Roberto  
Davy, et Rogero Shackleton, Aldermannija, Custodi-  
bus Pacis et Iusticiis dicti Domini Regis, ad pacem  
conservandam assignatis, &c.

Ordered, that M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Cundall and M<sup>r</sup> John Gowland, Searchers  
for the Company of Barbers, doe give Notice to my Lord Major of  
the names of such persons of that Company as doe Shave or Trimm  
on the Sabbath days; And that they give Notice to the Company  
to forbear to doe it, As they and the Company will Answer the  
Contrary :

per Curiam,  
Tho. Mabe, deputatus Communis Clerici.

*The contents of all y<sup>e</sup> Articles in this Ordinary. (Cont.)*

[A.D. 1592]

	PAGE
1 Imprimis, The Election & Acoumpts of y <sup>e</sup> Searchers ...	274
2 Straungers to be Contributours to the Company ...	274
3 Obstinate & Disobedient persons that will not come to y <sup>e</sup> Hall ... ..	274
4 Noe Master to take another Brothers Apprentice ...	274
5 Every Master new setting upp, to be Searched ...	274
6 Noe Brother of y <sup>e</sup> Company to Trimm on y <sup>e</sup> Sabbaoth Day	274
7 Searchers may take away Basings & Signes ...	275
8 None to practize Chyrurgery but vnder a Master ...	275
9 Noe Servant to worke vnsearched <sup>1</sup> ... ..	275
10 <sup>1</sup> Noe Apprentice to be taken for any lesse then Seaven yeares	275
11 Servants & Apprentices not to be Purloiners ...	275
12 Noe Stranger to practize above five Dayes ...	276
13 Strangers founde faulty, to be fineable ...	276
14 Straungers to be Searched & to be Contributory ...	276
15 Noe Brother to take in hand to Deale with anothers Cure ...	276
16 Masters of y <sup>e</sup> Arte may Search all Cures ...	276
17 Misbehaviour one to another ... ..	276
18 Assembling or meeting at y <sup>e</sup> Hall without their Gownes ...	277
19 Goeing to Tavernes or Alehouses on y <sup>e</sup> Sabbaoth Day ...	277
20 None to Intrude into anothers Cure; neither any Barbor to trymm any others customer ... ..	277
21 Every Brother to make a Dinner at his first being Searcher	277
22 Orders to be observed att y <sup>e</sup> Buriall of a Brother ...	277
23 Payments to be made quarterly, & Recording of Apprentices	277
24 Every Master to pay att taking his Oath ... ..	277
25 Journeymen to pay Quarterly ... ..	277
26 Fee, for makeing Indentures ... ..	278
27 Indentures to be Enrolled ... ..	278
28 Noe man to be Admitted into y <sup>e</sup> Company before he be freed before my Lord Mayor ... ..	278
29 <sup>1</sup> Noe Master to haue any moe Apprentices then one; & his first to be a freemans sonne ... ..	278

<sup>1</sup> 'Repealed' written in the margin.<sup>2</sup> That is, all Assistants must be examined.

272 XV. *Contents of all y<sup>e</sup> Articles in this Ordinary.*

	[later]	PAGE
(30) The antient Head Searcher to make a Dinner for the Company on the Election Day—	... ..	278

*Additions and Alterations.* [leaf 3, back]

	[A.D. 1614]	
(31) A Master in Anatomy to be chosen yearly	... ..	279
(32) Such Master to be a licensed Surgeon, & to read Lectures	...	279
(33) The whole Company to meet at every Dissection	... ..	280
(34) The Master to appoint who shall dissect	... ..	280
(35) And to describe to them the Part	... ..	280
(36) The Master and Searchers to examine strange Surgeons	... ..	280
(37) Every one of the Company professing Surgery, to read a Lecture in Surgery or Anatomy, if required	... ..	280
(38) Every new admitted Surgeon the like	... ..	281
(39) All Surgeons in the City to become free of the Company	...	281
(40) Penalty on unlicensed & unskilful Practicers	... ..	281
(41) The like on Persons employing them	... ..	281
(42) The Master in Anatomy Lecturer to have Precedency of the Searchers	... ..	282

	[A.D. 1676]	
(43) 10s. Penalty for shaving on the Lord's Day	... ..	282
(44) Searchers not to spend or waste the Company's Stock	...	283

	[A.D. 1679]	
(45) The Company to have all Fines and Forfeitures	...	283

	[A.D. 1683]	
(46a) The 10 <sup>th</sup> & 29 <sup>th</sup> Articles are vacated	... ..	284
(46b) None to take Apprentice for less than seven years	...	284
(47a) If any Master have more than one Apprentice at a Time, one of them to be a Freemans Son	... ..	284
(47b) <sup>1</sup> The first Apprentice taken to be a Freeman's Son	...	284
(47c) The Company not to compound Fines above 6s. 8d. without Consent of the Corporation	... ..	284

	[A.D. 1757]	
(48a) The Order as to taking a freemans Son the first Apprentice repealed—And	... ..	284
(48b) 20s. Penalty for taking an Unfreeman's Son Apprentice	...	285

	[A.D. 1768]	
(49) Sixpence (instead of 3s. 4d.) Penalty for not attending Meetings	... ..	286

	[Not dated]	
(50) <sup>2</sup> Agreement by each Member of the Company that, on Breach of any Article, the Forfeiture may be levied by Distress and Sale of his Goods	... ..	287

<sup>1</sup> 'Repealed' written in margin.

<sup>2</sup> leaf 4.

[leaf 5]

**T**his booke made in the yere of our lorde god A M CCCC lxxxvj, In the Seconde yere of the Reigne of Kinge Henrye the Vij<sup>e</sup>; beinge Maior of this Cittie, William Chymney; Searchers that yere, viz

Adam Sigeswithe & George Kylede.

[*Oath of the Barber-Surgeons*]

Ye shall Swear to bee trustie and trewe vnto the kinge our Sovereigne Lord, And to this Cittie of York, And also to the Science of Barbars & Chyrsurgions within the same. And all good ordinances, statutes, vsages, and accustomes, heretofore made and vsed in the same arte or Science, ye shall kepe, supporte, and maynteine att all tymes to your power; and the secretes and counsell of the same arte, ye shall trawlie kepe and Layne,<sup>1</sup> So helpe yowe god, and by the contentes of this Booke.<sup>2</sup>

[leaf 14, back]

**T**his Booke corrected and Augmented in y<sup>e</sup> yere of our Lorde god 1592, in the xxij<sup>e</sup> yere of the Reigne of our Soueraigne Lady Elizabeth, the Quenes maiestie that nowe is:

Thomas Harryson, Lorde Maiour the Seconde tyme;

Henrye Leache, and } Serchers<sup>3</sup>

George Dunnyng } this yere

This done att the costes and charges of the wholle companye.

The Auntiente Ordinarye of the Barbors and Sur- [leaf 14, back]  
per ordines in  
libro actium xiiij<sup>e</sup>  
& xxiij<sup>e</sup> diebus  
Iunij de Anno  
predicto, scilicet  
1592  
gions of this Cittie, att the requeste of the wholl  
companye, newlye perused, reformed, and Augmented,  
and this presente xxij<sup>e</sup> days of Iune, 1592, ratyfyed,  
established & confirmed, to be from henceforthe obserued  
& kept, as hereafter is mencyoned.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Conceal.

<sup>2</sup> On leaf 6 is a painting of the Barber-Surgeons Arms, the Barbors and Surgeons Quarterly, like those of London, with a lion or, on a red cross dividing the quarters. Underneath, the London Company's motto, 'De prescientia Dei.' On leaf 7 is a careful painting of Henry VII; on leaf 8 one of Henry VIII; on leaf 9, one of Edward VI; on leaf 10, one of Queen Mary; on leaf 11, one of Elizabeth; on leaf 12, one of James I; on leaf 13, a less careful one of Charles I; on leaf 14, one of Charles II; on leaf 14 back, the text begins again. Most of these Portraits are extremely well done.

<sup>3</sup> Examiners.

<sup>4</sup> Portraits of James II. (leaf 15) and of William and Mary (leaf 16) take up the next two leaves.



- [leaf 17]  
The election and  
accounts of the  
Searchers.
- 1 **I**nprimis, that y<sup>e</sup> Serchers and Maisters of the  
saide arte or science be chosen euerye yeare vpon  
the Mondaye nexte after the feaste of the Natyvitie of  
Saint Iohn Baptiste: and the same Mondaye the  
Searchers of the yeare before, there to render vp theire  
accounts vnto the Maisters of the saide arte, of all  
thinges belonginge to them, vpon payne of vjs viij d to  
the chamber and companye.
- 2 Item, that all Aliauntes and Straungers that vses  
the arte or Science of Phisicke or Chireurgerie within  
this Cittie, and takes moneye for the same, to be con-  
tributorie to the companie of the same arte, yearelie  
vjs viij d, to be paid to the Searchers of the same  
companye for the tyme beinge, in manner and forme  
aforesaide.
- [leaf 17, back]  
Obstinate and  
disobediente  
persons.  
Altered by Order  
in folio 24.
- 3 Item, If anye man of the saide arte be founde obsty-  
nate, and will not come to the hall of theire assemblie,  
beinge lawfullye warned by the Searchers or theire  
deputie, or els aske leewe of the searchers, or the one  
of them, vpon lawfull busynes, shall forfeitt to y<sup>e</sup> com-  
panye iij s iiij d, to be deuided in manner and forme  
aforesaide.
- No maister to  
take an other  
brothers apren-  
tice.
- 4 Item, if any *Maister* of the saide arte, receyue or take  
into his service, anye aprentice or seruante of any other  
*Maister*, vnto<sup>1</sup> suche tyme and tearme betwixte them  
agreed, be fullye ended, the offender so convicted herein  
shall forfeitt, as is aforesaide, to the chamber and com-  
panye vjs viij d.
- 5 Item, that everie man of the saide arte, when he firste  
settes vp, to kepe shoppe as a *maister*, shall be first a  
fre man of this Cittie, and then searched by the  
Searchers of the saide arte, whether he be able to<sup>2</sup>  
occupie as a *Maister* or no; And if the Searchers  
aproue him able, then att the firste settinge vp as a  
*Maister* in the arte, he shall paye xiijs iiij d in manner  
and forme abouesaide (excepte the sonnes of franchesed  
men). And if he be founde vnable, then he shall serue  
suche a conveniente tyme with some brother of the  
said Science, as shalbe appointed and sett downe by  
the Searchers of y<sup>e</sup> companye for the tyme beinge.
- [leaf 19]  
Exercise Maister  
setting vpp new,  
to be searched.
- 6 Item, it is ordered and set downe that none of the  
saide Barbors shall worke or kepe open theire shoppe

<sup>1</sup> until.

<sup>2</sup> On leaf 18 is a Portrait of Queen Anne.

# XV. *York Barber-Surgeons' Ordinary*, 1592. 275

vpon the Sabothe daye (exceptinge tuo sondayes nexte before the assize weekes, nor after, in this Cittye; and if any Barbour Presume to do the contrarye, for euerye tyme so founde [he] shall forfeit x s to the vces, as is aforesaide.

No brother of the compaign to work vpon the Sabothe daye.

Item, if anie man, after his yeares of aprentishippe be expired, do presume to sett up as A *Maister*, not beinge admitted of the Searchers of that compaign, it shall be lawfull for the saide Searchers to take awaye his Basinges, or other signes whiche he hathe towards the strete to shewe his arte, and to carrye them to the chamber on owsebridge<sup>1</sup> to the then Lorde Maior, and to paye suche fyne as the saide Lorde Maior shall set downe, to the vces aforesaide.

7 [leaf 12, back]

Searchers to take awaye Basinges & Signes.

Item, that no person or parsons within this Cittie, or 8 Suburbes of the same, practizinge Chierurgerye, or drawinge of teethe, or anye other thinge belonginge to the saide arte, vnles theye be vnder the gouernance of A *maister*, and approued able to vse and occupie the saide arte; and if anye of them do the contrarie to this ordinarye, and be convicted vpon the same, [he] shall forfeit and paye vjs viij d to be equallye devided as is aforesaide.<sup>2</sup>

None to practice Surgerye but vnder A *Maister*.

Item, that no *Maister* of the saide arte, hier,<sup>3</sup> or sett to worke in his howse, any *seruantes* to occupie in y<sup>e</sup> saide arte aboue the space of vj<sup>e</sup> daies, vnles the Serchers for the tyme beinge have Serched the saide *servante*, and so licensed by the saide Serchers, vpon payne or forfeiture of vjs viij d, to be paide as, is aforesaide.

9 [leaf 21]

No *servants* to worke vnsearched.

Item, that none of y<sup>e</sup> saide arte shall take anye aprentice for lesse tearme than vij<sup>e</sup> yeares; and that to be done by Indentures, and recorded by the clarks of our compaign, vpon payne or forfeiture of vjs viij d; and the saide Indentures to be made (within viij<sup>e</sup> dayes after the takinge of the saide aprentice) by our Clarke, vpon payne and forfeiture of the some aforesaide, and devided as is aforesaide.

10

No aprentice to be takinge for anie less tearme then vij<sup>e</sup> yeares; and y<sup>e</sup> Indentures to be made by our clarks, Vouched by Order in Folio 21.

Item, if anie *servante* or aprentice do purloyne or 11 stealle from his *Maister*, anye of his goodes, to the value of vj d, the offender so convicted, shall be clearlie dis-

11

*Servants* & Aprentices not to be partakers.

<sup>1</sup> Bridge over the river Ouse at York.

<sup>2</sup> Leaf 20, Portrait of George I.

<sup>3</sup> *hira*.

<sup>4</sup> Assiktant. See p. 190, 208, and p. 271, note 2, above.

276 XV. *York Barber-Surgeons' Ordinary, 1592.*

charged forth of the saide companye for euer, at the discretion of the then Lorde maior.

[leaf 21, back] 12 Item, that no alianntes nor straungers come into the saide Cittie to exercise the arte of Chireurgerie, or other thinges belonginge to the Barbors, Presume to occupie the same (not admitted by the saide Searchers) over the space of v<sup>e</sup> daies : whiche fyve daies beinge expired, for euerye daye after, the offender so convicted shall forfeit and paye iij s euerie daye, as is in forme aforesaide.

Strangers founde faulte. 13 Item, that all suche alianntes and straungers beinge founde with a faulte by the saide searchers in the saide arte, shall be fyneable accordinge to the ordinances and Statutes made in the saide arte.

Strangers to be searched & to be contributaries. [leaf 22] 14 Item, that the Searchers of the same arte of Barbors and Chirerugions [so] for the tyme beinge, shall haue full power att all tymes to searche all<sup>1</sup> manner of cures which the saide Aliauntes and Strangers shall haue in hande, remayninge and abidinge within this Cittye, or the libertyes thereof. And also that all suche Aliantes shall be contributors to all manner of charges belonginge to the saide arte.

No brother to take in hand to deale with an others cure. 15 Item, that no Maister of the Arte, or his Seruauntes,<sup>2</sup> shall dresse the patient of any other Maister, vntill suche tyme as he whiche haithe the patiente alreadye in hande to cure, be fullye satisfied, contented, and agreed, with-all; vpon forfeiture and payements of xij s iij d, as aforesaide.

To searche all Cures. [leaf 22, back] 16 Item, that the Barbors and Chirerugions of this Cittie, shall haue power att all tymes, & especiall<sup>y</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Searchers, to searche all cures whatsoever. And if anye Maister of the saide arte be requested or commaunded by anye auctoritie to searche, then shall he<sup>4</sup> make it knowne to the searchers, and to haue their assistance; and if anye of the arte do contrarie to this ordinarie, [he] shall forfeit to y<sup>e</sup> chamber and companye, vj s viij d.

Misbehaviour one to another. 17 Item, if anye brother of this companie, att the tyme or place of our assemblie, or anye other place elsewhere, do vitar or giue anye vndecente wordes, to the searchers, or to anye brother of the saide companie, — but orderlye vse them, accordinge as they oughte to do, — whosoever shall offende herein, shall forfeit and paye iij s iij d to the vces aforesaide.

<sup>1</sup> Leaf 22, Portrait of George the Second.

<sup>2</sup> Assistants.

## XV. *York Barber-Surgeons' Ordinary*, 1592. 277

Item, if any brother of the saide companye do come 18  
to the hall att any tyme, that is, or hathe bene  
searchers of the companye havinge gownes, and comethe  
without them, [he] shall forfeit and paye for euerie  
offence, vj d, to the use of the saide companye onelye.<sup>1</sup>

Assemblinge or  
meetings att hall  
without thaire  
gownes.

Item, that none of the saide companie shall resorte 19  
to auie Inne, Tauerne, or ailehowse, vpon the Sabothe  
daye or other holidaye, in tyme of devyne service or  
sermon, vpon payne of euerye one offendinge, xij d;  
thone halfe to the comon chamber, and thother halfe  
to the presentor.<sup>2</sup>

[leaf 25]  
Tavernes or Ale-  
houses[<sup>a</sup>]

Item, that none of the saide companie, intrude hym 20  
selfe into y<sup>e</sup> companye of anye other brother beinge  
dressinge of anye patient, either wounded or hurte, ex-  
cepte he be speciallie requested by the patiente or by  
some frende of his, vpon payne of vjs viij d to the  
uses as aforesaide. And also that no Barbor shall  
powle, tryme, or shave, anie of his brothers customers,  
vntill suche tyme as the saide brother be fullie con-  
tented and paide; vpon payne and forfeiture of the  
same aboue saide, conteyned in this article.

None to intrude  
into an others  
care,

neither anie  
Barbor to receive  
another brothers  
customer.

Item, that euerie *Maister*, at his firste beinge searcher 21 [leaf 25, back]  
shall make the companye a dynner, and shall paye att  
the same tyme towards the encrease of the Stocke, vs,  
as, accordinge to auntiente custome, hearetofore hathe  
bene used.

Euerie brother to  
make a dynner at  
his firste being  
Searcher.

Item, it is agreed that, att the buriall of anie brother, 22  
the whole companye to be there. And if anye be ab-  
sente, beinge lawfullye warned, and haue not A lawfull  
excuse, [he] shall forfeit and paye iij s iiij d in forme as  
is aforesaide.

Orders to be ob-  
served at the  
buriall of A  
Brother.

Item, it is agreed by the Barbors and Chireurgions, 23  
that euerie one of them shall paye quarterly iij d  
towards the encrease of the Stocke; And also att the  
recordinge of anie aprentice into our ordinarie, xij d.

Paymentes to be  
made quarterly,  
and recordinge of  
aprentices.

Item, that euerie one of the saide arte beinge allowed 24 [leaf 26]  
*Maister* by the Searchers and companie, shall paye, att  
the receyvinge of his cathe, xij d.

paye at taking  
cathe.

Item, if anye *Maister* of the saide companye sett anye 25  
seruante on worke, boinge not prentice within this  
Cittie, that saide seruante or Iourneye-man, shall paye  
quarterlye to the saide companye, vj d.

Journey-men to  
paye.

<sup>1</sup> Leaf 24, Portrait of George III.    <sup>2</sup> Informer, complainant.

278 XV. *York Barber-Surgeons' Ordinary, 1592.*

26 Item, it is agreed amongst our whole companye, that our clark, Iohn Rawden, shall haue the makinge of all Indentures for apprentices within our companye; and to haue for euerie paire, xxxv [s], and for his yearely waiges, x s.

For Indentures making.

[leaf 26, back] 27 Item, that euerie Maister shall enrolle the Indentures of his apprentices in the comon clarkes office, within one monethe nexte after the takinge of the same apprentice; and shall paye for the same, viij d, to thuse of the comon chamber and the saide comon clark, to be equallye deuided; vpon payne of euerie one makinge defaulte, to forfeit for euerie offence vj s viij d; thone halfe to the comon chamber, and thother halfe to thuse of the saide companye.

Indentures to be enrolled.

28 Item, it is agreed that y<sup>e</sup> Serchers of the saide companye shall not admytt, nor receyue, anye person to be a fre brother of the saide companye, before the same person be made a freman of this Cittie, and do shewe the coppie of his fraunchessed oathe under the Clarke's hande vnto the same Searchers; vpon payne of the saide Searchers admyttinge or allowinge any suche, contrarie to thintente and meaninge of this order, to forfeit for euerie person so admitted or allowed, iij li vj s viij d to the comon chamber.

No man to be Admitted into the companye, before he be freed before the Lords Maier.

[leaf 27] 29 Item, it is Agreed that euerie Maister of the Companye nowe beinge, or which hereafter shalbe, havinge more Apprentices then one at once, at anye tyme or tymes hereafter, shall alwayes haue A fremans sonne one of the same apprentices; and that euerie Maister of the companye which shall hereafter newlye sett vp, shall take to his firste Apprentice, A fremans sonne; vpon payne that euerye Maister doinge contrarie, shall forfeit for euerye tyme so doinge, iij li vj s viij d, to be paide, thone halfe to the comon chamber, and thother halfe to the saide companye. Provided that euerye Maister whiche att this presente hathe two or more apprentices, maye kepe the same vntill their termes be expired, So as he take no other apprentice in the meane tyme, contrarie to this order.

No maister to haue or take any mo apprentices then one at once at his first settinge up as maister;

and that some one to be the sonne of A freman.

[later]  
Vacated by Order  
in file 22.

[In a somewhat later hand and ink.]

[30] Item, it is agreed by a generall consente of the companye of Barbor-Surgions, that from henceforthe the Auntiente heade Searcher, vpon the Election days,

On Election-Day,

## XV. *York Barber-Surgeons' Ordinances*, 1614. 279

shall make the whole companye A dynner; and euerie person payinge vjd a pece of there owne chardge; and the Surplussage (yf anye suche be) to be payde out of the Stocke.

the eldest Searcher shall give the Companye a Dinner, every one paying 6d. for it.

### The Fresh Ordinances of 1614, as to the Master of Anatomy, Dissections, Reading of Lectures, &c.

[leaf 27, back] In Camera Consilii Super pontem vso,<sup>1</sup> Civitatis Eboraci, octavo die Iunii, 1614.  
tempore Maioratus Leonardi Besson, Maior Ciuitatis predicta.

Inprimis, that the companye of Chirurgions, euerye 1 [31]  
yeare shall choise one of the saide companye to be the Maister in Anatomie; which saide Maister shall haue the disposinge of all thinges belonginge to the saide Anatomie, as also the kepinge of all thinges perteyninge to the dissection of the same; and to make accompte of those thinges at the endinge of his yeare, and to delyuer them up to the companye, and theye to the nexte Maister elected.

A Master of Anatomy shall be elected yearly.

who shall take charge of the Dissecting Instruments, &c.

Item, the Maister so chosen, shall be A licenced Chirur- 2 [32]  
gion; and twyce in the tearme of the saide yeare, the saide Maister shall reade a lecture, either in Anatomie or Chirurgerie; and if he so refuse to do, he shall paye for euerye suche refusall, x s to the use of the Lorde Maior and cominaltye of the saide Cittye, to be levyed by distresse, or to be recouered by accion of debte by the towne Clarke of the saide Cittie for the time beinge, in the Kinges Maiesties courte to be \*Holden before the Sheriffes of the saide Cittie, wherein no Essoigne or wager of lawe<sup>2</sup> shalbe allowed for the defendant.

This Master shall be a Licenced Surgeon, and give 2 Lectures a year on Anatomy or Surgery.

[\* leaf 28]

<sup>1</sup> The River Ouse.

<sup>2</sup> *Essoin* (*Excusum*, Fr. *Essoins*), Signifies an Excuse for him that is summoned to appear and answer to an Action, or to perform Suit to a Court-Baron, &c., by Reason of Sickness and Infirmitie, or other just Cause of Absence. It is a kind of Imparience, or craving of a longer Time, that lies in Real, Personal and Mix'd Actions.—1744. Jacob, *Law Dict.*, ed. 5.

*Wager of Law*: by this, a Debtor who swore that he owed his Creditor nothing, and also got 6 friends to swear that they believd him, got clear of any debt not witness by deed or record. Says Jacob, "The Manner of *Waging Law* is thus: He that is to do it [the Debtor], must bring six Compurgators with him into Court, and stand at the End of the Bar towards the Right-hand

280 XV. *York Barber-Surgeons' Ordinances, 1614.*

[33] 3 Item, that att euerye dissection, y<sup>e</sup> whole companye shall meete; and those that shall either willinglye or wilfullye at anye tyme, (if in anye sorte he professe Chirurgerye) absent them selues, not havinge a reasonable excuse, shalbe fyned for euerye defaulte iij s iiij d to thuse afore saide, and to be levyed and recovered in manner and forme aforesaide.

[34] 4 Item, the saide Maister att euerye dissection, shall appointe such of the licenced Chirurgions as he shall like best of, to dissecte the saide Anatomy; and if theye so refuse to do, to paye for everye tyme theye so denye, v s. to thuse aforesaide, and to be levyed and recovered in manner and forme aforesaide.

[35] (leaf 28, back) 5 Item, the saide Maister shall describe to such as he shall appointe to dissect (if they be vnskillfull in y<sup>e</sup> dissection of that part) the ri-inge, circumference, site, and insertion of the saide parte; which if he do not, they requestinge him therevnto, he shall paye iij s iiij d to thuse aforesaide, and to be levyed and recovered in manner and forme aforesaide.

[36] 6 Item, that the saide Maister, and twoe Searchers for the tyme beinge, shall call before them (havinge suche other companye as they thincke fitt to assiste them) all suche as be Straungers, and others vnlicenced, practisinge Chirurgerie within the Cittie of Yorke, to examyno them; and findinge them insufficient, or refusinge to be examyned, to forfett and paye for euerye tyme offendinge, contrarie to the effects of this orlynance, x s to thuse aforesaide, and to be levyed and recovered in manner and forme aforesaide.

[37] (leaf 29) 7 Item, euerye one of the saide companye professinge Chirurgerie, shall reade a Lecture, either in Chirurgerye or Anatomie, to the whole companye, out of

of the Chief Justice; and the Secondary asks him, whether he will *wage his Law*? If he answers that he will, the Judges admonish him to be well advised, and tell him the Danger of taking a false Oath; and if he still persists, the Secondary says, and he that *Wageth his Law* repeats after him: *Hear this, ye Justices, that I A. B. do not owe to C. D. the Sum of, &c., nor any Penny thereof in Manner and Form as the said C. D. hath declared against me: So help me God.* Though before he takes the Oath, the Plaintiff is called by the Crier thrice; and if he do not appear, he becomes nonsuited, and then the Defendant goes quit without taking his Oath; and if he appear, and the Defendant swears that he owes the Plaintiff nothing, and the Compurgators do give it upon Oath that they believe he swears true, the Plaintiff is barred for ever; for when a Person has *waged his Law*, it is as much as if a Verdict has passed against the Plaintiff.—1744. *Law Diet.* This *Wager of Law* was 'abused by the Iniquity of the Times,' and was therefore done away with.

# XV. *York Barber-Surgeons' Ordinances*, 1614. 281

Some Author in Chirurgerye or Anatomye, as shalbe appointed by the *Maister* of Anatomie, and of one of the Searchers, beinge a licenced Chirurgeon, whiche if he refuse to do (havinge had reasonable warninge to provide for the readinge of the saide lecture), from suche tyme not to practize the arte of Chirurgerie, till he performe the readinge of the same lecture, vpon payne to forfeit and paye for euerie tyme not readinge a lecture as aforesaide, xx s to thuse aforesaide, and to be levied and recouered in manner and forme aforesaide.

Surgery or  
Anatomy to the  
whole Company.

If he refuses,  
he shall be sus-  
pended till he  
lectures.

[38]

Item, euerye Chirurgeon, within A monethe after he is made free, shall likewise reade a lecture vnto the whole companye, out of some Auther, either in Chirurgerie or Anatomie, as shalbe appointed vnto him by the *Maister* and one of the Searchers, beinge a licenced Chirurgeon, vpon payne to forfeit and paye for not readinge thereof, xx s to thuse aforesaide, and to be levied and recovered in manner and forme aforesaide.

8 [leaf 28, back]

Every Surgeon  
made a freeman,  
shall, within a  
month, read a  
Lecture on  
Surgery or  
Anatomy.

Item, that euerie one professinge Chirurgerie, and livinge within this Cittie, or others cominge to this Cittie, beinge licenced or otherwise, shall either become fremen of the saide Cittie and companye, within thre moneths after there saide cominge, or els to avoide the Cittie; and to paye for euerye monethe after remainyng in this Cittie, and practizinge Chirurgerie, xl s to thuse aforesaide, and to be levied and recouered in manner and forme aforesaide.

9 [39]

All Surgeons in  
York shall join  
the Company or  
leave the City.

[MS.]  
Professors of  
Chirurgery, to  
avoyd, or to  
bee one free  
within thre  
monethes!

[40]

Item, that none vnlicenced, or suche as can giue no reason for the cure theye vndertake, as to haue knowledge of the causes and signes thereof, or none that vnderstande not the vertues of suche medicines as they applie, whether theye be simple or compounde, takinge moneye for their medicines, shall practize Chirurgerie, vpon payne to forfeit for euerye tyme they shall practize Chirurgerie within this Cittie, xx s to thuse aforesaide, and to be levied and recouered in manner and forme aforesaide.

10 [leaf 30]

No vnlicencet or  
ignorant man who

takes money for  
medicines, shall  
practise Surgery.

Item, that euerie freman or woman of this Cittie, either takinge, or vaigne or sufferinge their children or seruantes to take or vse the counsell or helpe of any straunger, or anye other vnworthie professor, or vnlicenced Chirurgeon, havinge not firste had and vsed the counsell and helpe of the fre licenced Chirurgions of this Cittie (*Bone-Setters* excepted) shall forfeit for euerye tyme so doinge, xl s to the vse aforesaid, and to be levied as aforesaide, &c.

11 [41]

Every person  
going to an  
vnlicencet  
Surgeon

before consulting  
a free licencet one,

shall forfeit 50s.



[The Master in Anatomy is to take precedence of the Searchers.]

[H. 20, 14]

xiiij<sup>th</sup> daye of Septembre  
Anno Domini 1614.

In Camera Consilij super pontem Vse, Ciuitatis Eboraci,  
Coram Leonardo Besson, Maiore Ciuitatis Eboraci,  
Aldermannis & alijs.

[42]

As the Master in  
Anatomy,

and the Searchers,  
dispute who shall  
have precedence,

This Court orders

that the Master of  
Anatomy shall  
have it.

And whereas there is at this presente, controuersie arisen betwene the Master in Anatomye, Lecturer, on thone partye, and the Searchers of the Companye of Barbour-Surgicns on thother partye, wheather the saide Master, or the Searchers of the same companye for the tyme beinge, sholde, in all the assemblies of the saide companyes, have the place or precedeneye; vpon consideration had by this courte, it is thoughte mete, and so ordered by the saide Lord Maior, Aldermen, Sheriffes, and pryvy Counsell of the saide Cittie, that, for the endinge of the same Varyaunce, the saide Master in Anatomye, Lecturer, shall, as it is veryo fittinge, have the place or precedeneye of the Searchers of the same companye for the tyme being, in all there assemblies.

per me, Willelmum Scott, Communem  
Clericum Ciuitatis predictae.

[leaf 21]

Att the councell Chamber

on Onze bridge, y<sup>e</sup> xx<sup>th</sup> of June, Anno Domini 1676.

In the maioralty of the Right honourable Yorke  
Horner, lord Maior of the City of Yorke.

[43]

Whereas Barber-  
Surgeons have  
been shaving and  
cutting hair on  
the Lord's day,

We order, that if  
any of them do  
it hereafter,  
in any place,  
public or private,

This Court, takinge notice of seuerall irregular and vnreasonable practices committed by the Company of Barbor-Chirurgions within this City, in Shavinge, trimminge and cuttinge of Seuerall Straingers, as well as Cittizens, haire and faces vpon the Lords day, which ought to bee kept sacred, Itt is ordered by the whole consent of this Court; That if any Brother of the said Company shall att any time hereafter, either by himselfe, Servant, or Substitute, tonse, barbe, or trim any person on the Lords day, in any Inn, or other publike or private house or place; or shall goe in or out of any such house or place on y<sup>e</sup> said Day, with instruments vzed for that purpose, albeit the same cannott bee

App. XV. Ordinance against Sunday-Shaving. 283

positively proved, or made appeare; butt in case y<sup>e</sup> Lord Maior for y<sup>e</sup> time beinge shall, vpon good circumstances, conceive and adiudge any such Brother to haue trimmed or barbed (as is aforesaid); that then euery \*such offender shall forfeite, and pay for euery such offence, the summe of Ten shillings; y<sup>e</sup> moyty thereof to y<sup>e</sup> Lord Maior, and the other to th<sup>e</sup> use of the said Company; vnlesse such Brother shall voluntarily purge himselfe by oath to the contrary: and the Searchers of the said Company for the Time beinge, are to make diligent search in all such publike & private houses as aforesaid, for discovery of such offenders.

(of which the Lord Mayor shall judge)

[\* leaf 21, back]  
he shall be fined 10s.

And the Company's Searchers are to look up offenders.

per me, Willelmum  
Kitchingman, Clericum Communem  
Civitatis Eborac.

29<sup>th</sup> September 1676 /

[leaf 22]

**I**tem, that noe searcher of the Companie shall hereafter spend or waist the moneys or stock belonging to the said Company, Comitted to his keeping, either in feasting or any other way, but onely as it shall be Judged fitt by the Generall consent of the whole or Major parte of the Company; & that every Searcher soe offending, shall be lyable to pay all debts Contracted over and aboue what the said stocke will discharge: / not Exceeding the summe of Three pounds.

[44]  
Searchers not to waste the Company's money in feasting.

[Ordinances of 1679 as to the Company  
keeping Fees.]

xxvj<sup>th</sup> Junij, Anno Domini, 1679.

Richard Shaw, lord Mayor.

Ordered, with Consent of the said Company, that the Searchers thereof for the time beinge (vpon consideration of payinge the yearly Composition of Ten Shillings of lawfull English mony to the Mayor and Comonalty of this City) doe from henceforth Take and receive to the use of the said Company, all such fines and forfeitures as shall hereafter become due by breach of any Article of this Ordinary; Fines, dues, or forfeitures taken of Doctours or Montebankes only excepted; of which the said Mayor & Comonalty are to have the moyety, or one halfe.

[45]  
Searchers (on paying 10s. a year)

may take all small Fines, for the Company's use.

Kitchingman.

[Ordinances of 1683 as to Apprentices.]

[46] Att The Counsell Chamber vpon Owse bridge, the 24<sup>th</sup>  
of September 1683,

In the Maioralty of the Right Honorable Edward  
Thompson, Lord Mayor of the City of Yorke

No Apprentices to  
be taken for less  
than 7 years,

under a fine of 2s.

Ordered, that the Tenth Article and the nyne and  
Twentieth Article mentioned in this booke,<sup>1</sup> be Vacated  
and made Void; and that for the future, none of the  
said Arte shall take any Apprentice for lesse tearme  
then seauen years, and that to be done by Indentures,  
and recorded by the Clarke of the company, vpon  
forfeiture of ffinne pounds; and that the said In-  
dentures be made within eight dayes, vpon the penalty  
of vj s viij d.

[47]

No Master shall  
have 2 Appren-  
tices, unless 1 is a  
Freeman's son.

[<sup>2</sup> leaf 22, back]

The 1st Appren-  
tice of every  
Master hereforth  
setting up, must  
be a Freeman's  
son.  
Penalty 21s.

Fines above 6s. 8d.  
not to be taken  
without the Lord  
Mayor's consent.

Ordered also, that every Master of the company now  
beinge, or which hereaft[er] shall be, haueinge more  
apprentices then one at once, at any tyme or tymes  
hereafter, shall alwayes haue a freemans sonne one of  
the same apprentices; and that every Master <sup>2</sup>of the  
company which shall hereafter newly sett vp, shall  
take to his first apprentice a ffree mans sonne, vpon  
paine that every Master doeing contrary, shall forfeit  
for every tyme soe doeing, the sume of tenn pounds,  
to be paid, thone halfe to y<sup>e</sup> comon Chamber, and  
thother halfe to the said Company. Provided that  
every Master which at this present hath two or more  
apprentices, may keepe the same vntill their tearmes  
be expyred: and it is further Orderd, that none of the  
said company of Barbers and Chirurgions presume to  
take or compound for the future, any fines aboue six  
shillings eight pence, without the consent of the Lord  
Mayor for the tyme beinge.

Kitchingman,  
*Communis Clericus Ciuitatis.*

<sup>1</sup> Pages 275 and 278, above.

[*Alteration of last-named Penalty of £10 to 20s.*]

[*Leaf 24*]

28<sup>th</sup> January 1757./

[48]

City of York Assembled at the Council Chamber upon Ouzelbridge  
present

Rich<sup>d</sup> Harrer Esq<sup>r</sup>

Lord Mayor.

James Barnard Esq<sup>r</sup>

Rich<sup>d</sup> Lawson Esq<sup>r</sup>

John Mayor Esq<sup>r</sup>

Will<sup>m</sup> Coates Esq<sup>r</sup>

Thos: Matthews Esq<sup>r</sup>

In<sup>o</sup> Allanson Esq<sup>r</sup>

In<sup>o</sup> Telford Esq<sup>r</sup>

In<sup>o</sup> Greggs

R<sup>d</sup> Garland

Joseph Buckler.

Edward Wilson.

Henry Richmond.

Auby Taylor.

Chris<sup>t</sup> Rawden.

Rich<sup>d</sup> Dawson.

Cha<sup>s</sup> Wightman

Tho<sup>s</sup> Spooner

Geo: Thompson

Francis Ingram

Edward Thwing

Francis Stephenson

John Skilbock

William Baker

Thomas Hungate

Henry Iubb

Tho<sup>s</sup> Marfitt

John Bradley

Will<sup>m</sup> Dunn

in the said City, the Twenty Eighth day  
of January, One Thousand Seven Hun-  
dred and fifty Seven, when and where  
(amongst others) the following Order was  
made.

Ald<sup>rs</sup> Upon the Petition of the Searchers of  
the Company of Barber Chirurgeons, It  
is Ordered, that the By-Law made by  
this House the Twenty fourth day of  
September, One Thousand Six Hundred  
and Eighty three, whereby every free-  
man of this City who should newly set  
up and take for his first Apprentice an  
Unfreemans Son, should forfeit the sum  
of Ten pounds, shall be, and the same  
is by these presents, repealed. And  
it is further Ordered that, for the future,  
Every freeman of the said Company who  
Gen<sup>l</sup> shall take an Unfreemans Son Appren-  
of tice, shall forfeit the sum of Twenty  
24 Shillings to the Mayor and Commonalty  
of the said City; One half thereof for  
the use of the common Chamber, and  
the other half thereof for the use of the  
said Company of Barber Chirurgeons.

Examined by me, John Raper,  
Comon Clerk.

<sup>1</sup> 'Gen' means 'gentlemen.' The Aldermen being 'esquires,' the Sheriffs  
and Common-Council are of the next class, 'gentlemen.'

286 App. XV. *Order for the York Barber-Surgeons.*

[*Fines of 3s. 4d. for not attending Meetings,  
reduced to 6d.*]

[leaf 24, back]

9<sup>th</sup> May 1768.

[49]

City of York.  
Present:  
James Rowe Esq:  
second time  
Lord Mayor.

Assembled at the Council Chamber upon  
Onsebridge, the ninth day of May, one  
thousand seven hundred & sixty eight,  
when and where (amongst others) the  
following Order was made.

George Eskricke  
John Allanson  
Fra<sup>s</sup> Stephenson  
Francis Bacon  
John Wakefield  
Esq<sup>r</sup> Aldermen.

John Hardisty  
Sam<sup>l</sup> Wormald  
Gent. Sheriffs.

Thomas Norfolk  
John Bradley  
Edward Wallis  
Hale Wyvill  
John Stow  
Christopher Oldfield  
William Siddall  
Thomas Wilson  
Thomas Varley.

Upon the Petition of the Searchers  
of the Company of Barber Surgeons of  
this City, It is ordered that the  
penalty of Three Shillings and four pence  
inflicted on Members of that Company  
for Nonattendance at their Meetings, by  
an Order of this House of the twenty  
third day of June, One thousand five  
hundred and Ninety two, shall be hence-  
forth reduced to the Sum of Sixpence.

Examined by John Raper,  
Comon Clerk.

of the  
24

This Book came  
into the Possession of  
M<sup>r</sup> F. N. Alexander  
by Purchase  
A.D. 1817.

[*Stampt in gilt letters.*]

[The Brit. Mus. bought the MS. of W. H. Richardson, 9 April,  
1881.]

*(The York Barber-Surgeons' Pledge to the City Corporation to keep the Company's Rules.)*

[leaf 25, back]

Memorandum, that wee whose names are subscribed, Freemen of the Citty of Yorke, and of the Company of Barber-Chirurgions, doe hereby promise and ingage our selues to the Maior and Commonality of the saide Citty, to performe and obserue all and singular the Orders and Ordinances made for the good Gouverment of the said Company, contained in the book of Ordinances; And if wee, or any of vs Respectuely doe Faile in any one of them, Then we are content and doe promise, Euery one of vs for himselve seuerally and respectuely, to pay to the said Maior and Commonalty the seuerally summes and Forfeitures mentioned in the respectiue Orders, to bee Levyed by the Searchers of the said Company, or such as the Lord Maior for the tyme being shall appoint, vpon our respectiue goods, by distresse and sale thereof, rendring the ouerplus to the owner.

George Matthews  
Tho. Hall

John Anderson  
Nathaniell Nelson

and about 7 other columns of signatures.

[50]

We York Freemen  
of the Barber Surgeons' Company,

promise the  
Corporation to  
keep all our  
Ordinances;

and in default,

to pay the Fines  
named therein.

Then follow names of Members of the Company, with entrics of their Apprentices, the last seemingly in 1666. Then comes a Calendar of the 12 months; a sketch of a man with his bleeding-points shown, and the labels printed at p. 229, above; 3 astrological and other figures, with tables, prose treatises of the Elements, &c., the influence of the Planets on Man, John of Burdus's (Bordeaux) medicine against the Pestilence, the Poem on Blood-letting printed above, p. 228-9. Follow, names of the York Barbers and Surgeons, and their Apprentices to 1784 (or past); then a stampd Agreement of Feb. 2, 1777, that the Barber Surgeons won't shave or dress wigs, &c. on the Lord's Day, save for strangers at the Assizes and Races (!) under a Penalty of £5. Then another Order of 6 May, 1701, that Searchers shall enter into a Bond not to spend more than 2s. 6d. without authority; and then more Members' names.

288 XV. *Sunday-Shaving*, 1413. *Prices of Meat*, 1545.

*Sunday shaving in 1413.*

On July 24, 1413 (1 Hen. V), in consequence of a letter from the Archbp. of Canterbury of July 23, the Lord Mayor & Aldermen issued an Order entord in Latin in Letter-Book I, leaf Cxxv, enjoining that the London Barbers should no longer, against the Law of God, the Canon law, & public decency (*honestatem*) keep open their houses & shops on Sunday, the 7th day which God made holy, & on which He rested after His six days' work; that neither they, their wives, sons, daughters, apprentices or assistants (*servientes*) should, in or out of their houses & shops, ply their shaving or barbing trade on Sundays, under a penalty of 6s. 8d. for every default, of which 5s. was to go to the work (*ad opus*) of the Guildhall [building the present one], & the other 20d. to the Masters or Wardens of the London Barbers' chest, for their use. (The Archbishop's Letter is english in Riley's *London Memorials*, 1276-1419, p. 593. London, 1868.)

*Prices of meat in London in 1545.*

At a Court of Common Council held on May 15, 1545 (36 Hen. VIII), present the Mayor (Waren), Recorder, Forman, Dormer, Cotes, Laxton, Hoberthornt, Amcottes, Sadler, Wylforde, Lewen, Judde, Hyll, Barne, and Tolos and Dobbys, sheriffs, it was stated that 'as the Bochers of this Cytye, blynded in Averyce & syngler geyne & lucre, haue nowe of late dayes, so furre inhaunsed the prices of all kyndes of vytayles that they medle withall & putt to sale / that nott onely the Comons of the sayd Cytye & others repayr- yng' to the same, haue beyen gretly greved therby, but Also that Complaynt therof hath & is comyn vnto the kynges most honourable CounsayR, to the no lyttyll dyspleasure of the lorde Mayer & Aldermen of the sayd Citye //' & as the Butchers would not sell at the reasonable prices fixt by the Lord Mayor, 8 Mercers were appointed to visit the flesh-markets<sup>1</sup> from 5 to 11 a.m., & 1 to 5 p.m., & see that only the proper prices were charged :

'That ys to sey / the pounde of Beoffe, from Crystmas to Mydsomer, for ob. q<sup>a</sup> (3 farthings); the pounde of Mutton j d / The pounde of veale ob q<sup>a</sup> & dimidium quadrantis (3½ farthings) / And from Midsomer to Crystmas. the pounde of Beoffe for ob & dimidium quadrantis / Mutton for j d / the pounde of Veale for j d the Pounde / The best lambe<sup>2</sup> for ij s / The seconde lambe for xx d, & the meanest lambe for xvj d, & the halfe of euery suche lambe, & also the quarters, after the same rate Att all tymes of the yere / And Porke att all tymes of the yere for ob dimidium quadrantis the pounde /' (Repertory 11, leaf 155).

<sup>1</sup> saynt Nicholas Shambles / The Stokes / Leaden Hall / & Est chepe

<sup>2</sup> The whole lamb.

## XVI.

**The Ordre of  
the Hospital of .S. Bar-  
tholomewes in West-  
smythfelde in  
London.**

**T i. Epist. John .ij Chap.**

He that sayeth he walketh in the lyght, and hateth his  
brother, came neuer as yeat in the lyght. But  
he that loneth his brother, he dwel-  
leth in the lyght.

**L O N D I N I**

**A N N O**

**1 5 5 2.**



[A. 1.]  
B.

*The Contentes of this  
Booke.*

	[I]	[Page]
A preface ... ..		[291]
A deuision <sup>1</sup> of the .xii. Gouvernours into their particuler gouvernaunce ... ..		[295]
A Charge geuen to the Gouvernours at the tyme of their ad- mission ... ..		[296]
The President, and his authoritie ... ..		[297]
The Threasaurour and his charge ... ..		[297]
iiii. Surueiours and their charge ... ..		[298]
iiii. Almoners and their charge ... ..		[299]
ii. Scrutyners and their charge ... ..		[300]
An admonition to the Auditours ... ..		[301]
An Order for the saufe keepyng of the Euidences and Wrytynges of the Hospitall ... ..		[302]

[II]

*Officers of houshold, with  
their charges particularly*

	[303]
The Renter clerke and his charge ... ..	[303]
The Hospiteler and his office ... ..	[307]
The Butler and his dutie ... ..	[308]
The Matrone and her office ... ..	[309]
The Sisters and their dutie ... ..	[310]
The Chirurgiens and their duty <sup>2</sup> ... ..	[311]
The Porter and his dutie ... ..	[312]
The Biddilles and their dutie ... ..	[313]
The visitour of Newgate and his duty ... ..	[314]

[III]

The Estimate of the Charges and Expences of the Hos- pital ... ..	[316]
--	-------

[IV]

A dayly Service for the Poore ... ..	[319]
A Prayer to be sayd at their delyuerie out of this House ... ..	[335]
A Passe-ports for the Poore at their delinerie ... ..	[336]

[The Writer has a few peculiarities of spelling : togethether, yearth, officers, them; the Northern *owne* for *owne*, &c. : *the* for *they* was customary.]

<sup>1</sup> The *Deuision* is put after the *Charge* in the original.

<sup>2</sup> The *Chirurgiens* are put after the *Visitor of Newgate* in the Original.

*A Preface to the  
Reader.*

[A. 8.]



He wickednes of reporte at thys Daie, good reader, is growen to such ranckenes, that nothing almost is able to defend it selfe against the venyme thereof, but that, either with open alaunder or priuie whispering, it shalbe so vndermynded, that it shall neither haue the good successe, whiche otherwise it myght, ne the thankes whiche for the worthines it ought.

Slender is as rank, that nothing is able from its venom.

It hinders good deeds, and stops gratitude for them.

It is better known by reaporthe vnto the nombre, then weyghed in effect almoste to any, that for the relief of the sore and sicke of the citie of London, \*It pleased the Kinges Maiestie, of famous memorie, Henry the eight (father to this our moste drad souereigne lorde nowe reigntyng) to erecte an hospitall in West Smithfield, for the continual relief & help of an .C. sore and diseased. And the same endowed with the yerely reuenues of v. c. Markes, to geue vnto y<sup>e</sup> sayd Citie and Citezeins condicionally, that they also, for their part, should adde other .v. hundred Markes by the yere. Whiche thyng, with al due thanckefulnesse, thei receiued at his maiesties handes: And (for that thei sawe it prociede from his highnesse, aswell of moste charitable zeale toward the afflicted membres and his brethren in Christ, as of a singuler fauour toward \*the Citie) very gladly embraced the condicion. Thinkyng it for their partes rather to litle then enough.

[\* A. 8. back.]  
To relieve the London poor and sick, Henry VIII (in 1544-5) founded Barts for 100 patients,

with 500 marks a year; the City finding another 500.

[\* sign. A. 8.]

But when they had taken suche suruey therof as was conuenient for them in this case to do: Although the Kynges maiesties endowment was after the rate of his hyghnes moste gracious gifte, yeat founde that the nature of the same, and the state of the whole, farre vnder that that they at the first had hoped. The raising of this .v. hundred marke rent, to lie only in a certeine of houses, some in great decaye, and some rotten ruynous; And some other to whom better tenantes had happened, alreadie leased out at terme and rent, skant reasonable for the behofe of y<sup>e</sup> poore. So that first to ma<sup>e</sup>ke them againe worth the wonted

But the City found that

Henry's 500 marks were to come only from houses in ruin, or let at very low rents.

[\* A. 8. back.]

292 App. XVI. *Barts Order, 1552. City Endowment.*

Also, that these  
500 marks had to  
pay pensions to  
the Chaplain, &c.,

so that the bal-  
ance kept only  
3 or 4 harlots in  
childbed.

[\* sign. A. III.]

The Citizens,  
therefore,  
to relieve their  
own poor, and  
others flocking

into the City,

spent, not only  
500 marks a year  
on Barts,

[\* A. III. back.]  
but also nearly  
£1000,

which enabled  
them to provide  
stly for 100 poor  
and sick.  
Yet some busy-  
bodies

standard the  
Citizens, and  
[\* sign. A. v.]  
perverted the  
minds of the  
Preachers against  
them.

revenue, and then to continue them in the same, was no smal charge; & the helpe therunto, whiche oute of the better repaired might have growen, was by the former leases and rentinges preuented. In thospill it selfe (besyde the pencions yasuyng out of the sayd .v hundred markes, and graunted by the letters patentes of his said highnes to the Hospiteler there, and to other the ministers of the same<sup>1</sup>) was founde so much of housholde ymplementes and stufte towarde the succouryng of this hundred poore, as suffised thre or foure harlottes, then lieng in chyldebbede, and no more, yea, barely so muche, if but necessary clenlinesse were regarded, so far \* had the godly meanyng of the gracious Kyng bene abused at those daies, & yet was litle then smelled, and lesse-talked of. The good citizeins neuerthelesse, not so muche discouraged with others euill doynge, & the great falle of their hope, as moued with y<sup>e</sup> duetie of their entrepryse & godly regard, not to their own poore and afflicted only, but to al other pore and diseased, which daily out of all quarters of the Realme resort to the Citie (as in to a *commune* receipt and refuge of their miserie), proceded with suche spied as they could, to the redresse of al these decayes, disordres and defaultes, and bestowed thereabout, aboue their couenaunt of .v. hundred markes yerely, for their welcomyng and \*beginnyng, not muche lesse then a thousand poundes;<sup>2</sup> wherby (togeth<sup>er</sup> with other their good endeuours) when they had wonne it to such poynct that it was fitt to receiue the nombre, and to succour the same with all necessaries requisite and in suche case nedeful, and had in deade receiued and daily mainteyned it at the full, certeyne busie bodies, more ready to espie occasion how to blame other, then skilful how to redresse thynges blame-worthie in dicde, yea, I feare me, hauing al their zeale in their tongue only, not contented priuately, one and another, among their neighbours, to hynder the profetts of the poore, and to slaunder the good Citizeins occupied thereabout, rounded into the ea<sup>r</sup>es of the preachers also, their tender consideracion. Who being lesse circumspect in crediting their matter-ministrers, then to men of suche calling apperteineth, and thynkyng peradventure if the

<sup>1</sup> See Forewords, the Section on the Hospital.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Hy. Hubbathorne, merchant-tailor, was Lord Mayor in 1546, and Sir John Gresham (sheriff in 1537) in 1547, when the first Surgeons at Barts were appointed.

<sup>3</sup> A \* is generally in this word in the Orders. See also p. 221.

citie had done their dutie herein, this Hospital should haue made a generall swiepe of all poore and afflicted,—As though this priuie backebityng could not so sufficiently and weyghtely set forth this enormitie of the Citezeins, as somed behouefull for the querels of charitie,—toke vpon them to geue spiede and auctoritie to the thyng, eche after his maner. So that the good Citizeins, which nowe for these .v. yeares space haue shouned for no lothesomenes, to administer the relief without other gayne \*then that Iesus Christe, God & man, promiseth, & will vndoubtedly paye, haue here receyued nothyng elles, but for a commune benefight, an open detraction, and the pore (as shal afterward appiere) a larger hynderaunce. Where in the meane season notwithstanding, there haue bene healed of the pocques, fystules, filthie blaynes and sores, to the nombre of .viij. hundred, and thence saufe deliuered, that other hanyng nede myghte entre in their rounne; Beside eyght skore and .xii. that haue there forsaken this life, in their intollerable miseries and griefes, whiche elles might haue died, & stoncke in the iyes & noses of the Citie, for all these charitie-tenderers, if thys place had not vouchedsaufe to be\*come a poompe alone, to ease a commune abhorryng. Wherein, although they haue at all handes so well deserued, that hardie it ware with the moeste fauourable reporte to requite it, yet for that they loke for their rewarde another where, contented to passe that in silence: It may iustely be aunswered to all suche charitie-proctours, that if they well weighed these thynges already alleaged, and the wages of the Cyrurgiens, and such officers and seruantes as nedefully are attendaunt about the poore, the charges of beddyng and shifte for so many sore and diseased, & the excessyue prices of all thynges at this day, thei might both merueile how so many are there relieued and daily mainteyned, \*and with repentaunce of that they haue mysseyde, endeouore them selues, with asmuch good reporte and prayse, to aduaunce both the died and the doers, to wipe away the slaunder, as they haue to hinder them both by the contrary.

But, forasmuch as it is doubtful whether thei wil do as they maie, and of conscience are bounden, and the slaundre is so wide spred, that a narowe remedy cannot amend it: It is thought good to the Lord Mayour of thys Citie of London,<sup>1</sup> as chief patrone and

<sup>1</sup> Sir George Barne, haberdasher (sheriff in 1545), was

These Frenchers  
wrongly made

publie the back-  
bitters' slanders;  
and the good  
Citizens, for their  
5 years' nameless  
work done for  
Christ's sake,  
[\* A. v. back.]

received only  
detraction.

During these 5  
years (1547-1552),  
800 sick folk were  
healed in the Hos-  
pital,

and 82 died,

who else would  
have stunk in the  
noose of the City,

[\* sign. A. v.]  
if the Hospital  
had not acted as  
a pump to this  
nuisance.  
Yet, instead of  
praise, slander  
has come.  
But the Citizens  
have been silent,  
looking for their  
reward in Heaven.

The Hospital  
Surgeons and  
servants have  
been paid,  
and bedding, &c.  
found,  
tho' prices have  
been excessive.

[\* A. v. back.]  
The slanderers  
ought to repent,  
and praise and  
help the good-  
doers.

But as they may  
not,

the Lord Mayor  
(Sir G. Barne),  
as Patron and  
Governor of Barts,

now publishes  
the Officers and  
Orders appointed  
by him and 12  
of the oldest  
Citizens,  
[\* sign. A. viij.]  
both to stop the  
slander,

and to let all men  
know how the  
Hospital is  
administred.

If further reform  
is found needful,

the Hospital men  
will gladly adopt  
it.

[\* A. viij. back.]

And let all folk  
know that, though

at first the number  
of poor was kept  
to 100,

the City wish to  
enlarge it to 1000.

The City wish  
too that all other  
Hospitals and  
the Savoy

[\* sign. A. viij.]  
may be stirred up  
by their example  
to help the poor,

specially now,  
when their misery  
is so great.

May Christ  
kindle in us all  
the Faith that  
works by Love!

gouvernour of this Hospitall, in the name of the Citie, to publishs at this present the officers and ordres by hym appointed, and from time to tyme practysed and vsed by twelue of the Citizeins mooste \*auncient, in their courses, as at large in the processe shal appier, partly for the staye and redresse of such slaundre, and partly for that it myght be an open wytnesse and knowledge vnto all men, howe thynges are administred there, & by whom. Wherein, if any man iudge more to be set forth in woordes, than in diede is folowed, there be meanes to resoluue him.

But if there be not so muche set furth as is expedient (as what thyng at the first can atteyne to the toppe of perfectnesse), or that any manne spieth ought in this ordre worthie to be reformed, he shall not nede to crie it at the Crosse,<sup>1</sup> but shall fynde those at the Hospital, that both gladly will & may reforme it. And where yet by suche \*meanes, occasion is founde, as tofore was sygnified, to withdrawe mennes charities, by reason that it is thought but folly to bestowe more relief where there is enough for the nombre already: The Citie, of their endlesse good wil toward this most necessarie succour of their pore brethren in Christ, although at y<sup>e</sup> first they semed bounde to the precyse nombre of an hundred, and no more, wyshe al men to be most assuredly perswaded, that if by any meanes possible thei might, they desire to enlarge the benefyght to a thousand, as ordinarie as at this daie the hundred are.

Finally, they wyshe that all Almoisers and houses of Almoise, knowne either by the name of hospital, or Sauoy,<sup>2</sup> might, \*by these their doynge, be prouoked to lyke endeour & benefyght to the poore, that what one is not able alone to succour, the other myght in felowshippe supplie, at this tyme namely, when the mycery of the poore mooste busily semeth to awake.

The Lorde Iesus, kyndle in vs all, that faith that worketh by loue, that we may in diede put on Christe,

Lord Mayor in 1552, and Sir Thomas White, merchant-tailor, in 1558.

<sup>1</sup> Paul's Cross, in the Cathedral Yard.

<sup>2</sup> The Savoy Hospital was suppress by Edw. VI on June 10, 1553, just before his death, and its furniture and part of its income used for Bridewell and St. Thomas's. Mary re-founded it in Nov. 1556; the court-ladies and maids of honour gave it beds, &c.; and it was confirmd by patent on 9 May, 1558.—Stow's *London*, p. 166, col. 1, ed. 1842.

our ryghteousnesse before God, and not suffre him to lye vp in presse, that sicketh to be worne, to the glory of his father, and ours, and to the testimony of our hope layd vp in hym. Amen.

## \*The diuision

of the Gouvernours, and

officers: the names, and nature of them both.

[\* sign. B. 1.]



T behoueth first to vnderstande for the more euidენტnesse of that *that* foloweth, that there are in this administracion, two sortes or kyndes of menne. The one called Gouvernours (by a name proper to their authoritie) placed there by the lorde Maiour, as patrone of this Hospitall: And the other called officers, that for wages are hyred, for to haue y<sup>e</sup> necessarie doynges \*in the seruice of the house and the poore.

1. Governours.

2. Paid Officers.

[\* B. 1. back.]

The governours so chaunge, that thone haulfe remayneth .ii. yeares in their gouernaunce to helpe and enstructe the later elected, whiche also become enstructours to their folowers. And these are in nombre twelue, whereof foure are Aldremen, & the residew Communers; and accordyng to their gouernaunce, thus are they named:

Governours serve  
3 yeares.

They are 12 in  
number:  
4 Aldremen,  
8 Communers.

The President, alway the Seniour Alderman.

President, the  
Seniour Alderman.  
4 Surveyours.

Surueyours foure, two Aldremen and two Communers.

Almoisners foure, one Aldreman, and thre Communers.

4 Almoners.

The Threasaurour, a Commoner.

1 Treasurer.

Scrutyners, two, both Communers. \*The officers are .vii. in nombre, continuable or remouable, as the governours shall fynde cause, and be thus called:

[\* sign. B. 1.]

2 Scrutineers.  
7 Paid Officers.

The Hospiteler.

the Chaplain first,

The Renter Clerck.

The Butler.

Porter fourth,

The Porter.

The Matrone.

The Sisters .xii.

The Byddles .viii.

Beddles last.

## 296 XVI *Barts Order*, 1552. *Charge to new Governors.*

3 Surgeons,  
who get wages,  
and attend daily.

The Visitor of  
Newgate.

The Governors,  
the City yearly  
[\* B. H. back.]  
elect six:  
2 Aldermen and 4  
Commoners.

The 15 old  
Governors  
make their Clerk  
read to the 6 new  
Governors, this  
Charge:

There are also as in a kynde by them selues .iiii. Chirurgiens in the wages of the Hospitall, geuyng daily attendaunce vpon the cures of the poore,

And a minister named the visitour of Newegate, accordyng to his office and charge.

The Gouvernours are alwayes elected by the lorde Maior and his brethren, who zereley \*electeth vj,<sup>1</sup> that is to saye, two Aldermen, and .iiii. Commoners, which are admitted into the hospitall, after this maner.

The whole companie of the xii. olde Gouvernours, sittying in assembly togethether, cause their clerck to reade vnto the .vj. newly elected, the charge hereafter folowyng:

### The Charge.

\* You are elected  
Governors for  
2 years;

and, under the  
Lord Mayor's  
[\* sign. B. H.]  
Orders,

you shall (setting  
your own business  
aside)

attend to the  
Hospital  
with loving  
diligence.

Having set hand  
to the plough,

you must not  
turn back.  
[\* B. H. back.]

for work for the  
poor is work for  
Christ.

On God's behalf,  
then, do your

utmost to comfort  
the poor of this  
Hospital,

as faithful  
Stewards

IT may please you to vnderstand, that ye are here elected and chosen, as fellowe gouernours of this hospitall, to continue by the space of two yeares: By all whiche tyme, accordyng to such laudable decrees and ordinaunces, as haue bene & shalbe made by the authoritie of the lorde Maiour, \*chief patrone hereof, in the name of the Citie, and the consent of the gouernours for the tyme beyng, (all your other businesse set aparte, asmuche as you possibly may,) ye shall endeuoure your selues to attende onely vpon the nedefull doynges of this house, with suche a louyng and careful diligence, as shal become the faithfull ministers of God, whom ye chiefie in this vocation are appointed to serue, and to whome, for your negligences or defaultes herein, ye shall render an accompt. For truly ye cannot be blamelesse before God, if after you haue sette hande to this good plough, and promysed your diligence to the poore, ye shall contrarywyse tourne your head backwarde, & not perfourme the succour that Christ loketh for at your handes, & hath witnessed to be done to hymself, with these wordes: "Whatsoeuer ye do to one of these nedy persones for my names sake, the same ye do vnto me. And contrary wyse, if ye neglecte and despyse them, ye despise me." We therefore require and desire euery of you, on Goddes behalfe, and in his moeste holy name, that ye endeuour your selues, to the best of your wittes and powers, so to comfort, ordre and gouerne this house and the poore thereof, that at the last daie, ye maie appere before the face of God, as true and faithfull Stewards and dis-

<sup>1</sup> Orig. 'vp,' with the body of the p scratcht out.

## XVI. *Barts Order*, 1552. *President & Treasurer*. 297

posers of all suche thynges as shal, for the comfort and succour of them, (duryng the tyme \*of your office) be committed to your credite and charge. And this to do, we require you faithfully to promes, in the syght of God, and hearyng of your brethren. And so doing, we here admitte you into our fellowship.

[\* sign. B. III.]

In the sight of God!  
Thus we admit  
you into our  
Fellowship.

THAT done, & the new elected consentyng and yelding them selues to the charge, the hault of the gouernours hat haue already fulfilled their two yeares gouernaunce, do stand apart: and the other hault that shall remayne with the newe elected, to take them by the handes, after their degrees, and so admitt them, and not to lepart felowshyppe before thei haue dyned togueather all wholly, aswell those that come newe, as those that haue gouerned their tyme, and those \*that remayne, euery man at hys awne cost and charge.<sup>1</sup>

Then the 6  
Gouernours who've  
serued 2 yeares  
shall stand aside;  
and the 6 new  
year men shall  
take the new ones  
by the hand,  
and all 12 shall  
dine together,

[\* B. III. back.]  
each at his own  
cost.

### The President.

THE President of this Hospitall, is chief ruler and gouernor of the same,<sup>2</sup> vnder the lord Maiour, who hath auctoritie from tyme to tyme, to conuocate and cal together al the gouernours for matters concernyng the maintenaunce and good orderyng of the poore, and to demaunde of euerie of theim, the accompt of their loynges in their seuerall offices, & with the assent and consent of the sayd gouernours, to graunte leases and fees, & make necessarie decrees and ordinaunces.

The President

is chief ruler,

calls the Gouernours  
together,

asks for an  
account of their  
doings,  
grants leases,  
and makes  
Ordinaunces.

### \* The Thresaurour and his charge.

ALL the Treasure of thys house, is committed to your charge, that is to saye, all suche money as shall ryse and growe, either by rentes or by giftes to the vse of thys house, of the whiche ye shall kepe a true and a iust accompte. And it shal not be laful for you to pay any maner of persone, any some or sommes of money, (excepte it be to the Stewarde of this house, for the victuallyng of the same, and the ordinary fees and wages that goeth out thereof): but ye shall first haue the names of those persones subscribed to the said some of money, vnder whose office and charge suche

[\* sign. B. v.]  
The Treasurer

takes charge of  
all money.

keeps account  
of it,

and pays none  
away (save to the  
Steward for food  
and wages)

unless the officer  
responsible signs  
his name to the  
bill.

<sup>1</sup> N.B. No guzzling out of poor folk's funds.

<sup>2</sup> The first specially-chosen President of the Hospital was Sir John Ayliff, appointed in 1553. Till then, the Senior Alderman, under the Rules above, acted as President.



298 XVI. *Barts Order*, 1552. *Treasurer & Surveyors*.

[\* R. v. back.] pay\*ment shall happen to ryse and growe, or the names of the most part of them.

The Treasurer is to keep a separate Rent Account, to check the Renter, and show the rise or fall of rents.

To hand-in a yearly Cash Account on Oct. 28, which is

to be audited by 4 Auditors, [\* sign. B. v.] and verified by the Treasurer at 8 a.m. every Nov. 2 at the Hospital.

He shall then and there tell the new Treasurer the whole state of the Hospital affairs,

and hand him the balance of cash, and all documents.

[\* R. v. back.]

The Treasurer's reward is Christ's promises.

Ye shal also kepe one seneral accompte betweene the Renter & you, by whiche maie appere, not onely the charge of the said Renter and his arrerages, but also whether the rentes of the landes pertainyng to the said house, encrease or decaya.

Ye shal also yerely the .xx. day of October (within this Hospitall) yelde and gene vp in wrytyng vnto the President and gouernours of the same, a true & a perfect accompte of your whole charge, duryng the yere of your treasurerourship, and then the said President and gouernours shall name and appoint among them selues .iiii. to be auditours for \*the same. And the second daie of Nouember nexte folowyng, ye shall likewyse resorte to the said Hospitall, at the houre of eight of the clock in the forenone, that ye may then aunswere and clere your accompte, if any doubtes or fautes shall happen to arise or be found by the auditours of the same. And the same daie, then and there ye shall declare vnto the newe treasurer that shalbe appointed, the whole course & state of the affaires, profites & commodities of this house, in as large sorte as ye possibly canne, and deliuer vnto hym all suche somes of money due to y<sup>e</sup> house, as shal then rest in your handes, and al suche acquitaunces, rentalles, and other wrytynges, as necessarily shall apperteyne, to \*the affaires of the sayde house. And thesame daie to dyne within the said Hospital, with the gouernours therof. And in recompence of your paines, ye shalbe assured of the mercies laied vp for you in the promises & bloud of Iesu Christ our Sauour.

The Surveyors

Surueiours.

shall see to the Hospital lands and leases,

and register all Leases in the Repertory Booke.

[\* sign. B. v.]

V Nto you is committed the views of all the landes & leases pertainyng vnto this house, aswell suche as heretofore haue bene graunted, as also hereafter shalbe graunted; and ye shall cause thesame to be regested<sup>1</sup> in the repertory booke by the Clerke, from time to tyme, when and as often as you shall assygne hym, to thentent that y<sup>e</sup> gouernours of this house \*may alwaies be assured, what grauntes haue passed them; and both whereunto thei haue bound them selues, and also wherunto their tenauntes are bounde, that the landes and tenauntes maie be loked vnto accordingly. And ye

<sup>1</sup> See the verb 'regeste,' in the 'Scrutyners,' p. 301, below.

## XVI. *Barts Order*, 1552. *President & Treasurer*. 297

posers of all suche thynges as shal, for the comfort and succour of them, (duryng the tyme \*of your office) be committed to your credite and charge. And this to do, we require you faithfully to promes, in the syght of God, and hearyng of your brethren. And so doing, we here admytte you into our fellowship.

[\* sign. B. III.]

In the sight of God!  
Thus we admit  
you into our  
Fellowship.

THAT done, & the new elected consentyng and yielding them selues to the charge, the hault of the gouernours that haue already fulfilled their two yeares gouernaunce, to stand apart: and the other hault that shall remayne with the newe elected, to take them by the handes, after their degrees, and so admytt them, and not to depart felowshyppe before thei haue dyned togueather all wholly, aswell those that come newe, as those that haue gouerned their tyme, and those \*that remayne, euery man at hys awne cost and charge.<sup>1</sup>

Then the 6  
Gouernours who've  
serued 3 years  
shall stand aside;  
and the 6 one-  
year men shall  
take the new ones  
by the hand,  
and all 12 shall  
dine together,

[\* B. III. back.]  
each at his own  
cost.

### The President.

THE President of this Hospitall, is chief ruler and gouernor of the same,<sup>2</sup> vnder the lord Maiour, who hath auctoritie from tyme to tyme, to conuocate and cal together al the gouernours for matters concerning the maintenaunce and good orderyng of the poore, and to demandaue of euerie of theim, the accompt of their doynge in their seuerall offices, & with the assent and consent of the sayd gouernours, to graunte leases and fees, & make necessarie decrees and ordinaunces.

The President

is chief ruler,

calls the Gouernours  
together,

asks for an  
account of their  
doings,  
grants leases,  
and makes  
Ordinaunces.

### \* The Thresaurour and his charge.

ALL the Treasure of thys house, is committed to your charge, that is to saye, all suche money as shall ryse and growe, either by rentes or by giftes to the vse of thys house, of the whiche ye shall kepe a true and a iust accompte. And it shal not be laful for you to pay any maner of persone, any some or sommes of money, (excepte it be to the Stewarde of this house, for the victuallyng of the same, and the ordinary fees and wages that goeth out thereof): but ye shall first haue the names of those persones subscribed to the said some of money, vnder whose office and charge suche

[\* sign. B. v.]  
The Treasurer

takes charge of  
all money,

keeps account  
of it,

and pays none  
away (save to the  
Steward for food  
and wages)

unless the officer  
responsible signs  
his name to the  
bill.

<sup>1</sup> N.B. No guzzling out of poor folk's funds.

<sup>2</sup> The first specially-chosen President of the Hospital was Sir John Ayliff, appointed in 1553. Till then, the Senior Alderman, under the Rules above, acted as President.

298 XVI. *Barts Order, 1552. Treasurer & Surveyors.*

[\* R. v. back.] pay\*ment shall happen to ryse and growe, or the names of the most part of them.

The Treasurer is to keep a separate Rent Account, to check the Renter, and show the rise or fall of rents.

To hand-in a yearly Cash Account on Oct. 25, which is

to be audited by 4 Auditors, [\* sign. R. v.] and verified by the Treasurer at 8 a.m. every Nov. 2 at the Hospital.

He shall then and there tell the new Treasurer the whole state of the Hospital affairs,

and hand him the balance of cash, and all documents.

[\* R. v. back.]

The Treasurer's reward is Christ's promises.

Ye shal also kepe one seneral accompte betweene the Renter & you, by whiche maie appere, not onely the charge of the said Renter and his arrerages, but also whether the rentes of the landes pertainyng to the said house, encrease or decaya.

Ye shal also yerely the .xx. day of October (within this Hospitall) yelde and geue vp in wrytyng vnto the President and gouernours of the same, a true & a perfect accompte of your whole charge, duryng the yere of your treasourourahip, and then the said President and gouernours shall name and appoint among them selues .iiii. to be auditours for \*the same. And the second daie of Nouember nexte folowyng, ye shall likewyse resorte to the said Hospitall, at the houre of eight of the clock in the forenone, that ye may then aunswere and clere your accompte, if any doubtes or faultes shall happen to arise or be found by the auditors of the same. And the same daie, then and there ye shall declare vnto the newe treasurer that shalbe appointed, the whole course & state of the affaires, profites & commodities of this house, in as large sorte as ye possibly canne, and deliuer vnto hym all suche somes of money due to y<sup>e</sup> house, as shal then rest in your handes, and al suche acquitaunces, rentalles, and other wrytynges, as necessarily shall apperteyne, to \*the affaires of the sayde house. And thesame daie to dyne within the said Hospital, with the gouernours therof. And in recompence of your paines, ye shalbe assured of the mercies laied vp for you in the promises & bloud of Iesu Christ our Sauour.

The Surveyors

Surueiours.

shall see to the Hospital lands and leases,

and register all Leases in the Repertory Book.

[\* sign. R. v.]

Vnto you is committed the viewe of all the landes & leases pertainyng vnto this house, aswell suche as heretofore haue bene graunted, as also hereafter shalbe graunted; and ye shall cause thesame to be regest<sup>1</sup> in the repertory booke by the Clerke, from time to tyme, when and as often as you shall assygne hym, to thentent that y<sup>e</sup> gouernours of this house \*may alwaies be assured, what grauntes haue passed them; and both whereunto thei haue bound them selues, and also wherunto their tenauntes are bounde, that the landes and tenauntes maie be loked vnto accordingly. And ye

<sup>1</sup> See the verb 'regeste,' in the 'Scrutyners,' p. 301, below.

## XVI. *Barts Order*, 1552. *President & Treasurer*. 297

posers of all suche thynges as shal, for the comfort and succour of them, (duryng the tyme \*of your office) be committed to your credite and charge. And this to do, we require you faithfully to promys, in the syght of God, and hearyng of your brethren. And so doing, we here admitte you into our fellowshyp.

THAT done, & the new elected consentyng and yelding them selues to the charge, the haulf of the gouernours that haue already fulfilled their two yeares gouernaunce, to stand apart: and the other haulf that shall remayne with the newe elected, to take them by the handes, after their degrees, and so admitt them, and not to depart felowshyppe before thei haue dyned togueather ill wholly, aswell those that come newe, as those that haue gouerned their tyme, and those \*that remayne, eueri man at hys awne cost and charge.<sup>1</sup>

[\* sign. B. III.]

In the sight of God!  
Thus we admit  
you into our  
Fellowship.

Then the 8  
Governors who've  
served 3 years  
shall stand aside;  
and the 6 one-  
year men shall  
take the new ones  
by the hand,  
and all 15 shall  
dine together,

[\* B. III. back.]  
each at his own  
cost.

### The President.

THE President of this Hospitall, is chief ruler and gouernor of the same,<sup>2</sup> vnder the lord Maiour, who hath authoritie from tyme to tyme, to conuocate and cal together al the gouernours for matters concernyng the maintenaunce and good orderyng of the poore, and to demaunde of euerie of theim, the accompt of their doynges in their seuerall offices, & with the assent and consent of the sayd gouernours, to graunte leases and fees, & make necessaries decrees and ordinaunces.

The President

is chief ruler,

calls the Governors  
together,

asks for an  
account of their  
doings,  
grants leases,  
and makes  
Ordinances.

### \* The Thresaurour and his charge.

ALL the Treasure of thys house, is committed to your charge, that is to saye, all suche money as shall ryse and growe, either by rentes or by giftes to the vse of thys house, of the whiche ye shall kepe a true and a iust accompte. And it shal not be laful for you to pay any maner of persone, any some or sommes of money, (excepte it be to the Steward of this house, for the victuallying of the same, and the ordinary fees and wages that goeth out thereof): but ye shall first haue the names of those persones subscribed to the said some of money, vnder whose office and charge suche

[\* sign. B. v.]  
The Treasurer

takes charge of  
all money,

keeps account  
of it,

and pays none  
away (save to the  
Steward for food  
and wages)

unless the officer  
responsible signs  
his name to the  
bill.

<sup>1</sup> N.B. No guzzling out of poor folk's funds.

<sup>2</sup> The first specially-chosen President of the Hospital was Sir John Aylyff, appointed in 1553. Till then, the Senior Alderman, under the Rules above, acted as President.

298 XVI. *Barts Order, 1552. Treasurer & Surveyors.*

[\* R. v. back.] pay\*ment shall happen to ryse and growe, or the names of the most part of them.

The Treasurer is to keep a separate Rent Account, to check the Renter, and show the rise or fall of rents.

To hand-in a yearly Cash Account on Oct. 28, which is

to be audited by 4 Auditors, [\* sign. R. v.] and verified by the Treasurer at 8 a.m. every Nov. 3 at the Hospital.

He shall then and there tell the new Treasurer the whole state of the Hospital affairs,

and hand him the balance of cash, and all documents.

[\* R. v. back.]

The Treasurer's reward is Christ's promise.

The Surveyors

shall see to the Hospital lands and leases,

and register all Leases in the Repertory Book.

[\* sign. R. v.]

Ye shal also kepe one seuerall accompte betweene the Renter & you, by whiche maie appere, not onely the charge of the said Renter and his arrearages, but also whether the rentes of the landes pertainyng to the said house, encrease or decaye.

Ye shal also yerely the .xx. day of October (within this Hospitall) yelde and geue vp in wrytyng vnto the President and gouernours of the same, a true & a perfect accompte of your whole charge, duryng the yere of your treasourahip, and then the said President and gouernours shall name and appoint among them selues .iiii. to be auditours for \*the same. And the second daie of Nouember nexte folowyng, ye shall likewyse resorte to the said Hospitall, at the houre of eight of the clock in the forenone, that ye may then aunswere and clere your accompte, if any doubtes or faultes shall happen to arise or be found by the auditours of the same. And the same daie, then and there ye shall declare vnto the newe treasurer that shalbe appointed, the whole course & state of the affaires, profites & commodities of this house, in as large sorte as ye possibly canne, and deliuer vnto hym all suche somes of money due to y<sup>e</sup> house, as shal then rest in your handes, and al suche acquitaunces, rentalles, and other wrytynges, as necessarily shall apperteyne, to \*the affaires of the sayde house. And thesame daie to dyne within the said Hospitall, with the gouernours therof. And in recompence of your paines, ye shalbe assured of the mercies laied vp for you in the promises & bloud of Iesu Christ our Sauour.

Surueiours.

VNto you is committed the views of all the landes & leases pertainyng vnto this house, aswell suche as heretofore haue bene graunted, as also hereafter shalbe graunted; and ye shall cause thesame to be registred<sup>1</sup> in the repertory booke by the Clerke, from time to tyme, when and as often as you shall assygne hym, to thentent that y<sup>e</sup> gouernours of this house \*may alwaies be assured, what grauntes haue passed them; and both whereunto thei haue bound them selues, and also wherunto their tenauntes are bounde, that the landes and tenauntes maie be lokyd vnto accordingly. And ye

<sup>1</sup> See the verb 'regeste,' in the 'Scrutyners,' p. 301, below.

## XVI. *Barts Order*, 1552. *President & Treasurer*. 297

posers of all suche thynges as shal, for the comfort and succour of them, (duryng the tyme \*of your office) be committed to your credite and charge. And this to do, we require you faithfully to promys, in the syght of God, and hearyng of your brethren. And so doing, we here admitte you into our fellowshyp.

(\* sign. B. III.)

In the sight of God!  
Thus we admit  
you into our  
Fellowship.

THAT done, & the new elected consentyng and yelding them selues to the charge, the haulf of the gouernours hat haue already fulfilled their two yeares gouernaunce, stand apart: and the other haulf that shall remayne with the newe elected, to take them by the handes, after their degrees, and so admitt them, and not to lepart felowshyppe before thei haue dyned togueather all wholly, aswell those that come newe, as those that haue gouerned their tyme, and those \*that remayne, every man at hys awne cost and charge.<sup>1</sup>

Then the 6  
Gouernours who've  
serred 3 years  
shall stand aside;  
and the 6 one-  
year men shall  
take the new ones  
by the hand,  
and all 12 shall  
dine together,

(\* B. III. back.)  
each at his own  
cost.

### The President.

THE President of this Hospitall, is chief ruler and gouernor of the same,<sup>2</sup> vnder the lord Maiour, who hath auctoritie from tyme to tyme, to conuocate and call together al the gouernours for matters concernyng the maintenaunce and good orderyng of the poore, and to demaunde of eueris of theim, the accompt of their loynges in their seuerall offices, & with the assent and consent of the sayd gouernours, to graunte leases and fees, & make necessarie decrees and ordinaunces.

The President

is chief ruler,

calls the Gouernours  
together,

asks for an  
account of their  
doings,  
grants leases,  
and makes  
Ordinances.

### \* The Thresaurour and his charge.

ALL the Treasure of thys house, is committed to your charge, that is to saye, all suche money as shall ryse and growe, either by rentes or by giftes to the vse of thys house, of the whiche ye shall kepe a true and a iust accompte. And it shal not be laful for you to pay any maner of persone, any some or sommes of money, (excepte it be to the Steward of this house, for the victuall of the same, and the ordinary fees and wages that goeth out thereof): but ye shall first haue the names of those persones subscribed to the said some of money, vnder whose office and charge suche

(\* sign. B. v.)  
The Treasurer

takes charge of  
all money,

keeps account  
of it,

and pays none  
away (save to the  
Steward for food  
and wages)

unless the officer  
responsible signs  
his name to the  
bill.

<sup>1</sup> N.B. No guzzling out of poor folk's funds.

<sup>2</sup> The first specially-chosen President of the Hospital was Sir John Ayliff, appointed in 1553. Till then, the Senior Alderman, under the Rules above, acted as President.

298 XVI. *Barts Order, 1552. Treasurer & Surveyors.*

[\* B. v. back.] pay<sup>m</sup>ent shall happen to ryse and growe, or the names of the most part of them.

The Treasurer is to keep a separate Rent Account, to check the Renter, and show the rise or fall of rents.

To hand-in a yearly Cash Account on Oct. 29, which is

to be audited by 4 Auditors, [\* sign. B. v.] and verified by the Treasurer at 8 a.m. every Nov. 3 at the Hospital.

He shall then and there tell the new Treasurer the whole state of the Hospital affairs,

and hand him the balance of cash, and all documents.

[\* B. v. back.]

The Treasurer's reward is Christ's promise.

The Surveyors

shall see to the Hospital lands and leases,

and register all Leases in the Repertory Book.

[\* sign. B. v.]

Ye shal also kepe one seneral accompte betweene the Renter & you, by whiche maie appere, not onely the charge of the said Renter and his arrerages, but also whether the rentes of the landes pertainyng to the said house, encrease or decaye.

Ye shal also yerely the .xx. day of October (within this Hospitall) yelde and gene vp in wrytynge vnto the President and gouernours of the same, a true & a perfect accompte of your whole charge, duryng the yere of your treasourourship, and then the said President and gouernours shall name and appoint among them selues .iiii. to be auditours for <sup>\*</sup>the same. And the second daie of Nouember nexte folowyng, ye shall likewyse resorte to the said Hospitall, at the houre of eight of the clock in the forenone, that ye may then aunswere and clere your accompte, if any doubtes or faultes shall happen to arise or be found by the auditours of the same. And the same daie, then and there ye shall declare vnto the newe treasurer that shalbe appointed, the whole course & state of the affaires, profites & commodities of this house, in as large sorte as ye possibly canne, and deliuer vnto hym all suche somes of money due to y<sup>e</sup> house, as shal then rest in your handes, and al suche acquitaunces, rentalles, and other wrytynges, as necessarily shall apperteyne, to <sup>\*</sup>the affaires of the sayde house. And thesame daie to dyne within the said Hospital, with the gouernours therof. And in recompence of your paines, ye shalbe assured of the mercies laied vp for you in the promises & bloud of Iesu Christ our Sauour.

Surueiours.

Vnto you is committed the viewe of all the landes & leases pertainyng vnto this house, aswell suche as heretofore haue bene graunted, as also hereafter shalbe graunted; and ye shall cause thesame to be registred<sup>1</sup> in the repertory booke by the Clerke, from time to tyme, when and as often as you shall assygne hym, to thentent that y<sup>e</sup> gouernours of this house <sup>\*</sup>may alwaies be assured, what grauntes haue passed them; and both whereunto thei haue bound them selues, and also wherunto their tenauntes are bounde, that the landes and tenauntes maie be loked vnto accordingly. And ye

<sup>1</sup> See the verb 'registre,' in the 'Scrutyners,' p. 301, below.

## XVI. *Barts Order*, 1552. *President & Treasurer*. 297

posers of all suche thynges as shal, for the comfort and succour of them, (duryng the tyme \*of your office) be committed to your credite and charge. And this to do, we require you faithfully to promes, in the syght of God, and hearyng of your brethren. And so doing, we here admitte you into our fellowshyp.

[\* sign. B. H.]

In the sight of  
God!  
Thus we admit  
you into our  
Fellowship.

THAT done, & the new elected consentyng and yielding them selues to the charge, the hault of the gouernours that haue already fulfilled their two yeares gouernaunce, to stand apart: and the other hault that shall remayne with the newe elected, to take them by the handes, after their degrees, and so admitt them, and not to depart felowshyppe before thei haue dyned togeather all wholly, aswell those that come newe, as those that haue gouerned their tyme, and those \*that remayne, euery man at his awne cost and charge.<sup>1</sup>

Then the 6  
Gouernours who've  
serued 2 years  
shall stand aside;  
and the 6 one-  
year men shall  
take the new ones  
by the hand,  
and all 12 shall  
dine together,

[\* B. H. back.]  
each at his own  
cost.

### The President.

THE President of this Hospitall, is chief ruler and gouernor of the same,<sup>2</sup> vnder the lord Maiour, who hath auctoritie from tyme to tyme, to conuocate and cal together al the gouernours for matters concernyng the maintenance and good orderyng of the poore, and to demaunde of euerie of theim, the accompt of their doynge in their seuerall offices, & with the assent and consent of the sayd gouernours, to graunte leases and fees, & make necessarie decrees and ordinaunces.

The President

is chief ruler,

calls the Gouernours  
together,

asks for an  
account of their  
doings,  
grants leases,  
and makes  
Ordinaunces.

### \*The Thresaurour and his charge.

ALL the Treasure of thys house, is committed to your charge, that is to saye, all suche money as shall ryse and growe, either by rentes or by giftes to the vse of thys house, of the whiche ye shall kepe a true and a iust accompte. And it shal not be laful for you to pay any maner of persone, any some or sommes of money, (excepte it be to the Stewarde of this house, for the victuallyng of the same, and the ordinary fees and wages that goeth out thereof): but ye shall first haue the names of those persones subscribed to the said some of money, vnder whose office and charge suche

[\* sign. B. v.]  
The Treasurer

takes charge of  
all money,

keeps account  
of it,

and pays none  
away (save to the  
Steward for food  
and wages)

unless the officer  
responsible signs  
his name to the  
bill.

<sup>1</sup> N.B. No guzzling out of poor folk's funds.

<sup>2</sup> The first specially-chosen President of the Hospital was Sir John Ayliff, appointed in 1553. Till then, the Senior Alderman, under the Rules above, acted as President.



298 XVI. *Barts Order, 1552. Treasurer & Surveyors.*

[\* B. v. back.] pay\*ment shall happen to ryse and growe, or the names of the most part of them.

The Treasurer is to keep a separate Rent Account, to check the Renter, and show the rise or fall of rents.

To hand-in a yearly Cash Account on Oct. 28, which is

to be audited by 4 Auditors. [\* sign. B. v.] and verified by the Treasurer at 8 a.m. every Nov. 3 at the Hospital.

He shall then and there tell the new Treasurer the whole state of the Hospital affairs,

and hand him the balance of cash, and all documents.

[\* B. v. back.]

The Treasurer's reward is Christ's promise.

The Surveyors

shall see to the Hospital lands and leases,

and register all Leases in the Repertory Book.

[\* sign. B. v.]

Ye shal also kepe one seneral accompte betweene the Renter & you, by whiche maie appere, not onely the charge of the said Renter and his arrerages, but also whether the rentes of the landes pertainyng to the said house, encrease or decaye.

Ye shal also yerely the .xx. day of October (within this Hospitall) yelde and geue vp in wrytynge vnto the President and gouernours of the same, a true & a perfect accompte of your whole charge, duryng the yere of your treasourahip, and then the said President and gouernours shall name and appoint among them selues .iiii. to be auditours for \*the same. And the second daie of Nouember nexte folowyng, ye shall likewyse resorte to the said Hospitall, at the houre of eight of the clock in the forenone, that ye may then aunswere and clere your accompte, if any doubt or faultes shall happen to arise or be found by the auditours of the same. And the same daie, then and there ye shall declare vnto the newe treasurer that shalbe appointed, the whole course & state of the affaires, profites & commodities of this house, in as large sorte as ye possibly canne, and deliuer vnto hym all suche somes of money due to y<sup>e</sup> house, as shal then rest in your handes, and al suche acquitaunces, rentalles, and other wrytynges, as necessarily shall apperteyne, to \*the affaires of the sayde house. And thesame daie to dyne within the said Hospital, with the gouernours therof. And in recompence of your paines, ye shalbe assured of the mercies laied vp for you in the promises & bloud of Iesu Christ our Sauour.

Surueiours.

Vnto you is committed the viewe of all the landes & leases pertainyng vnto this house, aswell suche as heretofore haue bene graunted, as also hereafter shalbe graunted; and ye shall cause thesame to be regest<sup>1</sup> in the repertory booke by the Clerke, from time to tyme, when and as often as you shall assygne hym, to thetent that y<sup>e</sup> gouernours of this house \*may alwaies be assured, what grauntes haue passed them; and both whereunto thei haue bound them selues, and also wherunto their tenauntes are bounde, that the landes and tenauntes maie be loked vnto accordingly. And ye

<sup>1</sup> See the verb 'regesta,' in the 'Scrutyners,' p. 301, below.

as before is assigned in the Booke of Repertory: in fewe wordes set furth the somme of euery decree, order, &c. conteyned therein. And chiefly ye shall vse the generall woordes before described in the booke of accomptes, that by the enteraunce of them into your calender, euery matter may easlie and readylie be founde. And ye shall not fayle, but in fyue daies next after the enteraunce of any thyng into this booke, to enter the same by a generall worde in\*to the Calendre, that as wel when you are absent, as present, the gouernours may without difficultie be satisfied of that they seke for therein.

stating their  
effect.

Make your entries  
in the Index  
within 5 days of  
[\* D. III.]  
the Orders pass-  
ing,  
so that the  
Governours may  
easily find what  
they look for.

### The office of the Hospiteler.

**Y**our office is chiefly and mooste principally, to visite the pore in their extremes and sicknesses, and to minister vnto them the mooste wholesome and necessary doctrine of Gods comfortable worde, aswel by readyng & preaching, as also by ministring the sacrament of the holy Communion at tymes conuenient.

*The Hospitler  
or Chaplain.*

Visit the Poor in  
their sickness,

and comfort them  
with God's word.

To receiue also into this house, of the Stewarde, to the vse of the same poore, suche victualles and other prouision as by hym \*shalbe prouided, entryng the same into your boke, and saufelie to kepe them to their vse.

Take from the  
Steward all food  
needed for the  
Poor  
[\* D. III, back.]  
(entering it in  
your Book.)

Also to deliuer vnto the cooke of this house, from time to time, so muche of the same victualles as shalbe nedefull for the present tyme, to be dressed for the poore. And the same beyng dressed, to see seasonably and trulie deliuered, and distributed, vnto them.

and hand the  
Cook what he is  
to prepare for  
the Poor:

then see it given  
them.

Also, whensoever any poore persone shalbe here presented or sued for, to be admitted into this house, you shall receiue the same presentacion, calling vnto you, two of the Chirurgiens of this house, to view and examyne the disease of the said persone, whether it be curable or not curable: if they Iudge it curable, then \*you, by a bill of your hande, to certifie the name and sirenname of the sayd diseased persone, vnto the Almoners, or two of them at the least, desiring them to subscribe their names thereunto; & that beyng done, you to kepe vpon a file the same byll for your warraunt. And then ye shall committe the same pore to the matrone of this house, to be placed accordingly as y<sup>e</sup> case shal require.

When any poor  
person comes  
with an Order,

see him, get 2  
Surgeons to ex-  
amine him;  
and if he is  
curable,

certify his name  
to 2 Almoners;

get their signa-  
tures; file this;

and hand the  
Patient to the  
Matron.

Also at the admission of euery poore person into this Hospitall, ye shall enquire what money, or other

Find out what  
valuables he has,

and keep 'em  
for him till he's  
discharged.

[\* D. v, back.]

Give the Almoners  
a monthly list of  
Entrances, for  
them to register.

If any Poor die,

hand their money,  
&c. to the Treas-  
urer for the use  
of the other Poor.

When Patients  
are cured, do you  
and the Surgeons  
present them to  
the Almoners,

[\* D. vj.]

and, after register-  
ing their names,  
&c.,

give 'em a Pas-  
sport, after the  
precedent at the  
end of this Book.

If you see any  
wrong going on,

report it to 1 or 2  
of the Governors.

[\* D. vj, back.]  
*The Steward and  
Butler.*

Buy all food that  
the Almoners tell  
you to.

If you neglect  
your duty,

you hurt God,  
whom the Poor  
are.

thynges of valewe, he or she hath; and the same, together with his or her name, to enter into your booke; and you to receiue & saufelie kepe the same, to the vse of the same poore, to be deliuered againe vnto hym, her, \*or them, when they shalbe cured out of this house And monethly to deliuer to the sayd Almoners, a copie of your boke of enteraunces, that they maie regeest the same in the booke of their ordinary dooynges. And if any suche pore fortune do decease and die in this house, then you to deliuer all suche money and other thynges as shalbe in your custody, to the Treasaurour of this house for the tyme beyng, enterying the same into your booke, to be committed and disposed to the vse of the poore.

And as often as any of the poore shalbe cured and made whole, you, with the Chirurgiens, to present them to the Almoners of this house, at their next assemblie here, & to regeeste into your \*booke the names and sirenames of them, and enery of them, with the daie and yere of their deliuerie and departure out of this house. And at their departure, to geue vnto them a passeporte, to be made accordyng to the President and fourme that is expressed in the end of this booke.

This is your charge; and ye haue not to doe with any other thyng in this house. Howbeit, if ye shal perceyue at any time any thyng doone by any Officer of this house, or other persone, that shal maynteyne disorder, or procure slaunder, to this house, that ye then declare the same to some one or two of the gouernours of this house, & to none other persone, and no furdur to meddle therein.

### \*The office of the Steward and Butler.

**Y**Oure charge is, faithfully and trulie to make provision of such nedeful victualles, as from time to time ye shalbe appoynted by the Almoners to prouide for the poore of this house, remembryng alwaies that, wherein so euer you shall hynder, or negligentlie burden this house, either with excesse prices, or not making your prouision in due tyme, the same damage and hurte you do vnto GOD, whose members the poore are;<sup>1</sup> & therefore ye ought the rather to study to serue

<sup>1</sup> Compare Chaucer, *Parson's Tale*, Works, ed. Bell, iii. 73:—"Thilke that they clepe thralles, ben Goddes people; for humble folk ben Cristes frendes; they ben contubernially with the Lord."

*Barts Order, 1552. The Butler and Matron. 309*

in this house with feare of God and conscience, as one that manifestly and plainly walketh before the face of God, \*who perfectlie seeth and beholdeth the very thoughtes of your harte.

Your charge is also to kepe a true and perfect accompt of al suche victualles as by you shal be bought, and to make deliuerance of the said victualles vnto the Hospiteler of this house, declaring vnto him the iust weight, number, and prices, of the same, that he may make due & true enteraunce and accompte therof.

Also, at al such tymes as shal be nedefull for the poore to be serued of their ordinary meales or otherwyse, eyther of Bread or drynke, ye shal not be absent, but with all diligence & redines ye shall geue your attendaunce.

Ye shall haue to do in none other mannes office in this house, \*but only with your owne, in maner as is aboue described. But if ye shall perceiue at any tyme, any thyng doone by any officer or other persone of this house, that shalbe vnprofitable therunto, or that may be occasion of any disorder, or shal engender slaunder to the same, That then ye declare the thyng to some one or two of the Gouvernours of thys house, and to none other persone, nor farther to meddle therein.

**The office of the Matrone.**

**Y**oure office is to receyue of the Hospiteler of this house, all suche sicke and diseased persones as he, by hys warraunt sygned from the Almoners of this house, shall pre<sup>s</sup>ent vnto you; and the same persones to bestowe in suche conuenient places within this house, as you shall thynke mete.

You haue also the charge, gouernaunce, and order of all the Sisters of this house, to see from tyme to tyme, that euery of them in the wardes committed to their charge, do their dutie vnto y<sup>e</sup> pore, as wel in makyng of their beddes, & keping their wardes, as also in wasshyng & purgyng their vncleane clothes & other thynges. And that the same Sisters euery nyght, after the houre of .vii. of the clocke in the wynter, and ix. of the clock in the Somer, come not out of the womans ward, excepte some grente and speciall cause (as the present daunger of death or nedefull succoure of \*some poore persone.) And yet at suche a speciall tyme, it shall not be lafull for euery Sister to go furth to any person or persones (no though it be in her

Serve here with  
fear of God and  
Conscience.

[\* D. viij.]

Keep a true ac-  
count of all food  
you buy,  
hand it to the  
Hospiteler,

an<sup>d</sup> tell him the  
real price.

Attend at all the  
poor folk's Meals.

[\* D. viij. back.]

If you see any  
wrong done in the  
Hospital,

tell 1 or 2  
Gouerners of it.

*The Matron.*

You're to receiue  
the sick from the  
Hospiteler,

[\* D. viij.]

and put them in  
fit places.

You govern the  
Sisters,

see that they wash  
the Patients  
heads, wash their  
clothes, &c. 1

and that the  
Sisters don't leave  
the Women's  
Ward after 7 in  
winter, and 9 in  
summer,  
save in case of  
[\* D. viij. back.]  
death, &c.,

### 310 *Barts Order, 1552. The Matron and Sisters.*

and then only to  
godly patients,  
for a short time.

In spare time,  
make the Sisters  
spin;

get flax from the  
Gouvernours,

[\* E. J.]  
and return it,  
when spun, for  
the Weaver.

Take special  
care of Sheets,  
Blankettes, Bedes,  
&c.

Let no poor  
Patient sit and  
drink in your  
house.  
And never send  
drink into the  
[\* E. J. back.]  
wards.

This Hospital is  
for members of  
Christ, not for  
drunkards.

If you see any  
wrong doing,

tell it to 1 or 2 of  
the Gouvernours.

[\* E. J.]  
*The Sisters.*

are to obey the  
Matrone,

and tend the  
Poore,

warde,) but onely for suche as you shall thinke  
vertuous, Godly & discrete. And the same Sister to  
remanye no longer with the same sicke persone, then  
nedefull cause shall require.

Also at suche tymes as the Sisters shall not be  
occupied about the poore, ye shall set them to spinning,  
or doying of some other maner of worke that male  
anoyde ydlenes, and be profitable to the poore of this  
house.

Also ye shall receiue the flaxe provided by the  
gouvernours of this house, and the same beyng sponne  
by the Sisters, ye shall \*committe to the sayde Gouvern-  
ours, that they may bothe put ordre for the weyghyng  
of the same to the Weauer, and for the measuryng of  
it at the returnyng thereof.

You shal also, as the chief gouerneresse and worthy  
Matrone of this house, haue speciall regarde to the  
good orderyng and keypyng of all the Shetes, Couer-  
lettes, Blankettes, Beddes, and other implementes, com-  
mitted to your charge, that now do, or hereafter shal,  
apperteine vnto the poore.

Also ye shall suffre no poore persone of this house  
to sitt and drynke within your house at no tyme;  
neyther shall ye so sende them drynke into their  
wardes, that thereby dronkenesse myght \*be vsed and  
continued among them; but as much as in you shal  
lie, ye shall exhorte them to vertue and temperaunce,  
declaring this house to be appointed for the herboure  
and succour of the dere members of Christes body, and  
not of dronkardes and vnthankfull persones.

Herewith ye are charged; and not with any other  
thing. But if there shalbe any thyng done by any  
officer or other persone of this house, that shalbe vn-  
profitable thereunto, or that may be occasion of any  
disorder, or shal engendre slaundre to the same, that ye  
then declare it to some one or two of the Gouvernours  
of this house, & to none other persone, nor no further  
to meddle therein.

#### \*The Sisters.

**Y**Our charge is, in al thinges to declare and shewe  
your selues gentle, diligent, and obedient to the  
Matrone of this house, who is appointed & auctorized  
to be your chief gouerneresse and ruler.

Ye shall also faithfully and charitably serue and  
helpe the poore in al their grieuous and diseases, aswell

by keepyng them swete and cleane, as in geuyng them their meates and drinikes after the moste honest & comfortable maner. Also ye shall vse vnto them good and honest talke, suche as may comforte & amend them; and vtterly to aduoyde all lyght, wanton, and fooliahe wordes, gestures and maners \*vsyng youre seluces vnto theim with all sobrietie and discretion. And aboute all thynges, se that ye auoyde, abhorre and detest, skoldyng and dronkenesse, as moste pestilent and filthie vices.

Ye shall not haunte or resorte to any maner of persone oute of this house, except ye be licenced by the Matrone; neither shal ye suffre any lyght persone to haunt or vse vnto you; neither any dishonest persone, eyther man or woman; and so muche as in you shall lie, ye shall auoyde & shonne the conuersacion and company of all men.

Ye shall not be out of the womans wards, after the houre of vii. of the clocke in the nyght, in the wynter tyme, nor after .ix. of the clocke at nyght, in the So<sup>m</sup>er, except ye shalbe appointed and commaunded by the matrone so to be, for some greate and speciall cause that shall concerne the poore (as the present daunger of death or extreme sicknes); and yet so beyng commaunded, ye shall remaine no longer with such diseased persone, then iust cause shall require.

Also if any iust cause of grief shal fortune vnto any of you, or that ye shall see lewdenes in any officer or other person of this house, whiche maie sounde or growe to the hurte or slaunder therof, ye shall declare thesame to the Matrone, or vnto one or two of the Gouvernours of this house, that spedy remedy therin may be had, & to none other persone; neither shall you talke or \*meddle therin any furdur. This is your charge; and with any other thyng you are not charged.

keep them sweet,  
give them  
their food,

talk improvingly  
to them,  
avoiding all  
wanton words  
[\* E. H. back.]  
and gestures,  
and specially  
detesting scolding  
and drunkenness.

You're only to  
visit folk autho-  
rized by the  
Matron,

and you're to  
shun the company  
of men.

You're not to  
leave the  
Women's Ward  
after 7 in winter,  
[\* E. H.]  
or 9 in summer,  
unless ordered by  
the Matron,

and then you're  
not to stop long.

If you see  
lewdness in any  
Officer,

tell the Matron  
and 1 or 2  
Gouvernours,

[\* E. H. back.]  
but no one else.

### The Chirurgiens.

**Y**Oure charge is, faythfully and truelie, to the vtter-  
moste of your knowlege & connyng, to helpe to  
cure the greues and diseases of the poore of this  
Hospitall, setting aside all fauoure, affection, gayne or  
lucre; and that as well to the poorest, destitute of all  
frendes and succours, as to such as shal peradventure  
be better frended, ye shall, with al fauour and frend-  
ship, procure the spedie recouery of their health.

Also for your stipend and fee, geuen & payd out of

*The Surgeons.*

Do your very  
best to cure  
the diseases of  
the Poor,  
without favouring

those with good  
friends.

## 312 *Barts Order, 1552. The Surgeons & the Porter.*

[\* R. III.]  
Be always ready,  
when bidden by  
the Almoners  
and Hospitler,  
to examine  
Patients.  
Then give your  
honest judgment  
on them.

*incorrect  
man of the  
message*  
and if they're  
incurable,  
don't admit them,  
{ so as to keep out  
the curable ones.

When you dress  
a Patient.  
[\* R. III, back.]

advise him to  
do no more,  
but to thank God.

Take no gift from  
any poor men or  
their friends.

And never burden  
this House with  
a Patient for  
whom you've  
been paid.

[\* R. v.]

Report any  
wrong-doing  
you see

to the Almoners.

this house, ye shalbe redy at the commaun<sup>d</sup>ement of the Almoners of this house, & Hospiteler of the same, to view and loke vpon such diseased persones as here from tyme to tyme shalbe presented. And after your view, to signifie to the sayde Almoners or Hospiteler, your Iudgement of the said diseased persone, without all affection, whether he or she be curable or not, to the entent there may be none admitted into this house that shalbe incurable, to y<sup>e</sup> great lette and hindernunce of the curing & helping of many other; ne none reiected and put back that are curable, to the greates slaunder of this house, and displeasure of God.

Also, at all suche tymes as ye shall go to the dressing of any diseased persone in this house \*as muche as in you is, ye shall geue vnto hym or her, faithfull and good counsaill, willing them to mynde to sinne no more, and to be thankefull vnto almighty GOD, for whose sake they are here comforted of men. And aboute all thyng, ye shal take nor receyue of no persone, any gifte or rewarde for the curyng or helping of them, either of them or their frendes; but ye shall first make the same offer or reward knowen vnto y<sup>e</sup> Almoners of this house.

Also we vtterly forbidde and commaunde you, that ye by no colour,<sup>1</sup> pester or burden this house with any sicke or diseased persone, for the curyng of whiche persone, ye before haue receiued a somme or sommes of money, vpon paine to be dimissed thys house.

\*This is your charge and office, with the whiche ye haue to do, and not with any other thing, neither with any other office, in this house. But if you shal perceiue at any tyme, any thyng done by any officer or other persone of this house, that shalbe vnprofitable therunto, or that maie be occasion of any disorder, or shal engender slaunder to the same, that ye then declare it to the Almoners, or one of them, & no farther to medle therein.

*The Porter.*

### The Office of the Porter.

Keep the doore,

[\* R. v, back.]  
and look to all  
folk going in  
and out.  
Don't let the  
food of the Poor  
be stolen.

**Y**Our charge is, to kepe the dores, oponyng and shuttyng them in due time, and to geue good hede to all suche \*persones as shall at any tyme passe to & fro out of this house, as wel for the counseighing or embesillyng of any thyng that apperteyneth to the poore of thys house, as Wood, Cole, Bread, meate or drynke,

<sup>1</sup> pretence.

## Barts Order, 1552. *The Porter & the Beadles.* 313

as also for all suspicious persones, as men to resorte to the womens warde, or women to the mens wardes, or such suspicious men to resorte vnto the men, or women to the women, as shalbe thought to bee petie pickers, or persones otherwise of naughtie disposition.

And also euery nyght, at the houre of .vii. of the clocke in the Somer, ye shall goo into euery warde where the poore men be, and see them in good order, and suffer no Sister nor other woman to remayne among them (ex\*cepte iust cause be declared by the Matrone) and cause them to saie the appointed praiera.

And whatsoeuer poore persone shalbe founde a swearer, or an vnreuerent vsr of his mouth, toward God or his holy name, or a contempnor of the Matrone or other officer of this house, or that shall refuse to go to bedd at the laufull houres before appointed, hym shall ye punyshe (after ones warning geuen) in the stockes, and further declare his folie vnto the Almoners of thys house, that they maie take suche order with him or theim, as shal seme mete by their discretions.

Ye shall also be diligent and redy from tyme to tyme, to doe such other thinges as the gouernours of this house shal assigne \*and appointe you. This is your charge, and more you haue not to do; but if ye perceyue at any time, any thyng done by any officer of this house, or other persone that shall mainteinue disorder, or procure slaunder to this house, that ye then declare the same to some one or two of the Gouernours of this house, and to none other persone, and no furdre to medle therin.

or suspicious  
men go to the  
Women's ward.

Every night at  
7 in summer,  
go into euery  
Men's Ward,

and turn out  
the Women.  
[\* E. vj.]

And if any  
Patient sweare,

or abuses the  
Matron,  
or won't go  
to bed,

put him in the  
Stocks, and report  
him to the  
Almoners.

Do whatever the  
Governours bid  
you,  
[\* E. vj. back.]

and report any  
disorder to them.

### The Biddelles.

**Y**oure office and charge is to geue attendaunce from tyme to tyme, vpon the gouernours of this house, and to do suche busines as they shall assygne you.

And also all suche daies as the Gouernours of this house \*shall not sitte in thys Hospitall for the affaires of the same, ye shall separate and deuide youre selues into sondrie partes of the citie & liberties therof, euery man takyng his seuerall walke. And if in any of your walkes ye shall happen to espie any persone infected with any lothelie grief or disease, whiche shall fortune to lie in any notable place of thys Citie, to the noiaunce and infection of the passers by, and slaunder of this house, ye shall then geue knowlege therof vnto the Almoners of this Hospitall, that they maie

*The Beadles.*

Attend the  
Governours  
when they re at  
the Hospitall.

[\* E. vij.]  
When they're not,  
let each Beadie  
patrol his district.

and if he see any  
diseased man,

report him to  
the Almoners.



take suche order therein as to them shalbe thought mete.

Also watch  
that no cured  
[\* E. vii, back.]  
Patient sham  
disease, and beg.

If he does, put  
him in the Cage,

and report to the  
Governours.

Beadles must  
not drink with  
beggary folk in  
pothouses,

or take bribes  
from them to let  
them beg.

[\* E. viii.]

Beadles mustn't  
let any idle  
vagabonds beg,

but must put  
them in jail,  
and report them  
to the Alderman  
or the Lord  
Mayor.

Ye shal also haue a speciall eye and regarde vnto all suche persones, as haue bene cured, & \*healed in this house, that none of them counterfeit any grieue or disease, neither begges within the Citie and liberties thereof. And if ye shall fortune to fynde any so doyng, ye shal immediatly committe hym, or them, to some Cage, and geue knowledge thereof to the Gouvernours of this house, that they maie take further order, as they shal thinke best.

Ye shall not haunte nor frequente the company of any poore and beggarlie persones (that is to saie), to drinke or eate with them in any victuallng house or other place, neither shall ye receiue any bribe or reward of any of them, least by occasion thereof ye should wyncke at them, and so lewedly licence them to begge, \*vpon paine to be dimissed this house.

Also ye shall not suffer any sturdy or ydle begger or vagabounde, to begge or aske almoise within this Citie of London, or suburbs of the same; but ye shal forthwith committe all suche to warde, and immediatly signifie the name and sirename of hym or theim, to the Alderman of that warde where ye shal apprehend any suche begger, or els to the Lorde Maiour, that execution may be done, as the lawe in that case hath provided. This is your charge.

*The Visitor of  
Newgate.*

[\* E. viii, back.]  
Is to visit the  
poor Prisoners,

and learn texts  
to comfort them  
with.

He is to act justly,  
take no bribes,

[\* F. i.]  
but exhort the  
Prisoners to  
restore their  
thefts,

### The Visitour of Newgate.

**Y**Our charge is, faithfully and diligently to visite all \*the poore and miserable captiues within the pryson of Newgate, and minister vnto them suche ordinary seruice at times conuenient, as is appointed by the kynges maiesties booke for ordinary praier.

Also that ye learne, without booke, the most wholesome sentences of holie Scripture, that may comfort a desperate man, that redilie ye may minister them to suche persones as ye shal perceyue them moste nedefull to be ministred vnto.

Also ye shall faithfully and truelie vse and beare youre selfe betwene partie and partie, excludyng brybes and all other corruption, that is to saie, betwene the prisoners and the parties to whome they haue offended, exhortyng them to the vttermoste of your connyng, to make restitution of their thynges falsly gotten, shewyng them the burden of conscience depending therevpon.

And that also thei disclose all suche other persones as they knowe liuyng, whiche by robberie or murther maie hurte a common weale. And in al their extremes and sickenesses, ye shal be diligent and redy to comforte them with the most pitthis and frutefull sentences of Goddes moste holy wordes.

and tell of other  
thieves.

And whatsoeuer persone you shall perceiue to haue substaunce, and to be mynded to bestowe somewhat thereof in dedes of charitie, ye shal exhorte him or them to bestowe some parte to the relief of the nedy and diseased \*persones of this house. And of al suche giftes from tyme to tyme, to geue knowledge to the Almoners or scrutiners of this house.

When he sees a  
charitable man,

he is to ask him  
to give to the  
Hospital poor.  
[\* F., back.]

And forasmuche as you are nombred among the ministers of Christes church,<sup>1</sup> ye shal therfore, foure tymes in the yeare at the least, (that is to saie) every quarter ones, do suche seruice in the said church as is requisite for suche a Minister to do.

He is to officiate  
at Christ Church  
once a quarter.

This is your charge, which  
see that ye do; and with  
any other thyngs ye  
are not char-  
ged.

<sup>1</sup> Christ Church, Newgate St., founded by Hen. VIII. on the dissolution of the Grey Friars Monastery. He put together the parishes of St. Nicholas and St. Ewin, and so much of St. Sepulchre's as was within Newgate, for his new parish and its Grey Friars Church which he cald Christchurch. The present church is from Wren's designs, and was finisht in 1705.—Cunningham. See page 131, above.

316 *Barts Order, 1552. Yearly Hospital Expenses.*

[\* F. H.]  
The Hospital  
yearly expenses.

\*The estimate of the yearly charges of this Hospital.

No account is taken here of the foundation expenses of the Hospital,

but only of the Maintenance charges,

[\* F. H. back.]  
1, certain,

2, uncertain.

IT is first here to be considered, that although the charges were very great, to bryng the endowment of the Hospitall, into suche poynte as behoued, and to furnysshe the house with necessary Implemētes and beddyng for suche nombre (as hath bene afore touched in the beginnyng<sup>1</sup>) yet is there of all these charges, no parcel here vnder mencioned, but the yearly expences onely, sustained for the maintenaunce and continuance of the same. And albeit these charges folowyng, be all and euery of them ordinary, and of necessitie, yeat, for that there \* is a difference in the certentie of the one and the other, they are deuyled into twoo kyndes, with these titles : Charges certeine, & Charges vncertaina.

1. First charges.

Charges certeine.

1. Wages and Fees.

Are firste, the yearly wages and fees of those Officers and Seruauntes, that necessarilie serue and attende for the poore, as ensueth ; and after them the charges of housholde, Reparacions, and suche lyke.

✓

Hospitler, £10;

To the Hospiteler ... .. x. l.

To the Renterclerck ... .. x. l.

To the butler ... .. vi. l. xiii. s. iiii. d.

Cook, £5;

To the Cooke, for his meate, drinke, and wages vi. l.

To the Porter ... .. vi. l.

3 Surgeons, £20.

To .iii. Chirurgiens ... .. lx. l.

To .viii. Biddles ... .. xxvi. l. xiii. s. iiii. d.

[\* F. H.]  
Liveries, £10.  
Matron and Sisters' wages,

\*To these and to the other, for their liveries x. l.

To the Matrone & .xii. Sisters, for their

wages ... .. xxvii. l. vi. s. viii. d.

board,

To the Matrone, for her boord wages, at

.xviii. pence the wike ... .. iii. l. xviii. s.

To the .xii. Sisters, for their boord wages

at .xvi. d. the wike for euery of them, xl. l. xii. s.

Liveries.

To the Matrone for her liverie ... .. xiii. s. iiii. d.

# Barts Order, 1552. Yearly Hospital Expenses. 317

To the Sisters for their lueries ... ..	vi. l.	
To the ministers of Christes church, by the kinges maiesties assignement, that is to saie, a vicare, a visitour of Newgate, v. pricestes, two clerckes, and a sextein, yereley <sup>1</sup> ... ..	C. and .vi. l.	H. Ministers of Christ Church, £160.
To the ministers of the chur <sup>e</sup> che within the Hospital, <sup>2</sup> by the same assignement, that is to saie, to a Vicare, a clercke, & a sexein ... ..	xxiii. l. vi. s. viii. d.	[* F. H. back.] Ministers of Lk. St. Bartholomew's, £73 6s. 8d.
To certeine men of Law and other persones, geuen in fees by the kynges sayd maiestie, yereley by patente ... ..	xxviii. l. liii. s.	H. Lawyers, &c., £20 4s.

## Charges of houshold.

For the dietes of an .C. persones, at twoo pence the persone for euery daie, iii. C. l. vi. s. viii. d.		iv. House Charges:
For .lxviii. lode of Coles, at xvi. s. the lode ... ..	liiii. l. viii. s.	Food,
For woodd yereley ... ..	xxiii. l.	Coale,
For candles yereley ... ..	v. l.	Wood,
For yereley reparacions of the Hospital, and tenementes apperteynyng to thesame ... ..	xl. l.	Repairs.
* Somme of the charges certein vii. C. lxxx. viii. l. ii. s.		[* F. H. J] Total, £790 12s.

The charges vncerteine (forasmuche as it cannot  
certainly be knownen to what they may amounte) are  
here sette forth without Sommes, onely to sygnifie vnto  
you, that there are many charges more to be considered,  
then certeine accompte can be made of.

## Charges vncertain.

For Shirtees, Smockes, and other apparell for the poore, niedefull, either at their commyng in or depar- ture. For Sugre & Spices for Cawdelles for the sickes, Flaxe for shetes, and Weuyng of the same; Soltwhiche <sup>3</sup> cloth for winding shetes, bolles, bromes, baskettes, en- cence, In <sup>n</sup> niper, ashes to boocke <sup>4</sup> their clothes. And		2. Varying Charges.
		Clothes,
		Sugar, Candles,
		Flax, Weaving,
		Winding-shetes,
		[* F. H. J, back.]

<sup>1</sup> See Forewords, § on Vicary at St. Bartholomew's.

<sup>2</sup> Little St. Bartholomew's.

<sup>3</sup> The only Saltwick in Bartholomew's *Gazetteer* 1887, is 'Saltwick, hamlet,  
Stannington parish, Northumberland, 4 miles S. of Morpeth.' This can hardly  
be the place meant.

<sup>4</sup> buck, wash.

### 318 *Barts Order, 1552. Yearly Hospital Expenses.*

leaving and  
journey-money.  
Last year, 1554,  
200.

Total, first charges,  
£798 2s., varying  
(? £100: say £300  
the two).

To meet this, are  
Hon. VIII's  
£233 6s. 8d.,  
and the City's  
£233 6s. 8d.,  
total, £466 12s. 6d.,

[ P. v.]  
leaving £181 6s. 8d.

and all unfixed  
charges, to the  
charity of merciful  
Citizens.  
For the increase  
of which, we pray  
to Christ.

also money geuen to the poore at their departure, whiche is measured accordyng to their Iourney and neda. The whiche vncertain charges amounted one years to the some of .lx. l.

So cometh the certeyn charges of this house yearly to the somme of vii. C. lxxx. xviii. l. ii. s. besyde the vncertain expences, and other extraordinary charges, whiche can not be rated ne accounted.

Toward the whiche, is yerely receiued by the endowment of the kynges maiestie .iii. C. xxxiii. l. vi. s. viii. d. And by the like endowment of the Citie of London, .iii. C. xxxiii. l. vi. s. viii. d. The whiche, in the whole, is .vi. C. lxvi. l. xiii. s. iii. d.

\*So is the Hospitall charged yerelie of certeine (besyde the vncertaine expences) ouer & aboue the somme of their reuenues .C. xxxi. l. viii. s. viii. d.

Whiche onely ryseth of the charitie of certeine mercyfull citizeins; for whose continuauce, with the encrease of moe, we earnestly prais vnto the founteine of mercie, Iesus Christe, the lord of all, to whome for euer apper-

teigne, the kyngdome, the  
power, and the glory,  
worlde without  
enda.

Amen.

## A daily seruice for the poore.



**T**he Houre of eyght of the Clocke in the morn-  
yng, and .iiij. of the clock at the afternoone,  
throughout the whole yeare, there shal a bel be  
rong the space of halfe a quarter of an houre,  
and immediatly vpon the seassyng of the bell,  
(the poore liyng in their beddes that cannot  
aryse; & kneling on their knees, that can aryse  
in euery <sup>2</sup>warde, as their beddes stande,) they  
shal by course, as many as can rede, begyn these praiers folowyng.  
And after that the partie whose course it shalbe, hath begon, all the  
rest in that warde shal folow and aunswere, vpon paine to be di-  
missed out of the house. And thryse in the weke, that is to saie,  
Sondaie, Wedensdaie, and Fridaie, they shal saie the letany  
in maner and forme as it  
is thende of this  
booke.

The minister shal begyn  
and the rest shal folowe.

**O**ure Father whiche arte in heauen, hallowed be thy name; thy  
kyngdom come; thy wil be done in earth as <sup>2</sup>it is in heauen.  
Geue vs this day our dailie bread, and forgeue vs oure trespasses, as  
we forgeue theim that trespass against vs.

And leade vs not into temptation.

The poore.

But deliuer vs from euel. Amen.

The minister.

O Lord fauourable here vs!

The poore.

And mercifullie graunte oure petitions!

The minister.

We confesse thy goodnes.

The poore.

For we haue tasted of thy mercy.

<sup>1</sup> F. vj.

<sup>2</sup> F. vj. back.

<sup>3</sup> F. vij.

320 *Barts Order, 1552. Daily Service for the Poor.*

The minister.  
 Blesse thine own people O God!  
 The poore.  
 Whiche succour vs for thy names sake.  
 The minister.  
 Remember not our wickednesse, O Lorde!  
<sup>1</sup>The poore.  
 And pardon all our synfulnes!  
 The minister.  
 Let vs geue prayes vnto the Lorde!  
 The poore.  
 We will praise hym in his holy woorda.  
 The minister.  
 Glorie be to the fater, and to the sonne, & to the holie ghost!  
 The poore.  
 As it was in the beginnyng, is now, and euer shalbe worlde  
 without ende. Amen!

The v. Psal. *Verba mea auribus.*

**P**onder my wordes, O Lorde, consider my meditation!  
 O herken thou vnto the voice of my callynge, my kyng and  
<sup>2</sup>my God, for vnto the wil I make my prair.

My voice shalt thou here be-tymes O lord; early in the morn-  
 yng, wil I directe my prair vnto the, and will looke vp.

For thou art the GOD that hath no pleasure in wickednes:  
 neither shal any euill dwell with the.

Suche as be folishe, shal not stande in thy syght: for thou  
 hatest al them that worke vanitie.

Thou shalt destroye them that speake leasyng: the lord will  
 abhorre both the bloud-thirstie and deceiptfull man.

But as for me, I will come vnto thy house, euen vpon the mul-  
 titude of thy mercy: and in thy feare wil I worship toward thy  
 holy temple.

<sup>3</sup>Leade me, O Lorde, in thy righteousnes, because of myne ene-  
 mies: make thy waie playne before my face!

For there is no faithfulness in his mouthe: their inward partes  
 are very wickednes.

Their throats is an open Sepulchre: they flatter with their tongue.

Destroye thou them, O God; let them peryshe through their  
 owne ymaginacions: cast them out in the multitude of their vngod-  
 liness, for they haue rebelled against the.

And let all them that put their trust in thee reioyse: they shall  
 euer be geuyng of thankes, because thou defendest them; they that  
 loue thy name shalbe ioyful in the.

<sup>1</sup> F.vij. back.

<sup>2</sup> F.vij.

<sup>3</sup> F.vij. back.

<sup>1</sup>For thou, Lord, wilt geue thy blessing vnto the ryghteous: & with thy fauourable kyndnesse wilt thou defende hym, as with a shyld.

The Psal. *Domine dominus.*

**O** Lorde our Gouernoure, how excellent is thy name in all the worlde: thou that haste sett thy glorie aboute the heauens.

Out of the mouthes of verie babes and sucklinges hast thou ordeyned strength, because of thine enemies: that thou mightest stil the enemye and the avenger.

For I will consider the heauens, euen the workes of thy fingers: the Mone and the starres whiche thou hast ordeyned.

<sup>2</sup>What is man, that thou arte myndefull of him? and the sonne of man, that thou visitest hym?

Thou madest hym lower then the angels: to crowne him with glorie and worshippe.

Thou madest him to haue dominion of the workes of thy handes: and thou hast put all thynges in subiection vnder his fete:

All shepe and oxen: yea, & the beastes of the fildes;

The foules of the ayre, & the fishe of the sea: and whatsoever walketh through the pathes of the Seas.

O lorde our gournour: how excellent is thy name in all the worlde!

Glory be to the father, &c.

As it was in the beginnyng, is now, and euer, &c. Amen.

<sup>3</sup>Then this antheme.

**B**Eyng made the seruauntes of God by faith in the merites & bloudsheddyng of his moste deare sonne, our sauour Iesu Christe, we are certayne and sure to be saued, and that no dampnacion can happen vnto vs, so that we walke not in the wicked desires of the fleshe, but in the heauenlie & vertuous life praysed and commended of God.

Then this Psalm. *Miserere.*

**H**Aue mercy vpon me (o god) after thy great goodnes: & accordyng vnto the multitude of thy mercies, doe awaie myne offences!

Washe me throwlie from my wickednesse: and cleanse me from my synne!

<sup>4</sup>For I knowlege my faultes; and my synne is euer before me.

Against the, onely, haue I sinned, and doone this euill in thy syght: that thou myghtest be iustified in thy sayyng, and cleare when thou arte iudged.

<sup>1</sup> G. j.

<sup>2</sup> G. j. back.

<sup>3</sup> G. ij.

<sup>4</sup> G. ij. back.

VICARY.

r



322 *Barts Order, 1552. Daily Service for the Poor.*

Behold, I was shapen in wickednesse: and in synne hath my mother conceived me.

But lo, thou requirest truthe in the inwarde partes: and shalt make me to vnderstande wisdomes secretly.

Thou shalt purge me with Isope, and I shalbe cleane: thou shalt washe me, & I shalbe whiter then Snowe.

Thou shalt make me heare ioye & gladnes: that the bones which thou hast broken may reioyce.

Turne thy face from my sin<sup>1</sup>nes: and put out al my misededes!

Make me a cleane harte (O God): and renue a ryghte spirite within me!

Cast me not awaie from thy presence: and take not thy holie spirite from me!

O geue me the comfort of thy helpe agayne: and stablishe me with thy fre spirite!

Then shall I teache thy waies vnto the wicked: and sinners shalbe conuerted vnto the.

Deliu<sup>r</sup> me from bloud-giltines, O god, for that thou art the God of my helth: & my tongue shal syng of thy ryghteousnes.

Thou shalt open my lyp<sup>2</sup>pes, O lorde: my mouthe shal shewe thy prayse.

For thou desirest no sacrifice; els wold I geue it the: but thou <sup>2</sup>delitest not in burnt offeryng.

The sacrifice of god is a troubled spirite: a broken and a contrite harte, O GOD, shalt thou not despice.

O be fauourable & gracious vnto Sion: builde thou the walles of Ierusalem!

Then shalt thou be pleased with the sacrifice of ryghteousnes, with the burnt offerynges and oblacions: then shall they offer younge bullockes vpon thyne Altar.

The Lesson.

**L** Et vs walke in the holy spirite of God, & abhorre the lustes and desires of oure filthy fleshe; for our fleshe is contrary to our spirite, and the spirite contrary to the fleshe: these <sup>2</sup>are so contrary, one to another, that we cannot do what we wold. But if we be led by the spirite of God, then are we not vnder dampnation. The dedes of the fleshe are these, aduoutrie, fornication, vncleennes, wantones, worshypp<sup>3</sup>ing of ymages, witchecraft<sup>e</sup>, hatred, variaunce, zeale, wra<sup>th</sup>e, strif, sedicious sectes, enuieng, murther, dronkenesse, glotony, & suche lyke. And whatseuer he be that committeth these thinges, shall not enherit the kyngdome of God. But the frutes of the holy spirite of God, are contrarie, whiche are these: Loue, peace, long suffering, gentlenes, goodnes, faythfulnes, mekenes, temperauncie,

<sup>1</sup> G .iiij.

<sup>2</sup> G .iiij, back.

<sup>3</sup> G .iiij[1].

and such like; against the whiche there is no lawe. And if we be the chyl dren of God, we <sup>1</sup> must crucifie our fleshe, with all the lustes and affections therof.

The Psalme of *Benedicite*.

O Al ye workes of the lord, speake good of the lorde! prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye aungelles of the Lorde, speake good of the lorde! prayse him and set hym vp for euer!

O ye heauens, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym and sett hym vp for euer!

O ye waters that be aboue the firmament, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O all ye powers of the Lorde, speake good of the Lorde! praise hym, and set hym vp for euer!

O ye sunne and mone, speake <sup>2</sup>good of the Lorde! prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye starres of heauen, speake good of the Lorde! praise him & set hym vp for euer!

O ye showers & dewe, speake good of the Lord! prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye windes of God, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye fyre and heate, speake goode of the Lorde! praise hym & set hym vp for euer!

O ye Winter and Sommer, speake good of the Lorde! praise hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye dewes & frostes, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye froste and colde, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym <sup>3</sup>and set hym vp for euer!

O ye yse and Snowe, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye lyght and darkenesse, speake good of the Lorde! praise hym and set him vp for euer!

O ye lightenynges and cloudes, speake good of the Lorde! praise him & set him vp for euer!

O let the yearth speake good of the Lorde! yea, lette it prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye mountaines and hilles, speake good of the Lord! praise him and set him vp for euer!

O all ye grene thinges vpon the yearth, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye walles, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym and sette <sup>4</sup>hym vp for euer!

<sup>1</sup> G .ii[1], back.

<sup>2</sup> G .v.

<sup>3</sup> G .v, back.

<sup>4</sup> G .vj.

324 *Barts Order, 1552. Daily Service for the Poor.*

O ye seas & flouddes, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye whales, and al that moue in the waters, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym & sette hym vp for euer!

O all ye foules of the ayre, speake good of the Lord! praise hym and set hym vp for euer!

O all ye beastes and cattell, speake good of the Lorde! praise hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye chyldren of men, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O let Israell speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym and sette hym vp for euer!

O ye priestes of the Lorde, speake good of the Lorde! praise hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye seruantes of the Lord, speake good of the Lorde! praise hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye spirites & soules of the ryghteous, speake good of the Lorde! prayse hym and set hym vp for euer!

O ye holy and humble men of harte, speake ye good of the Lorde! praise ye him, and set him vp for euer!

Glory be to the father, and to the sonne, and to the holy ghost!  
As it was in the beginnyng, is now, and euer, &c. Amen.

The minister.

Lorde, haue mercy vpon vs!

The poore.

Christ, haue mercy vpon vs!

The minister.

Lord, haue mercy vpon vs!

<sup>2</sup>Then shall all saie together.

**I** beleue in God the father Almyghtie, maker of heauen and yearth; and in Iesus Christ, his onely sonne oure Lorde, which was conceived by the holy ghost, borne of the virgin Mary, suffered vnder pounce Pilate, was crucified, dead, and buried; he descended into hel; the third daie he rose agayne from the dead; he ascended into heauen, and syttheth on the ryght hande of God the father Almightye; from thence shall he come to Iudge the quicke and the dead. I beleue in the holy Ghost, the holy Catholike church, the communion of sainctes, The forgeuenes of synnes, The resurrection of the body; And the lyfe euer<sup>3</sup>lastyng. Amen.

Our father, whiche art, &c.

The minister.

Deale fauourably with vs, O Lorde!

<sup>1</sup> G. vi. back.

<sup>2</sup> G. vii.

<sup>3</sup> G. vii. back.

The poore.

For we be very miserable.

The minister.

Heare vs, O Lord, when we cal vpon the!

The poore.

For in the, onely, is all our trust.

The minister.

O Lorde, saue the kyng!

The poore.

And blesse oure gouernours!

The minister.

Power fourth thy great mercy, O Lorde,

The poore.

Vpon all thy poore membres in this house!

The minister.

Let vs praie!

<sup>1</sup>For the Kyng.

**A**lmighty and euerliuyng God, we moste humblie & bartelie besече the, for the precious bloud sake of our Sauour Iesu Christe, thy onely sonne, to gouerne, protecte, and defende, our moste innocent and drede souereigne lorde, Kyng Edwarde the sixte, thy seruaunt, and our gouernour and defendour, that he maie so rule & gouerne al thy people of England committed to his charge, as shall be to the honoure of thy holy name, and profit of all his louyng subiectes & commons of the same. Indue hym also, O Lorde, with encrease of grace, and numbers of yeares, that he may long reigne ouer vs in thy feare; and graunt hym victory ouer all his aduersaries & enemies! This we besече the to graunt, O Lorde, for Iesu Christes sake, our mediatour and aduocate. Amen.

We besече the, O Lorde, to prospere and kepe the Gouernours of this house, and, accordyng to thy moste holie promes, to blesse and encrease all suche as helpe to fede and heale oure hungry and sicke bodies, not only with the encrease of goodes in this worlde, but also with the life euerlastyng, whiche, of thy great mercie, thou hast promised them, through Iesu Christe our Lorde. Amen.

**G**Raunte, moste mercifull Lorde, vnto euery one of vs, beyng diseased persones, to haue in remembraunce the bitter paynes that thy sonne<sup>2</sup> suffered for vs in his moste holy passion, and to arme oure selves with pacience, knowyng that for sinne this hath happened vnto vs. Graunt vs also that we may be plentifully indue with thy spirite, that in all our troubles and paines we may extolle & praise thy holy name, with a stedfast mynde and purpose, neuer

<sup>1</sup> G .viij.

<sup>2</sup> G .viij, back.

<sup>3</sup> H .j.

326 *Barts Order, 1552. Daily Service for the Poor.*

more to offende thy dyuine maiestie. And this we desire of the, for  
thy mooste blessed soules sake, our sauour Iesu Christe: To whom,  
with the and the holy ghost, be all  
praysse and glorie for  
euer and euer.  
Amen!

<sup>1</sup>After-noone praier.

Our father whiche art, &c.

The minister.

Heare vs, O Lorde, that call vpon the.

The poore.

And encline thine eares vnto our praiera.

The minister.

For we are very miserable.

The poore.

Be mercifull vnto vs, O Lord.

The minister.

For daie and night we will praise thee.

The poore.

Thy name is to be praised for euer and euer.

The minister.

Glory be to the father, &c.

The poore.

As it was in the beginnyng, is now and euer, &c. Amen.

The .lxxxvi. Psal. *Inclina domine.*

**B**Owe downe thine eare, O Lord, and heare me: for I am *pauere*  
and in miserie.

Preserue thou my soule, for I am holie: my God, saue thy seruauent  
that putteth his trust in thee!

Be merciful vnto me, O Lord: for I will call daily vpon the,

Comfort the soule of thy seruauent: for vnto the, (<sup>1</sup>) *Lord, as I*  
liste vp my soule.

For thou, lorde, arte good and gracious: and of good mercy vnto  
all them that cal vpon the.

Geue care, Lorde, vnto my praier: and *gratuler the vnto of my*  
humble desires.

In the tyme of my trouble I will call vpon the: for thou hast  
est me.

<sup>2</sup>Among the Goddes there is none *like vnto the, (<sup>1</sup>) Lord. There is*  
not one that can doe as thou doest.

<sup>1</sup> H. J. back.

<sup>2</sup> H. J.

*Barts Order, 1552. Daily Service for the Poor. 327*

All nacions whom thou hast made, shall come and worshyp the,  
O Lorde: and shall glorifie thy name.

For thou art great, and doest wonderous thynges: thou arte God  
alone.

Teache me thy waie, O Lorde, and I will walke in thy truthe:  
O knitte my harte vnto the, that I may feare thy name.

I will thanke thee, O lord my god, with all my harte: and will  
praise thy name for euer.

For great is thy mercy toward me: and thou hast deliuered my  
soule fro the nethermoste hell.

O God, the proude are rysen <sup>1</sup>against me: and the congregacion  
of naughty men haue sought after my soule, and haue not sett the  
before their eies.

But thou (O lorde God) arte full of compassion and mercie: long  
suffering, plenteous in goodnesse and truthe.

O turne the, then, vnto me, & haue mercy vpon me: geue thy  
strength vnto thy seruaunt, and helpe the sonne of thyne hande  
mayde.

Shewe some good token vpon me, that they which hate me, may  
se it, & be ashamed: because thou, lorde, hast helped me and com-  
forted me.

Glory be to the father, and to the sonne, and to the holy Ghost.

As it was in the beginning, is now, and euer shalbe, &c. Amen.

<sup>2</sup>The .xcvi. Psal. *Cantate domino.*

**O** Syng vnto the Lorde a newe song! sing vnto the Lord, al the  
whole earth!

Syng vnto the Lorde, and prayse his name! be tellyng of his  
saluacion from daie to daie!

Declare his honour vnto the Heathen: and his wonders vnto all  
his people!

For the Lorde is greates, and cannot worthely be prayseed: he is  
more to be feared than all the Goddes.

As for all the Goddes of the Heathen, thei be but Idolles: but it  
is the lord *that* made the heauens.

Glory and worship are before hym: power and honour are in his  
sanctuary.

Ascribe vnto the Lorde (O ye <sup>3</sup>kinredes of the people:) ascribe  
vnto the Lorde, worshippe and power!

Ascribe vnto the Lord, the honour due vnto his name! bryng  
presentes, & come into his courtes!

O worshippe the lorde in the bewtie of holines! let the whole  
earth stande in awe of hym!

Tell it out among the heathen that the lorde is kyng: and that

<sup>1</sup> H. .iiij.

<sup>2</sup> H. .iiij, back.

<sup>3</sup> H. .iiij.

it is he whiche hath made the round worlde so faste that it can not be moued : and howe that he shall iudge the people ryghteously.

Let the heauens reioyce, and let the earth be glad ! let the Sea make a noyse, & al that therin is !

Let the fieldes be ioyfull, and all that is in it ! then shall all the trees of the wood reioyce before <sup>1</sup>the Lorde.

For he commeth, for he commeth to Iudge the yearth : & in righteounes to iudge the world, and the people with his trutha.

Glorie be to the fater, and to the sonne, & to the holie ghost !

As it was in the beginnyng, is now, and euer shalbe worlde without enda. Amen.

The lesson. *Roman. vi.*

**K** Now ye not *that* al we whiche are baptised in Christ, are baptised to die with hym ! We are buried with hym by baptisme for to die, that likewyse as Christe was raysted from death by the glory of the fater, euen so we also shold walke in a newe life ; for if we be graffed in death like vnto hym, euen so shal <sup>2</sup>we be partakers of the resurrection ; knowyng this, that our old man is crucified with hym also, that the body of synne myght vterly be destroyed, that hencefurth we should not be seruauntes vnto sinne. Wherefore, if we be dead with Christe, we belene that we shal also liue with him : knowing that Christe, beyng raised from death, dieth no more, death hathe no more power ouer him ; for as touchyng that he died, he died concerning once. And as touchyng that he liueth, he liueth vnto God. Likewise consider ye also, that ye are dead as touchynge sinne, but are aliuie vnto God, through Iesus Christ our lord. Let not sinne therefore reigne in youre mortall body, that you should thereunto obey by the lu<sup>3</sup>stes of it. Neither geue you your members as instrumentes of vnrighteousnes vnto sinne, but geue ouer your selues vnto God, as they that, of deathe, are lyue. And geue ouer your members, as instrumentes of ryghteousnes vnto God, for sinne shall no haue power ouer you, because ye are not vnder the lawe, but vnder grace : what then ! Shal we sinne because we are not vnder the lawe, but vnder grace ! (God forbid !) Knowe ye not how that to whom soeuer ye committ youre selues as seruauntes to obey, his seruauntes ye are, to whome ye obey, whether it be of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto righteousness ! God be thanked that, though ye were the seruauntes of sinne, ye haue yet obeyed with <sup>4</sup>harte vnto the rule of the doctrine that ye be brought vnto ; ye are then made fre from synne, and are become the seruauntes of righteousness. I speake groselia, because of the infirmities of your fleshe : as ye haue geuen your members seruauntes to vncleane and to iniquities (from one iniquitie to another), euen so now geue ouer youre members seruauntes vnto righteousness, that ye maie be sanctified.

<sup>1</sup> H .liij, back.    <sup>2</sup> H .v.    <sup>3</sup> H .v, back.    <sup>4</sup> H .vi.

The .lvii. Psal. *Miserere mei.*

**B**E merciful vnto me (o god) be mercifull vnto me, for my soule trusteth in the: & vnder the shadowe of thy wynges shalbe my refuge, vntil this tiranny be ouer past.

I wil cal vnto the moste high <sup>1</sup>God: euen to the God that shall performe the cause which I haue in hande.

He shall send from heauen: & saue me from the reprove of him that would eate me vp.

God shall sende furth his mercy and truthe: my soule is among lions.

And I lie euen among the children of men (that are set on fier): whose tethe are speres and arrowes, and their tongue a sharpe swerde.

Set vp thy selfe (O God) aboue the heauens: and thy glory aboue all the yearth!

They haue laied a net for my feete, and pressed down my soule: and haue digged a pitte before me, and are fallen into the middes of it them selves.

<sup>2</sup>My harte is fixed (O God) my harte is fixed: I will synge and geue prayse.

Awake vp, my glorie; awake, lute and harpe: I my selfe wyll awake right early.

I will geue thanks vnto the (O Lorde) among the people: & I will syng vnto the among the naciones.

For the greatnes of thy mercy reacheth vnto the heauens: & thy truthe vnto the cloudea.

Set vp thy selfe (O God) aboue the heauens: & thy glorie aboue all the yearth!

Glorie be to the father, &c.

As it was in the, &c. Amen.

Lord haue mercy vpon vs!

Christ haue mercy vpon vs!

Lorde haue mercy vpon vs!

<sup>3</sup>I beloue in God the, &c.

& so furth, with all the suffrages and Collectes, vsod in the mornyng praier.

The Euensong praier

at .vii. of the clock at

nyght.

Our father whiche art, &c.

The minister.

Praise we the Lorde!

The poore.

Let vs geue hym thanks for euer and euer!

<sup>1</sup> H .vi]. back.

<sup>2</sup> H .vi].

<sup>3</sup> H .vi]. back.



The .cxxi. Psal. *Leuani oculos.*

**I** Will lifte vp myne eyes vnto the hilles: from whence my helpe commeth.

My helpe cometh euen from the Lorde: which hath made heauen and yearth.

<sup>1</sup>He will not suffre thy foote to be moued: and he that kepeth the, will not slepe.

Behold, he that kepeth Israel: shall neither slomber nor slepe.

The lorde hymself is thy keper: the lord is thy defence vpon thy right hande.

So that the Sunne shall not burne the by daie: neither the moone by nyght.

The lorde shall preserue the from all euell: yea, it is euen he that shall kepe thy soule.

The lorde shall preserue thy goyng out and thy comyng in: from this tyme forth for euermore.

Glory be to the father, and to the sonne, and to the holy Ghost.

As it was in the beginnyng, is now and euer, &c. Amen.

<sup>2</sup>Let vs praie.

**O** Almighty God, kyng of kynges, and lorde of lordes, that onely gouernest and kepest all them that put their trust in the, kepe vs, thy poore members, this present nyght, that we maie rest and slepe in the remembraunce of thy mooste holy name: To whom, with the sonne and the holy ghost, be al honour, glorie and praise, worlde without ende. Amen!

**G**od saue our soueraigne lorde the kyng, al the Gouvernours of this house, & the holie church vniuersal, and graunt vs peace in Christ, and grace for euer. Amen!

The letany and Suffrages.



God the father of heauen, haue mercie vpon vs miserable sinners!

O God the Father of, &c.

O God the Sonne, redeemer of the worlde, haue mercy vpon vs miserable sinners!

O God the sonne, &c.

O God the holy ghost, procedyng from the father and the sonne, haue mercie vpon vs miserable sinners!

O God the holy ghost, proceeding, &c.

O holy, blessed, and glorious Trinite, thre persones and one God, haue mercie vpon vs miserable sinners!

O holy, blessed, and glorious, &c.

<sup>1</sup> H .viij.

<sup>2</sup> H .viij. back.

<sup>3</sup> I .j.

*Barts Order, 1552. Evening Service for the Poor. 331*

Remember not, lorde, our offences, nor the offences of our fore-fathers, neither take thou vengeance of oure sinnes; spare us, good lorde; spare thy people, whom thou hast redemed with thy moste precious blood, and be not angrie with vs for euer!

Spare vs, good lorde!

From all euil and mischief, from sinne, <sup>1</sup>from the craftes and assaultes of the deuill, from thy wrath, and from euerlastyng dampnacion,

Good lorde, deliuer vs!

From blyndnesse of harte, from pride, vainglory and hipocrisie; from enuie, hatred, and malice, and all vncharitablenesse,

Good lorde, deliuer vs!

From fornicacion, and all other dedly sinne; and from all the deceiptes of the worlde, the fleshe, and the Deuill,

Good lorde, deliuer vs!

From lightenyng, and tempest, from plague, pestilence and famine; from battaill and murder, & from sodain death,

Good lorde, deliuer vs!

From all Sedicion and priuie conspiracie, from the tyrannie of the Byshop of Rome, and all his detestable Enormities, from all false doctrine and heresie, from all hardnesse of harte, and contempte of thy worde and commaundement,

Good lorde, deliuer vs!

By the misterie of thy holie incarnation, by thy holie natiuitie and Circumcision, by thy Baptisme, fastyng, & temptacion,

<sup>2</sup>Good lorde, deliuer vs!

By thyne Agonie and bloudie sweate, by thy Crosse and passion, by thy precious death & buriall, by thy glorious resurrection and Ascension, by the commyng of the holy ghost,

Good lorde, deliuer vs!

In all tyme of our tribulacion, in all tyme of our wealthe, in the houre of death, in the daie of Iudgement,

Good lorde, deliuer vs!

We sinners do beseeche the to heare vs, O lord God; and that it may please the to rule and gouerne thy holy church vniuersall in the right waie.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it may please the to kepe Edward the sixt, thy seruant, our Kyng and gouernour.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it may please the to rule his hart in thy faith, feare and loue, that he may alwaies haue affiaunce in the, and euer seke thy honour and glory.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it may please the to be defender and keper, geuing him the victorie ouer all his enemies.

<sup>3</sup>We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it maie please the to illuminate all Byshoppes, Pastours,

<sup>1</sup> I j. back.

<sup>2</sup> I ij.

<sup>3</sup> I ij. back.

332 *Barts Order, 1552. Evening Service for the Poor.*

and Ministers of the church, with true knowledge and vnderstandyng of thy worde, and that both by their preaching and liuyng, they may set it furth, and shewe it accordyngly.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it maie please the to endue the Lordes of the counsaile, and all the nobilitie, with grace, wisdom and vnderstandyng.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it maie please the to blesse & kepe the magistrates, geuyng them grace to execute Iustice, and to maintein truth.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it maie please the to blesse and kepe all thy people.

We beseeche the to heare, &c.

That it may please the to geue to all nacions, vnite, peace, and concord.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it maie please the to geue vs an harte to loue and drede the, and diligently to lyue after thy commaundementes.

<sup>1</sup> We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it maie please the, to geue al thy people encrease of grace, to heare mekely thy worde, and to receiue it with pure affection, and to bryng furthe the frutes of the spirite.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it may please the to bryng into the waie of truthe, al suche as haue erred, and are decaied.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it maie please the to strengthen suche as do stande, and comforte and helpe the weake harted, and to raise vp them that fall, & finally to beate doune Sathan vnder our fete.

We beseeche the to heare, &c.

That it may please the to succour, helpe and comfort all that be in daunger, necessitie and tribulacion.

We beseeche the to heare, &c.

That it may please the to preserue, all that trauaile by lande or by water, all women labouryng of chylde, all sycke persones and younge chyl dren, and to shewe thy pitie vpon all prysoners and captiues.

We beseeche the to heare, &c.

<sup>2</sup> That it maie please the to defende and prouide for the fatherlesse children and widowes, and all that be desolate and oppressed.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

That it maie please the to haue mercy vpon all men.

We beseeche the to heare, vs, &c.

That it may please the to forgeue oure enemies, persecutours & slaunderers, and to turne their hartes.

We beseeche the to heare, &c.

That it maie please the, to geue & preserue to our vse, the kyndly frutes of the yearth, so as in due tyme we maie enioye them.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

<sup>1</sup> I. iiij.

<sup>2</sup> I. iiij. back.

*Barts Order, 1552. Evening Service for the Poor. 333*

That it maie please the to geue to vs true repentaunce, to forgiue vs all our sinnes, negligences and ignoraunces, &<sup>1</sup> to endue vs with the grace of thy holy spirite, to amend our liues accordyng to thy holy worde.

We beseeche the to heare vs, &c.

Sonne of God, we beseeche the to heare vs!

Sonne of god we beseeche the to heare vs!

O lambe of God, that takest away the sinnes of the worlde,

<sup>2</sup>Graunt vs thy peace!

O lambe of God, that takest away the sinnes of the worlde,

Haue mercy vpon vs!

O Christ, heare vs!

O Christ, heare vs!

Lorde, haue mercy vpon vs!

Lorde, haue mercy vpon vs!

Christ, haue mercy vpon vs!

Christ, haue mercy vpon vs!

Lorde, haue mercy vpon vs!

Lorde, haue mercy vpon vs!

Our father, whiche art in heauen, &c. And leade vs not into temptation. But deliuer vs from euill.

The versicle.

O Lorde, deale not with vs after our sinnes!

Answer.

Neither rewarde vs after our iniquities!

Let vs pray.

**O** God, merciful father, that despiest not the sighinges of a contrite harte, nor the desires of suche as be sorowfull, mercifully assist our priers, that we make before the, in all our troubles and aduersities, whensoever thei oppress vs: <sup>2</sup>And graciously heare vs, that those euilles whiche the craft and subtiltie of the Deuill or manne worketh agaynst vs, be brought to naught, and by the providence of thy goodnesse, may be dispersed, that we thy seruantes, beyng hurt by no persecutions, may euermore geue thanks vnto the, in thy holy Church: thorowe Iesus Christ our Lorde.

O Lorde, arise, helpe vs, and deliuer vs for thy names sake!

O God, we haue heard with oure eares, and our fathers haue declared vnto vs, the noble workes that thou diddest in their daies, and in the old tyme before them.

O Lorde, aryse, helpe vs, and deliuer vs, for thine honour!

Glory be to the father, & to the sonne, and to the holy ghost!

As it was in the beginning, is now, and euer shalbe, worlde without ende.

Amen.

From our enemies, defende vs, O Christo!

Graciously loke vpon our afflictions!

<sup>1</sup> orig. & and

<sup>2</sup> I. iiii.

<sup>3</sup> I. iiii. back.

334 *Barts Order, 1552. Evening Service for the Poor.*

Pitifully beholde the sorrowes of oure <sup>1</sup>hartes!

Mercifully forgene the sinnes of thy people!

Fauourably with mercy heare oure praiers!

O sonne of Dauid, haue mercy vpon vs!

Both now & euer, vouchesafe to heare vs, O Christ!

Graciously heare vs, O Christ! graciously heare vs, O Lorde Christ!

The Versic<sup>o</sup>.a.

O Lorde, lette thy mercy be shewed vpon us!

The aunswere.

As we do put our trust in the.

Let vs praie.

**W**E humbly beseche the, O Father, mercifully to loke vpon oure infirmities; and for the glory of thi names sake, turne from vs those euils, that we moste ryghteously haue deserued: graunt this, O lorde God, for our mediatour and aduocate Iesus Christes sake!

**A**lmightie God, whiche hast geuen vs grace at this tyme, with one accorde to make our common supplicacions vnto the, & doest <sup>2</sup>promise, that when two or thre be gathered together in thy name, thou wilt graunt their requestes; fulfill now, O Lorde, the desires and petitions of thy seruauntes, as may be moste expedient for them, grauntynge vs in this worlde, knowlege of thy truthe, and in the worlde to come,  
life euerlastyng.

Amen.

<sup>1</sup> I. v.

<sup>2</sup> sig. I. v, back.

## <sup>1</sup>A thankesgeuyng vnto

Almyghtie God to be said by the poore that  
are cured in the hospital, at y<sup>e</sup> time of their  
deliuery from thence, vpon their knies in  
the hall before the Hospiteler,  
and twoo masters of this  
house, at the  
least.

## And this the Hospiteler

shal charge them to learne with-  
out the booke, before they be  
deliuered.

**W**E magnifie and prayse thee, O Lorde, that so mercifully and  
faouourably haste looked vpon vs miserable & wretched synners,  
whiche so hyghely haue offended thy diuine maiestie, that we are not  
worthy to be nombred among thy elect & chosen people: our synnes  
boying <sup>2</sup>great and greuous, is daily before our eyes; we lament and  
be sorie for them; and with sorowful harte, and lamentable teares,  
we call and crie vnto the for mercie; haue mercy vpon vs, O Lorde,  
haue mercy vpon vs; and accordyng to thy great mercie, wbye awaie  
the multitude of our synnes; and graunt vs now, O lorde, thy moste  
holie and workyng spirite, that settynge a-syde all vice and ydlenes,  
we maie, in thy feare, walke and go foreward in all vertue and godli-  
nes. And for that thou hast moued, O Lorde, the hartes of godly  
men, and the Gouvernours of this house, to shewe their exceding  
charite towardes vs, in curing of our maladies & diseases, we yelde  
moste humble and hartie thankes to <sup>3</sup>thy maiestie, and shall inces-  
sauntlie laude and praise thy moste holy and glorious name; Besech-  
yng the, moste gracious and mercifull Lord, according to thy most  
holy woorde and promes, so to blesse this thyne awne dwellyng  
house, and the faithfull ministers thereof, that there be here founde  
no lacke, but that their riches & substaunce may encrease; that thy  
holye name maie thereby be the more prayseed and glorified;

to whom be al laude honour, and glory,

worlde without enda.

Amen!

(..)

<sup>1</sup> sig. I. vi.

<sup>2</sup> sig. I. vi, back.

<sup>3</sup> sig. I. vii.

<sup>1</sup>A passeport

to be deliuered to the  
Poore.

---

To all Maiours, Bailiefes,  
Constables, &c.

**K** Now ye, that .A. B., tailour, borne in the towne of .S. T. in the countie of Northampton, beyng cured of his disease in the Hospital of. St. Bartholomews in West smithfelde in London, and from thence deliured the .xiii. daie of August, in the syxt yeaere of the Reigne, &c. hath charge by vs, A. B. C. the gouernours of the <sup>2</sup>same, to repaire within        days next ensuyng the date hereof, to his sayd place of natiuitie, or to Westhandfield, the place of his last abode, and there to exhibite this present passe porte to the head officer, or officers, in either  
of the places appointed, that  
they maie take further  
order for his de-  
meanour.

(.:.)

*Imprinted at London by Ry-  
charde Grafton, Printer to the  
Kynge's maiestie.*

Cum prinilegio ad imprimen-  
dum solum.

<sup>1</sup> sig. I .vii, back. The Passport was needed to prevent the arrest of the Patient as an idle and masterless Vagabond roving about the country.

<sup>2</sup> sig. I .viii. (The back of this leaf is blank.)

# Early English Text Society.

THE Early English Text Society was started by Dr. Furnivall in 1864 for the purpose of bringing the mass of Old English Literature within the reach of the ordinary student, and of wiping away the reproach under which England had long rested, of having felt little interest in the monuments of her early life and language.

The E. E. T. Soc. desires to print in its Original Series the whole of our unprinted MS. literature; and in its Extra Series to reprint in careful editions all that is most valuable of printed MSS. and early printed books.

The Society has issued to its subscribers 142 Texts, most of them of great interest; so much so indeed that the publications of its first two years have been reprinted, and those for its third year, 1866, will follow.

The Subscription to the Early English Text Society, which constitutes Membership, is £1 1s. a year [and £1 1s. additional for the Extra Series], due in advance on the 1st of January, and should be paid either to the Society's Account at the Head Office of the Union Bank, Princes St., London, E.C., or by Money Order (made payable at the Chief Office, London, and crossed 'Union Bank'), or by Cheques or Postal Orders, to the Hon. Secretary, WM. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Road, Finsbury Park, London, N. All Members who subscribe through other channels than the Hon. Sec. are asked to send their names to him, in order to insure an early insertion of them in the List of Members.

Those Members in the United States of America who want their Texts posted to them, must add to their prepaid subscriptions 1s. 4d. yearly for the Original Series, and 1s. for the Extra Series.

*July, 1888.* The Society is now again level with its work. The Texts of both Series for 1887 have been issued, together with the first in the Original Series and two for the Extra Series for 1888, while the whole of the other two Texts for the Original Series are in type. More Members and money are much needed.

The issue in the ORIGINAL SERIES for 1888 will probably be:—

89. A Treatise on Virtues and Vices, from the unique Stowe MS., ab. 1200 A.D., ed. Dr. F. Holthausen. Part I, 8s.

Anglo-Saxon and Latin Rule of St. Benet (interlinear Glosses), ed. Dr. H. Logeman. [At Press.

Two Fifteenth-Century Cookery-Books, edited from the MSS. by Thomas Austin. [At Press.

The issue for 1888 in the EXTRA SERIES will be:—

LII. A Dialogue against the Feuer Pestilence, 1564, 1573, by Wm. Bullein, edited from the first edition after the Author's death, 1578, by Messrs. A. H. and Mark Bullen. Part I, 10s.

LIII. Thomas Vicary's Anatomie of the Body of Man, 1548, edited from the unique copy of 1577, with an Appendix of Vicary Documents, Extracts from the Guildhall Records, &c., &c., by F. J. and Percy Furnivall. Part I, 15s.

(And probably a third Text, either Vicary, Part II, or a Caxton reprint.)



The following Texts are at Press for the ORIGINAL SERIES for 1889 and after years:—

**Bede's Liber Scintillarum**, with Anglo-Saxon Glosses, edited from the MSS. by E. Rhodes, B.A. [At Press.

**Radwine's Canterbury Psalter**, from the MS. in Trinity College, Cambridge, ab. 1150 A.D., edited by F. Harsley, B.A. [At Press.

**Sir David Lyndesay's Works**, Part VI, and last, ed. W. H. S. Uteley. [At Press.

**Cursor Mundi**, Part V, Introduction, Notes, and Glossary, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. [Part printed.

**The Lay Folk's Catechism**, by Archbp. Thoresby, ed. Canon Simmons and F. D. Matthew. [Text printed.

**Capgrave's Life of St. Katharine**, from the unique MS., ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. [At Press.

**Melusine**, the prose Romance, ed. from the unique MS., ab. 1500, by A. K. Donald, B.A. [At Press.

**Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints**, MS. Cott. Jul. E 7, Part III, ed. Prof. Skeat, Litt. D., LL.D. [At Press.

**Vices and Virtues**, from the unique Stowe MS., ab. 1200 A.D., ed. Dr. F. Holthausen, Part II.

**The Master of Game**, a Booke of Huntynge for Henry V when Prince of Wales, edited from the MSS. by Thomas Austin. [At Press.

**Thomas Robinson's Life and Death of Mary Magdalene**, ab. 1620 A.D. [At Press.

**Queen Elizabeth's Translations**, from Boethius, &c., edited from the unique MS. by Walford D. Selby. [At Press.

The following Texts are preparing for the ORIGINAL SERIES:—

**Anglo-Saxon Glosses to Latin Prayers and Hymns**, edited by Dr. F. Holthausen.

**An Anglo-Saxon Martyrology**, edited from the 4 MSS. by Dr. G. Herzfeld.

**Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints**, MS. Cott. Jul. E 7, Part IV, ed. Prof. Skeat, Litt. D., LL.D.

**All the Anglo-Saxon Homilies** not accessible in English editions, including those of the Vercelli MS., ed. by Prof. Napier, M.A., Ph.D.

**The Exeter Book** (A-Sax. Poems), re-edited from the unique MS. by I. Gollancz, B.A. Cambz.

**Early English Verse Lives of Saints**, Standard Collection, from the Harl. MS., ed. Dr. C. Horstmann.

**Supplementary Early English Lives of Saints**, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann.

**The Early and Later Festivals**, ab. 1400 and 1440 A.D., ed. Dr. C. Horstmann.

**Early English Deeds and Documents**, from unique MSS., ed. Dr. Lorenz Morsbach.

**Merlin**, Part IV, containing Preface, Index, and Glossary. Edited by H. B. Wheatley.

- Beowulf**, a critical Text, with Introduction and Glossary, ed. Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D.  
**Pilgrimage of the Lyf of Manhode**, in the Northern Dialect, ed. S. J. Herriage, B.A.  
**Early English Homilies**, 13th century, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris.  
**The Rule of St. Benet**; 5 Texts, Anglo-Saxon, Early English, Caxton, &c., ed. Dr. R. Morris.  
**A Chronicle of England to 1327 A.D.**, in Northern verse (42,000 lines), ab. 1350 A.D., edited from the unique Göttingen MS. by M. L. Perrin, B.A.

The following Texts are at Press for the EXTRA SERIES for 1889 and later years:—

- Bp. Fisher's English Works**, Part II, with his Life and Letters, ed. Rev. Ronald Bayne, B.A. [At Press.  
**Early English Pronunciation**, by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part IV, the present English Dialects. [At Press.  
**Thos. Vicary's Anatomie of the Bodie of Man**, 1548, edited from the ed. of 1577 by Dr. F. J. Furnivall and Percy Furnivall of Barta. Part II. [At Press.  
**Hoccleve's Minor Poems**, from the Phillipps MS., ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. [At Press.

The following Texts are preparing for the EXTRA SERIES:—

- A Parallel-text of the 6 MSS. of the Ancoren Riwe**, ed. Prof. Dr. E. Kölbing.  
**Barbour's Bruce**, ed. Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat. Part IV.  
**A Dialogue against the Feuer Pestilence**, 1564, 1573, 1578. By W. Bullein. Ed. A. H. and Mark Bullen. Part II.  
**Lonelich's Holy Grail**, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part V.  
**The Destruction of Jerusalem**, Text A, edited from the MSS. by Dr. F. Kopka.  
**Hoccleve's Complaint**, from the Cosin MS. at Durham, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D.  
**Robert of Brunne's Handlyng Synne**, A.D. 1303, re-edited by Dr. Furnivall.  
**Robert of Brunne's Chronicle of England**, from the Inner Temple MS., edited by Dr. Furnivall.  
**Caxton's englisshing of the Eneydos**, A.D. 1590, edited by M. T. Culley, M.A.  
**Caxton's Book of the Ordre of Chyualry**, ab. 1484, with Loutfut's Scotch copy of it, ed. W. Bayne, B.A.  
**Caxton's Godfrey of Bullogne, or Last Siege of Jerusalem**, 1481.  
**Caxton's Curial**, 1484-5, from the French of Alain Chartier, ed. F. S. Ellis.

## LIST OF THE SOCIETY'S BOOKS.

### ORIGINAL SERIES.

The Publications for 1866 (except Nos. 17, 19, 20, 21, 23) are out of print. Subscribers who desire the issue for 1866 should send their guineas at once to the Hon. Secretary, in order that other Texts for 1866 may be sent to press.

*The Publications for 1864 (one guinea) are:—*

1. Early English Alliterative Poems, ab. 1300 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 16s.
2. Arthur, ab. 1440, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 4s.
3. Lancelot of the Doves of Kyngis, &c., 1556, ed. F. Hall, D.C.L. 4s.
4. Sir Gawayne and the Green Knight, ab. 1300, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 16s.

*The Publications for 1865 (one guinea) are:—*

5. Hume's Orthographie and Congruitie of the Britan Tongue, ab. 1617, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 4s.
6. Lancelot of the Laik, ab. 1500, ed. Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat. 8s.
7. Genesis and Exodus, ab. 1250, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 8s.
8. Morte Arthure, ab. 1440, ed. E. Brock. 7s.
9. Thynne on Chaucer's Works, ab. 1593, ed. Dr. Kingsley and F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 10s.
10. Merlin, ab. 1440, Part I., ed. H. B. Wheatley. 2s. 6d.
11. Sir D. Lyndesay's Works: The Monarchie, ed. J. Small, M.A. Part I. 3s.
12. The Wright's Chaste Wife, ab. 1462, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 1s.

*The Publications for 1866 (two guineas,—only Nos. 17, 19, 20, 21 and 23 in print: the rest will be reprinted slowly) are:—*

13. Sainte Margherete, 1200-1330, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne.
14. Kyng Horn, Floris and Blanchefleur, &c., ed. Rev. Prof. J. R. Lumby.
15. Political, Religious, and Love Poems, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A.
16. The Book of Quinte Essence, ab. 1460-70, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A.
17. Parallel Extracts from Twenty-nine MSS. of Piers the Plowman, ed. Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat. 1s.
18. Hali Meidenhad, ab. 1200, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne.
19. Lyndesay's Monarchie, &c., Part II., ed. J. Small, M.A. 3s. 6d.
20. Hampole's English Prose Treatises, ed. Rev. G. G. Perry. 1s.
21. Merlin, Part II., ed. H. B. Wheatley. 4s.
22. Partenay or Lusignan, ed. Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat.
23. Dan Michel's Ayenbite of Inwyrt, 1340, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s. 6d.

*The Publications for 1867 (one guinea,—Nos. 24 and 26 out of print) are:—*

24. Hymns to the Virgin and Christ; the Parliament of Devils, &c., ab. 1430, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 2s.
25. The Stations of Rome, the Pilgrims' Sea-voyage, with Glens Maydenhead, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 1s.
26. Religious Pieces in Prose and Verse, from B. Thornton's MS. (ab. 1440), ed. Rev. G. G. Perry. 2s.
27. Levin's Manipulus Vocabularum, 1570, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 12s.
28. William's Vision of Piers the Plowman, 1303 A.D. The earliest or Vernon Text; Text A. Part I. Edited by Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat. 6s.
29. Early English Homilies (ab. 1220-30 A.D.) from unique MSS. in the Lambeth and other Libraries. Part I. Edited by Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 7s.
30. Pierce the Plowman's Crede, ed. Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat. 2s.

*The Publications for 1868 (one guinea) are:—*

31. Myrr's Duties of a Parish Priest, in Verse, ab. 1420 A.D., ed. E. Peacock. 4s.
32. Early English Meals and Manners, ed. from Harleian and other MSS. by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 12s.
33. The Knight De La Tour Landry (from French of A.D. 1373), ab. 1440 A.D. A Father's Book for his Daughters, ed. from Harl. MS. 1764 and Caxton's version, by Thomas Wright, M.A. 8s.
34. Early English Homilies (before 1300 A.D.) from unique MSS. in the Lambeth and other Libraries. Part II. Edited by Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 8s.
35. Lyndesay's Works, Part III.: The Historie and Testament of Squyer Meldrum, ed. F. Hall, D.C.L. 2s.

*The Publications for 1869 (one guinea) are:—*

36. Merlin, Part III. Edited by H. B. Wheatley, Esq.; with an Essay on Arthurian Localities by J. S. Stuart Glenzie, Esq. 12s.
37. Lyndesay's Works, containing Ane Satyre of the Three Estaitis. Part IV. Edited by F. Hall, D.C.L. 4s.
38. William's Vision of Piers the Plowman, Text B. Part II. Edited from the MSS. by the Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 16s. 6d.
39. The Alliterative Romance of the Destruction of Troy, translated from Guido de Colonna. Part I. Edited by D. Donaldson, Esq., and the Rev. G. A. Pantou. 10s. 6d.

## *The Early English Text Society's Books. Original Series. 5*

### *The Publications for 1870 (one guinea) are:—*

62. English Gilda, their Statutes and Customs, 1389 A.D. Edited by the late Toulmin Smith, Esq., and Miss Lucy Toulmin Smith, with a Preliminary Essay, in 5 parts, on 'The History and Development of Gilda, and the Origin of Trades-Unions,' by Dr Lupo Breutano. 21s.
61. William Lauder's Minor Poems. Edited by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 3s.
62. Bernardus De Cura Rei Familiaris, with some Early Scottish Prophecies, &c. From a MS. K.K. 1. 5, in the Cambridge University Library. Edited by Rev. Prof. J. R. Lumby, M.A. 2s.
63. Ratis Raving, and other Moral and Religious Pieces in Prose and Verse. Edited from the Camb. Univ. MS. K.K. 1. 5, by Rev. Prof. J. R. Lumby, M.A. 3s.

### *The Publications for 1871 (one guinea) are:—*

64. The Alliterative Romance of Joseph of Arimathe, or The Holy Grail: a fragment from the Vernon MS.; with Wyklyn de Worde's and Pynson's (A.D. 1526 and 1529) Lives of Joseph; edited by the Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 5s.
65. King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care, edited from 2 MSS., with an English translation, Part I., by Henry Sweet, M.A., Balliol College, Oxford. 10s.
66. Legends of the Holy Rood, Symbols of the Passion and Cross. Poems in Old English of the 11th, 14th, and 15th centuries. Edited from MSS. by the Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s.
67. Lyndesay's Works, containing his Minor Poems, Part V., edited by Dr. James A. H. Murray, with a critical Essay by Professor Nichol of Glasgow. 3s.
68. The Times' Whistle, and other Poems, by R. C., 1616; edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 6s.

### *The Publications for 1872 (one guinea) are:—*

69. An Old English Miscellany, containing a Bestiary, Kentish Sermons, Proverbs of Alfred, Religious Poems of the 13th century, edited from the MSS. by the Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s.
70. King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care, edited from 2 MSS., with an English translation, Part II., by Henry Sweet, M.A., Balliol College, Oxford. 10s.
71. The Life of St Juliana, 2 versions (1530 A.D.), with translations; edited from the MSS. by the Rev. T. O. Cockayne and Mr. E. Brook. 2s.
72. Palladius on Husbandrie, from the unique MS., ab. 1490 A.D., Part I., ed. Rev. R. Lodge. 10s.

### *The Publications for 1873 (one guinea) are:—*

73. Old English Homilies, Series II., from the unique 13th-century MS. in Trinity Coll. Cambridge, with a photolithograph; three Hymns to the Virgin and God, from a unique 13th-century MS. at Oxford, a photolithograph of the music to two of them, and transcriptions of it in modern notation by Dr. Rimbauld, and A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S.; the whole edited by the Rev. Dr. Richard Morris. 8s.
74. The Vision of Piers Plowman, Text C (completing the 3 versions of this great poem), with an Autotype; and two unique alliterative poems: Richard the Redeles (by William, the author of the *Vision*); and The Crowned King; edited by the Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 18s.
75. Geneseydes, a Romance, edited from the unique MS., ab. 1440 A.D., in Trin. Coll. Cambridge, Part I., by W. Aldis Wright, M.A., Trin. Coll. Cambr. 3s.

### *The Publications for 1874 (one guinea) are:—*

76. The Gost Mysteriale of the Destruction of Troy, in alliterative verse; Part II., ed. by D. Donaldson, Esq., and the late Rev. G. A. Panton. 10s. 6d.
77. The Early English Version of the "Cursor Mundi": in four Texts, Part I., edited by the Rev. Dr. R. Morris. With 3 photolithographic facsimiles. 10s. 6d.
78. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., Part I., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 8s.

### *The Publications for 1875 (one guinea) are:—*

79. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, Part II., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 15s.
80. Meditations on the Soper of Our Lorde (perhaps by Robert of Brunne), edited from the MSS. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 2s. 6d.
81. The Romance and Prophecies of Thomas of Ercelesbourne, printed from five MSS.; edited by Dr. James A. H. Murray. 10s. 6d.

### *The Publications for 1876 (one guinea) are:—*

82. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, Part III., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 15s.
83. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., Part II., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 4s.
84. Francis Thynne's Emblemes and Epigrams, A.D. 1600, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 4s.
85. Be Domealdege (Bede's *De Die Judicii*), &c., ed. Rev. Prof. J. R. Lumby. 2s.

### *The Publications for 1877 (one guinea) are:—*

86. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, Part IV., with 2 autotypes, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s.
87. Notes on Piers Plowman, Part I., by the Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 21s.

### *The Publications for 1878 (one guinea) are:—*

88. The "Cursor Mundi," in 4 Texts, Part V., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 25s.
89. Adam Davie's 6 Dreames about Edward II., &c., ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 5s.
90. Geneseydes, a Romance, Part II., ed. W. Aldis Wright, M.A. 4s.

## 6 *The Early English Text Society's Books. Original Series.*

### *The Publications for 1879 (one guinea) are :—*

71. *The Lay Folks's Mass-Book*, 4 Texts, ed. Rev. Canon Simmons. 25s.
72. *Palladius on Husbandry*, englisht (ab. 1420 A.D.). Part II. Ed. S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 5s.

### *The Publications for 1880 (one guinea) are :—*

73. *The Blickling Homilies*, 971 A.D., Part III., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 8s.
74. *Wycliffe's English Works* (those hitherto unprinted), ed. F. D. Matthew. 20s.

### *The Publications for 1881 (one guinea) are :—*

75. *Catholicon Anglice*, an English-Latin Word-book, A.D. 1483, ed. S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 20s.
76. *Aelfric's Metrical Homilies*, Part I., with a modern englishing, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat. 10s.

### *The Publications for 1882 (one guinea) are :*

77. *Beowulf*, the unique MS. autotyped and transliterated, edited by Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D. 25s.
78. *The Fifty Earliest English Wills in the Court of Probate, 1387-1438*, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 7s.

### *The Publications for 1883 (one guinea) are :—*

79. *King Alfred's Orosius*, from Lord Tollerbach's 9th cent. MS., Part I, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 13s.
- Extra Volume* (large). *Fasciculi of the Epinal Glossary*, 8th century, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 16s.

### *The Publications for 1884 (one guinea) are :—*

80. *The Anglo-Saxon Life of St. Katherine and its Latin Original*, ed. Dr. Einkenel, M.A. 12s.
81. *Piers Plowman : Notes, Glossary, &c.* Part IV, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A. 18s.

### *The Publications for 1885 (one guinea) are :—*

82. *Aelfric's Metrical Homilies*, Part II, with a modern Englishing, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat. 12s.
83. *The Oldest English Texts*, ed. Hy. Sweet, M.A. 30s.

### *The Publications for 1886 (one guinea) are :—*

84. *Additional Analogs to 'The Wright's Chaste Wife.'* No. 15, by W. A. Clouston. 1s.
85. *The Three Kings of Cologne.* 3 English Texts, and 1 Latin, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 17s.
86. *Prose Lives of Women Saints*, ab. 1610 A.D., ed. from the unique MS. by Dr. C. Horstmann. 12s.

### *The Publications for 1887 (one guinea) are :—*

87. *Early English Verse Lives of Saints* (earliest version), Land MS. 108, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 20s.
88. *Hy. Bradshaw's Life of St. Werburgh* (Pynson, 1531), ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 10s.

*For Texts in the Press, and in preparation, see pages 1—3, above.*

**EXTRA SERIES (*One guinea a year*).**

*The Publications for 1867 (one guinea) are:—*

- I. William of Palerne; or, William and the Werwolf. Re-edited from the unique MS. in King's College, Cambridge, by the Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 12s.
- II. Early English Pronunciation, with especial reference to Shakespeare and Chaucer, Part I., by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. 10s.

*The Publications for 1868 (one guinea) are:—*

- III. Caxton's Book of Courtiers, in 3 Versions: 1. from the unique print in the Camb. Univ. Libr.; 2. the Oriel MS. 79; 3. the Balliol MS. 354. Ed. by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 5s.
- IV. Havelok the Dane. Re-edited from the unique MS. by the Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat, M.A., with the sanction and aid of the original editor, Sir Frederic Madden. 10s.
- V. Chaucer's Boethius. Edited from the two best MSS. by the Rev. Dr. E. Morris. 12s.
- VI. Chevaliers Assigns. Re-edited from the unique MS. by H. H. Gibbs, M.A. 2s.

*The Publications for 1869 (one guinea) are:—*

- VII. Early English Pronunciation, with especial reference to Shakespeare and Chaucer, Part II. by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. 10s.
- VIII. Queen Elizabeth's Answer, a Book of Proceedings, &c. Edited by F. J. Furnivall, M.A., with Essays on early Italian and German Books of Courtesy, by W. M. Rossetti, Esq., and Dr. E. Oswald, Esq. 12s.
- IX. Awdale's Fraternity of Vasebendes, Harman's Carvet, &c. Edited by E. Viles, Esq., and F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 7s. 6d.

*The Publications for 1870 (one guinea) are:—*

- X. Andrew Boorde's Introduction of Knowledge, 1547, and Dystoury of Melk, 1662; with Barnes in the Defence of the Berde, 1649-5. Edited, with a Life of BOORDE, and an account of his Works, by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 10s.
- XI. Harbour's Brues, Part I. Edited from the MSS. and early printed editions, by the Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 12s.

*The Publications for 1871 (one guinea) are:—*

- XII. England in Henry VIII.'s Time: a Dialogue between Cardinal Pole and Lupset, mainly on the Condition of England, written by Thomas Starkey, Chaplain to Henry VIII. Part II. Edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 12s. (Part I., *Starkey's Life and Letters*, is No. XXXII.)
- XIII. A Supplycacyon of the Beggars, by Simon Fish, 1523-9 A.D., edited by F. J. Furnivall, M.A.; with A Supplycation to our Moste Soueraigne Lorde; A Supplycation of the Poore Commons; and The Decayes of England by the Great Multitude of Sheep, edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 6s.
- XIV. Early English Pronunciation, with especial reference to Shakespeare and Chaucer, Part III. by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. 10s.

*The Publications for 1872 (one guinea) are:—*

- XV. Robert Crowley's Thirty-one Epigrams, Veyes of The Last Trumpet, Way to Wealth, &c., 1550-1 A.D., edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 12s.
- XVI. Chaucer's Treatise on the Astrolabe, 1391 A.D. Ed. from MSS. by Rev. Prof. W. Skeat, M.A. 10s.
- XVII. The Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D., with an Appendix of four Contemporary English Tracts (1542-48 A.D.). Part I., edited by Dr. J. A. H. Murray. 10s.

*The Publications for 1873 (one guinea) are:—*

- XVIII. The Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D., with an Appendix of four contemporary English Tracts (1542-48), Part II., edited by Dr. J. A. H. Murray. 8s.
- XIX. Our Ladyes Myroure, A.D. 1530, edited by the Rev. J. H. Emsw., M.A., with four full-page photolithographic facsimiles by Cooke and Fotheringham. 2s.

*The Publications for 1874 (one guinea) are:—*

- XX. Lancelot's History of the Holy Graill (ab. 1450 A.D.), from the French of Sires Robiers de Borrou, Part I., ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 8s.
- XXI. Harbour's Brues, Part II., ed. Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 4s.
- XXII. Henry Brinklow's Complaynt of Roderyck Mers (ab. 1500); and The Lamentacion of a Christian against the Citty of London, made by Rodrigo Mora, A.D. 1543. Ed. J. M. Cowper. 8s.
- XXIII. Early English Pronunciation, Part IV., by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. 10s.

*The Publications for 1875 (one guinea) are:—*

- XXIV. Lancelot's History of the Holy Graill, Part II., ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 10s.
- XXV. Gray of Warwick, 16th-century Version, Part I., ed. Prof. Egerton. 2s.

## 8 *The Early English Text Society's Books. Extra Series.*

### *The Publications for 1876 (one guinea) are:—*

- XXVI. *Guy of Warwick*, 15th-century Version, Part II., ed. Prof. Zupitza. 14s.  
 XXVII. *The English Works of John Fisher*, Bishop of Rochester (died 1535), Part I, the Text, edited by Rev. Prof. J. E. B. Mayor, M.A. 16s.

### *The Publications for 1877 (one guinea) are:—*

- XXVIII. *Lesnelik's Holy Grail*, Part III., ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 16s.  
 XXIX. *Barbour's Bruce*. Part III., ed. Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 31s. (large paper, 42s.).

### *The Publications for 1878 (one guinea) are:—*

- XXX. *Lesnelik's Holy Grail*, Part IV., ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 15s.  
 XXXI. *The Alliterative Romance of Alexander and Dindimus*, ed. Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat. 6s.  
 XXXII. *Starkey's "England in Henry VIII's time": Starkey's Life and Letters*; Part I., ed. S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 8s.

### *The Publications for 1879 (one guinea) are:—*

- XXXIII. *Gesta Romanorum* (englight ab. 1440); the Early English Versions, edited from the MSS. and black-letter editions, by S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 15s.  
 XXXIV. *Charlemagne Romances*: No. I. *Sir Perembras*; edited from the unique Ashmole MS. by S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 15s.

### *The Publications for 1880 (one guinea) are:—*

- XXXV. *Charlemagne Romances*: No. II. *The Siege of Malaya*, ed. by S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 12s.  
 XXXVI. *Charlemagne Romances*: No. III. *The Lyf of Charles the Grete*, englight by Carton, A.D. 1485, Part I., ed. by S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 16s.

### *The Publications for 1881 (one guinea) are:—*

- XXXVII. *Charlemagne Romances*: No. IV. *The Lyf of Charles the Grete*, englight by Carton, A.D. 1485, Part II., ed. by S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 15s.  
 XXXVIII. *Charlemagne Romances*: No. V. *The Romance of the Sowdows of Babylone*, ed. Dr. E. Hausknecht. 15s.

### *The Publications for 1882 (one guinea) are:—*

- XXXIX. *Charlemagne Romances*:—6. *Rauf Collyear*, Roland, Otuel, &c., ed. S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 15s.  
 XL. *Charlemagne Romances*:—7. *Huen of Burdeux*, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part I. 15s.

### *The Publications for 1883 (one guinea) are:—*

- XLI. *Charlemagne Romances*:—8. *Huen of Burdeux*, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Pt II. 15s.  
 XLII. *Guy of Warwick*, the Anchinleck and Caius MSS., Part I., ed. Prof. Zupitza. 15s.

### *The Publications for 1884 (one guinea) are:—*

- XLIII. *Charlemagne Romances*:—9. *Huen of Burdeux*, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Pt III. 15s.  
 XLIV. *Charlemagne Romances*:—10. *The Four Sons of Aymon*, by Carton, ed. Miss O. Richardson. Part I. 15s.

### *The Publications for 1885 (one guinea) are:—*

- Charlemagne Romances*:—11. *The Four Sons of Aymon*, by Carton, ed. Miss O. Richardson. Part II.  
*Charlemagne Romances*:—12. *Huen of Burdeux*, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part III.  
*Sr. Fisher's English Works*, ed. Rev. Ronald Hayne, B.A. Part II. [At Press.  
*Hoccleve's Minor Poems*, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph. D. [At Press.  
 Complaint,  
 An Alexander Romance, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat and J. H. Henssle, M.A.

### *The Publications for 1886 (one guinea) are:—*

- XLVII. *The Wars of Alexander*, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D. 30s.  
 XLVIII. *Sir Bevis of Hamton*, ed. Prof. E. Kölbner. Part II. 10s.

### *The Publications for 1887 (one guinea) are:—*

- XLIX. *Guy of Warwick*, 3 Texts (Anchinleck and Caius MSS.), Part II., ed. Prof. J. Zupitza. Ph.D. 15s.  
 L. *Charlemagne Romances*:—13. *Huen of Burdeux*, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part IV. 8s.  
 LI. *Turrent of Partysgale*, from the unique MS. in the Chetham Library, ed. E. Adam, Ph.D. 16s.

*For Texts in the Press, and preparing, see p. 3, above.*

# Income and Expenditure of the Early English Text Society for the Year ended December 31, 1886.

RECEIPTS.		£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
BALANCE AT BANK, 1 JANUARY, 1886	...	523	8	6	...	...	...
Cash in hand	...	5	6	6	...	...	...
<b>MEMBERS' SUBSCRIPTIONS:—</b>							
Original Series { For back years	...	130	6	8	...	...	...
Original Series { For 1886	...	211	13	7	...	...	...
Original Series { For 1887	...	3	4	0	...	...	...
Extra Series { For back years	...	324	3	3	...	...	...
Extra Series { For 1886	...	9	18	0	...	...	...
Extra Series { For 1887	...	147	17	0	...	...	...
Less commission & returned Subscriptions	...	148	19	6	...	...	...
Sales in 1886, Original Series	...	203	19	6	...	...	...
Do. Extra Series	...	13	14	0	...	...	...
Less commission & returned Subscriptions	...	30	3	4	...	...	...
Sales in 1886, Original Series	...	23	14	0	...	...	...
Do. Extra Series	...	23	14	0	...	...	...
<b>PRINTING ACCOUNT:—</b>							
Original Series.							
No. 53. Oldest English Texts ... Wright's	...	519	0	0	...	...	...
No. 84. Additional Analogs to the Wright's	...	18	8	0	...	...	...
Chaste Wife ...	...	185	13	4	...	...	...
No. 83. The Three Kings of Cologne	...	108	3	0	...	...	...
No. 86. The Lives of Women Saints	...	3	5	0	...	...	...
Circulars ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Extra Series.							
XLV. Four Sonnets of Aymon, Part II.	...	141	16	8	...	...	...
XLVI. Sir Beues of Hamtoun, Part I.	...	86	7	6	...	...	...
XLVII. Wars of Alexander [on account]	...	103	7	0	...	...	...
<b>GENERAL ACCOUNT:—</b>							
Copying, Glossary and Index, O. S.	...	50	7	6	...	...	...
Do. R. S.	...	23	6	0	...	...	...
Contribution towards printing Dr. H. Hupe's	...	5	0	0	...	...	...
Essay on Cursor Mundi	...	10	0	0	...	...	...
Warehousing Stock, 1885 and 1886	...	10	0	0	...	...	...
Clert	...	3	10	0	...	...	...
Insurance	...	6	13	7	...	...	...
Postage, Packing, Stationery, &c.	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
BALANCE AT BANK, on 31st December, 1886	...	304	4	8	...	...	...
Petty Cash	...	6	8	0	...	...	...
		310	3	1	...	...	...

41353 3 1

Examined with the Vouchers and found correct.

FRED. D. MATTHEW, } AUDITORS.  
A. GRANGER HUTT, }

HENRY B. WHEATLEY, TREASURER.  
W. A. DALZIEL, HON. SEC.

## Treasurer's Cash Account for 1886.



RECEIPTS.		PAYMENTS.	
BALANCE AT BANK, 1st January, 1887	...	Original Series. Lives of Saints	...
Cash in hand	...	No. 87. Early Eng. Verse (on account)	...
	...	No. 88. Life of St. Werburgh	...
	...	Extra Series.	...
	...	XIV. The Wars of Alexander (balance)	...
	...	XV. Sir Bevis of Hampton, Part II.	...
	...	XVI. Guy of Warwick, Part II.	...
	...	XVII. Li. Huon of Burdeux, Part IV.	...
	...	Circulars	...
	...	GENERAL ACCOUNT:—	...
	...	Postage, Packing, Stationery, &c.	...
	...	For Copying, Collating, and Indexing.	...
	...	Series	...
	...	For Copying, Collating, and Indexing, Extra	...
	...	Series	...
	...	Warehousing Stock, 1887	...
	...	Clerk	...
	...	Insurance of Stock, 1887	...
	...	Maps and Wood-Blocks	...
	...	BALANCE AT BANK, 31st December, 1887	...
	...	Petty Cash	...

**FRED. D. MATTHEW,** } **AUDITOR.**  
**A. GRANGER HUTT,** }

# LIST OF MEMBERS.

## COMMITTEE OF MANAGEMENT.

**DIRECTOR:** FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, M.A., Ph.D.

**TREASURER:** HENRY B. WHEATLEY, ESQ.

**HON. SEC.:** W. A. DALZIEL, ESQ., 67 VICTORIA ROAD,  
FINEBURY PARK, LONDON, N.

**HON. SEC. for America:** PROF. F. J. CHILD, HARVARD COLLEGE,  
CAMBRIDGE, MASS., U. S. A.

ALEXANDER J. ELLIS, B.A.,  
F.R.S.

HENRY HUCKS GIBBS, M.A.

SIDNEY J. HERETAGE, B.A.

PROF. E. KÖLBING, Ph.D.

S. L. LEE, B.A.

REV. PROF. LUMBY, D.D.

F. D. MATTHEW, ESQ.

REV. DR. RICHARD MORRIS.

REV. PROF. J. E. B. MAYOR,  
M.A.

DR. J. A. H. MURRAY.

PROF. NAPIER, M.A., Ph.D.

EDWARD R. PEACOCK, ESQ.

REV. PROF. SEKAT, M.A., LL.D.

DR. HENRY SWEET, M.A.

W. ALDIS WRIGHT, M.A., LL.D.

PROF. ZUPITZA, Ph.D.

(With power to add Workers to their number.)

## BANKERS:

THE UNION BANK OF LONDON, PRINCES STREET, E.C.

PUBLISHERS: TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL, E.C.

*A star is prefixed to the names of those who subscribe to the Extra Series and to the Original Series.*

AINSWORTH, Dr. R. F., Cliff Point, Lower Broughton, Manchester.

ALEXANDER, George Russell, 42, Sardinia Terrace, Hillhead, Glasgow.

ALEXANDER, Walter, 4 Burnbank Gardens, Glasgow.

ALLSOPP, The Hon. A. Percy, Streethay Lodge, Lichfield.

ALLEN, J. (Bookseller), Boston, U. S. A. (by Trübner & Co.).

AMERY, J. Sparke, Druid House, Ashburton, Devon.

AMHERST COLLEGE LIBRARY, Amherst, Mass., U. S. A. (by Allen).

AMHURST, Wm. A. Tyssen, Didlington Hall, Brandon, Norfolk.

ANGUS, Rev. Joseph, D.D., Regent's Park College, N.W.

ASHER & Co., Messrs., 18, Bedford Street, Covent Garden, W.C. (3 sets).

ASTOR LIBRARY, New York, U. S. A. (by Stevens).

ATHENÆUM CLUB, Pall Mall, S.W.

12 *List of Members of the E. E. Text Soc., 1888.*

- \*ATKINSON, Rev. E., D.D., Clare College Lodge, Cambridge.
- \*ATKINSON, Rev. J. C., Danby Parsonage, Grosmont, Yorkshire.
- AUSTIN, Stephen, Hertford.
- \*BAER, Messrs. J. & Co., Frankfort (by Trübner & Co.).
- BALLIOL COLLEGE, OXFORD.
- \*BAYLEY, Arthur, Pembroke College, Oxford.
- \*BERLIN UNIVERSITY LIBRARY (by Asher & Co.).
- \*BINNS, Rev. William, Stourton Lodge, Arno Road, Oxton, Birkenhead.
- \*BIRMINGHAM CENTRAL FREE LIBRARY, Ratcliff Place, Birmingham.
- \*BIRMINGHAM LIBRARY, C. E. Scarse, Esq., Union Street, Birmingham.
- \*BOARDMAN, Rev. Charles, D.D., St. Wilfrid's Presbytery, Longridge, Preston.
- \*BOMBAY ASIATIC SOCIETY (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*BOSTON ATHENÆUM LIBRARY, U. S. A.
- BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY, Boston, Mass., U. S. A. (by Trübner & Co.).
- BOTTOMLEY, Edward, Greenfield, Manchester (by Trübner & Co.).
- BOURDILLON, F. W., Rother Lea, Midhurst, Sussex. (*Extra Series only*.)
- BOWEN, H. Courthope, 3, York St., Portman Sq., W.
- BOYD-CARPENTER, H., King's College, Cambridge.
- BRACKETT, Dr. J. R. Montpelier, Vermont, U. S. A.
- BRADLEY, Henry, 11, Bleisho Rd., Lavender Hill, London, S.W.
- \*BRESLAU UNIVERSITY LIBRARY (by Asher & Co.).
- \*BROOKE, Col. Thomas, Armitage Bridge, Huddersfield.
- \*BROOKLYN MERCANTILE LIBRARY, New York, U. S. A. (by Allen).
- BROWN, Arthur Henry, Brentwood (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*BROWN, Prof., Canterbury College, Christchurch, New Zealand (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*BRUSHFIELD, Dr. T. N., The Cliff, Budleigh-Salterton, Devon.
- \*BUCKLEY, Rev. Wm. Edw., Rectory, Middleton Cheney, Banbury.
- BURNS, James T., Kirliston, Edinburgh.
- BURNHIDE, W., Pembroke College, Cambridge.
- \*BURTON ON TRENT INSTITUTE, Union St., Burton-on-Trent.
- CARPENTER, J. Estlin, Leathes House, Fitzjohn's Avenue, Hampstead, N.W.
- CHANCE, Dr. F., Burleigh House, Sydenham Hill, S.E.
- CHAPPELL, William, F.S.A., Strafford Lodge, Oatlands Park, Weybridge Station.
- CHELTHENHAM COLLEGE LIBRARY, Cheltenham.
- CHELTHENHAM LIBRARY, 5, Royal Crescent, Cheltenham.
- \*CHETHAM'S LIBRARY, Hunt's Bank, Manchester.
- \*CHICAGO PUBLIC LIBRARY, Chicago, U. S. A. (by Stevens).
- CHICHESTER, Lord Bishop of, The Palace, Chichester.
- \*CHORLTON, Thomas, 32, Brazennose Street, Manchester.
- CHRISTIAN, Rev. George, Redgate, Uppingham, Rutland.
- \*CHRISTIANIA UNIVERSITY LIBRARY, Norway (care of Mr. T. Bennett, Christianska).
- \*CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE.
- CHURCHILL, Miss Caroline, 23, Stanley Gardens, Notting Hill, London, N.
- \*CINCINNATI PUBLIC AND SCHOOL LIBRARY, Cincinnati, U. S. A. (by Stevens).
- \*CLINTON HALL ASSOCIATION, New York, U. S. A. (by Trübner & Co.).
- CORNN, Arthur, 6, King's Bench Walk, Temple, E.C.
- \*COLERIDGE, The Right Hon. Lord, 1, Sussex Square, Hyde Park, W.
- \*COMPTON, Lord Alwyne, Bishop of Ely, Castle Ashby, Northampton.
- \*CORNELL UNIVERSITY, ITHACA, New York, U. S. A. (by Allen).
- CRAIG, Dr. W. J., 8, Grenville St., Brunswick Sq., W.C. (by Trübner & Co.).
- CULLEY, M. T., Coupland Castle, Wooler, Northumberland (*Extra Series only*).
- CUTHBERT, A., Glasgow (by Mr. Maclellan).

- \*DARIS, Miss, 1, Crofton Cottages, Cambridge.
- \*DALZIEL, W. A., 67, Victoria Road, Finsbury Park, London, N. (*Hon. Sec.*).
- DAVIES, Rev. J., 16, Belsize Sq., South Hampstead, N.W. (by Trübner & Co.).
- DAWES, Rev. Dr. J. S., Newton House, Surbiton, Surrey.
- DEIGHTON, BELL, & Co., 13, Trinity St., Cambridge.
- DERBY, Earl of, 23, St. James's Square, S.W.
- \*DEVONSHIRE, The Duke of, Devonshire House, Piccadilly, W.
- DICKSON, Thomas, H. M. General Register House, Edinburgh.
- \*DOWDEN, Prof. Edward, Winstead, Temple Road, Rathmines, Dublin.
- DURHAM CATHEDRAL, THE LIBRARY OF THE DEAN AND CHAPTER.
- \*DYKES, Frederick, Wakefield.
- \*EARLE, Rev. Professor J., 15, Norham Road, Oxford.
- EDINBURGH UNIVERSITY LIBRARY (by Williams & Norgate).
- ELWORTHY, Fredk. T., Foxdown, Wellington, Somerset.
- \*EVANS, Sebastian, Heathfield, Alleyn Park, West Dulwich, S.E.
- \*EVERARD, C. H., Eton College, Windsor.
- \*EXETER COLLEGE, OXFORD.
- FAUNTHORPE, Rev. John P., Whitelands Training College, 35, King's Road, Chelsea, S.W.
- FERRIS, O. A., Fairview, Dartmouth Park Avenue, N.W.
- \*FINANCE, Rev. Gerard de, St. Pierre de l'Étang du Nord, Grindstone Island, Magdalen Islands, Brit. N. America.
- \*FORD, John Rawlinson, 25, Albion St., Leeds.
- \*FOX, Francis F., Yate House, Chipping Sodbury.
- \*FREIBURG UNIVERSITY LIBRARY, Baden.
- \*FURNESS, Horace Howard, 222, West Washington Sq., Philadelphia, U. S. A.
- \*FURNIVALL, Dr. F. J., 3, St. George's Square, Primrose Hill, London, N.W. (*Director.*)
- GAIRFORD, Rev. T. A., 2, Devonshire Pl., Bath (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*GEROLD & Co., Vienna (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*GIBBS, Henry H., St. Dunstan's, Regent's Park, N.W.
- \*GILMAN, Arthur, 11, Mason Street, Cambridge, Mass., U. S. A.
- \*GISSING, Algernon F., 10, Barstow Sq., Wakefield.
- \*GLASGOW UNIVERSITY LIBRARY (by Mr. Maclehoes).
- GORDON, Rev. Robert, 6, Mayfield Street, Newington, Edinburgh (by Mr. Stevenson).
- GRAY, Arthur, Jesus College, Cambridge.
- \*GREIFSWALD UNIVERSITY. (By Asher & Co.)
- \*GREVEL, H. & Co., 33, King St., Covent Garden, W.C.
- \*GUILDHALL, LIBRARY OF THE CORPORATION OF LONDON, E.C.
- \*HAILSTONE, Edward, Walton Hall, Wakefield (by Mr. J. Wilson).
- \*HALES, Professor J. W., 1, Oppidan's Road, Primrose Hill, N.W.
- HALL, Joseph, Grammar School, Manchester.
- HAMBURG STADT BIBLIOTHEK.
- HANSON, Sir Reginald, 4, Bryanston Sq., London, W.
- \*HARRIS, Mortimer, 10, Angell Park Gardens, Brixton, S.W.
- \*HARRIS, William, 20, Elvetham Road, Edgbaston, Birmingham.
- HARRISON, Professor J., Washington and Lee University, Lexington, Virginia, U. S. A. (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*HARVARD COLLEGE, Cambridge, Mass., U. S. A. (by Allen).
- HARVEY, W. Fred., 2, Temple Gardens, Temple, E.C.
- \*HAY, C. A., 127, Harley Street, W.
- HEALES, Major Alfred (F.S.A.), Leeson, Chislehurst, Kent.
- HELVICH, Professor H. R., 29, Neugasse, Oberdöbling, Vienna, Austria.

14      *List of Members of the E. E. Text Soc., 1888.*

- HERTZ, Dr. W., Munich (by Trübner & Co.).  
 HESSELA, J. H., Cambridge.  
 \*HODGSON, Shadworth H., 45, Conduit Street, Regent Street, W.  
 HOLME, J. Wilson, 84, Old Jewry, E.C.  
 \*HOWARD, Henry, Stone House, Kidderminster.  
 HULL SUBSCRIPTION LIBRARY, Albion Street, Hull.  
 HULME, E. C., 18, Philbeach Gardens, South Kensington, S.W.  
 HUTCHINSON, Edward, the Elms, Darlington.  
 \*JAMES, Colonel Edward C., Ogdenburg, St. Lawrence County, New York, U. S. A.  
 \*JENKINS, Sir James, K.C.B., Nevinston, Mannamead, Plymouth.  
 \*JOHNS Hopkins Library, Baltimore, U. S. A. (by Allen).  
 JOHNSON, G. J., 86, Waterloo St., Birmingham.  
 JOHNSON, Dr. Henry, Brunswick, Maine, U. S. A. (by Trübner & Co.).  
 JOHNSON, H., 21, Kildare Gardens, Westbourne Park, London, W.  
 \*JONES, John Joseph, Abberley Hall, Stourport.  
 \*JUNIOR CARLTON CLUB, Pall Mall, S.W.  
 \*KANSAS UNIVERSITY LIBRARY (by Trübner & Co.).  
 KENT & Co. (by Trübner & Co.).  
 \*KEE, William P., 203, Newport Road, Cardiff.  
 \*KETT, Rev. C. W., 2, Haverstock Ter., South Hampstead, N.W.  
 \*KING'S COLLEGE, Cambridge (by Deighton, Bell, & Co.).  
 \*KING'S INN LIBRARY, Henrietta Street, Dublin.  
 \*KINGSBURY, Rev. T. L., Cambridge (by Deighton, Bell, & Co.).  
 \*KLINCKESBEEK, F., Paris (by Trübner & Co.).  
 \*LAFAYETTE COLLEGE, Easton, Penn., U. S. A.  
 \*LAMBEET, Joshua C., Independent College, Taunton.  
 \*LEATHES, Frederick de M., 17, Tavistock Place, Tavistock Square, W.C.  
 \*LEEDS LIBRARY, Commercial St., Leeds.  
 LEWIS, Rev. Henry, Principal, Culham College, Oxon.  
 \*LISTER, John, Shibden Hall, Halifax.  
 \*LITTLE, E. D., The Mount, Northallerton.  
 LITERARY AND PHILOSOPHICAL SOCIETY, Sheffield (by Trübner & Co.).  
 \*LIVERPOOL FREE PUBLIC LIBRARY (by G. G. Walsley, 50, Lord St., Liverpool).  
 LOCKWOOD & Co., 7, Stationers' Hall Court, E.C. (by Trübner & Co.).  
 \*LONDON INSTITUTION, Finsbury Circus, E.C.  
 \*LONDON LIBRARY, 12, St. James's Square, S.W.  
 \*LOUNSBURY, Prof. T. R., Yale College, New Haven, Conn., U. S. A.  
 \*LOW, Messrs. S. & Co., 188, Fleet Street, E.C. (by Trübner & Co.).  
 \*LOWELL, Professor J. Russell, Harvard, Mass., U. S. A.  
 \*LUARD, Rev. Henry Richards, 4, St. Peter's Terrace, Cambridge.  
 \*LUMBY, Rev. Prof. J. Rawson, St. Mary's Gate, Cambridge.  
 LUSHINGTON, Professor E. L., D.C.L.—Park House, Maidstone.  
 \*MACMILLAN, A., Bedford Street, Covent Garden, W.C.  
 \*MANCHESTER, The Duke of, Kimbolton Castle, St. Neot's.  
 \*MANCHESTER PUBLIC FREE LIBRARY, Manchester.  
 MARBURG UNIVERSITY. (*Extra Series only.*)  
 MARKBY, Alfred, 9, New Square, Lincoln's Inn, W.C.  
 \*MARSHALL, John, 20, Holyrood Crescent, Glasgow.  
 \*MARTINEAU, P. M., Littleworth, Esher, Surrey.  
 \*MASON, C. P., 5, College Gardens, Dulwich, S.E.  
 \*MASSON, M. Gustave, Harrow on the hill.  
 MATTHEW, Fredk. D., Quarryton, Hayne Road, Beckenham, Kent.

- \*MÄTZNER, Dr. (by Asher & Co.).
- \*MAYOR, Rev. Prof. John E. B., St. John's College, Cambridge.
- \*MELBOURNE PUBLIC LIBRARY (by S. Mullen).
- \*MERCANTILE LIBRARY, St. Louis, Missouri, U. S. A.
- \*MERTON COLLEGE, Oxford.  
METCALFE, W. M., South Manoe, Paisley.
- \*MICHIGAN, UNIVERSITY OF, Ann Arbor, Michigan, U. S. A.
- \*MICKLETHWAITE, J. T., 6, Delahay Street, Westminster, S.W.  
MILL HILL SCHOOL, Hendon, N.W.
- \*MITCHELL LIBRARY, Glasgow.  
MOHR, E., Heidelberg (by Trübner & Co.).
- MONSON, Viscount, 29, Belgrave Square, S.W.
- MOORE, S., 25, Dover St., Chorlton-on-Medlock, Manchester.
- \*MORISON, John, Messrs. 11, Burnbank Gardens, Glasgow.
- MORLEY, Prof. Henry, 8, Upper Park Road, Haverstock Hill, N.W.
- \*MORRIS, Rev. Dr. Richard, Lordship Lodge, Wood Green, N.
- MOULTON, Rev. Dr. Wm. F., The Leys, Cambridge.
- \*MULLEN, S., 48, Paternoster Row, London, E.C.
- MÜLLER, Professor Max, 7, Norham Gardens, Oxford.
- MUNBY, Arthur J., 6, Fig-tree Court, Temple, E.C.
- \*MURRAY, Dr. James A. H., Oxford.
- \*NAPIER, Professor A. S., Headington Hill, Oxford.
- \*NATIONAL LIBRARY OF IRELAND, Dublin (by Hodges, Figgis & Co.).  
NEBRASKA UNIVERSITY, U. S. A. (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*NECK, M. G. van, Goes, Holland.
- \*NEW JERSEY COLLEGE LIBRARY, New Jersey, U. S. A. (by H. Grevel & Co.).
- \*NEW UNIVERSITY CLUB, St. James's Street, S.W.
- \*NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE LITERARY AND PHILOSOPHICAL SOCIETY, Westgate Road.
- \*NICHOLL, G. W., Ham, Cowbridge, Glamorganshire.  
NORFOLK AND NORWICH LITERARY INSTITUTION, St. Andrew's Broad Street, Norwich.
- \*NORWICH FREE LIBRARY, Norwich.
- \*NORWICH, Dean and Chapter of (care of Archdeacon Nevill, The Close, Norwich).
- \*NOTTINGHAM FREE PUBLIC LIBRARIES, Nottingham.  
OLIPHANT, T. L. Kington, Charlfield, Gask, Auchterarder.
- \*ORMEROD, Henry M., 5, Clarence Street, Manchester.
- \*OUSELEY, Rev. Sir Frederick Gore, Bart., St. Michael's College, Tenbury, Herefordshire.
- \*OWENS COLLEGE LIBRARY, Manchester.  
PARIS, La Faculté des Lettres de Paris, M. Thorin, Rue de Médecins (care of Dulan, 37, Soho Sq., W.). (*Extra Series only.*)
- \*PARKER & Co., Messrs. Jas., Broad Street, Oxford (3 sets).
- \*PEABODY INSTITUTE, Baltimore, U. S. A. (by Allen).
- PEACOCK, Edward B., Bottesford Manor, Brigg, Lincolnshire.
- PEACOCK, William, 3, Sunnyside, Sunderland.
- PEEL, George, Brookfield, Chesdale, Cheshire.
- PEILE, John, Christ's College, Cambridge.
- \*PENZANCE LIBRARY, Penzance.
- \*PERKETT, Arthur George, Magdalene College, Cambridge.
- PHILADELPHIA LIBRARY COMPANY, U. S. A. (by Stevens).
- \*PHILADELPHIA MERCANTILE LIBRARY, U. S. A. (by Allen).
- \*PLYMOUTH INSTITUTION, Athenaeum, Plymouth.

16 *List of Members of the E. E. Text Soc., 1888.*

- \*PORTER, Ed. F., Boley Hill House, Rochester.
- PORTICO LIBRARY, 57, Mosley Street, Manchester.
- \*PRIAULX, Osw. de Beauvoir, 8, Cavendish Square, W.
- \*PRICE, Mrs. W. E., Hillfield, Gloucester.
- PROCTER, Rev. Francis, Wilton Vicarage, North Walsham, Norfolk.
- \*PUBLIC RECORD OFFICE, London, E.C. (by Trübner & Co.).
- QUEEN'S COLLEGE, Cork.
- QUEEN'S COLLEGE LIBRARY, Belfast.
- READ, Rev. Stephen G., Barton St. Mary, Brandon, Norfolk.
- REES, G., Overseers' Offices, 27, Bridge St., Birkenhead.
- \*REFORM CLUB, Pall Mall, S.W. (by Mr. Ridgway).
- \*REICHEL, H. R., University College of North Wales, Bangor.
- RILEY, Athelstan, 32, Queen's Gardens, Baywater, W.
- ROBERTS, Robert, Queen's Terrace, Boston, Lincolnshire.
- ROCHDALE FREE PUBLIC LIBRARY, Rochdale.
- \*ROCHE, J. (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*RONKLEY, James George, 12, East Parade, Sheffield.
- ROSTOCK UNIVERSITY LIBRARY (by Asher & Co.).
- \*ROTTON, J. F., 8, Boltons, West Brompton, S.W.
- \*ROUND, P. Zillwood, 30, South St., Greenwich, S.E.
- \*ROYAL INSTITUTION, Albemarle Street, W.
- ROYAL IRISH ACADEMY, 19, Dawson Street, Dublin.
- \*ROYAL LIBRARY, Windsor Castle.
- ROYAL LIBRARY, Munich (by Trübner and Co.).
- \*ROYAL LIBRARY, Stockholm (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*ROYAL SOCIETY OF LITERATURE, 4, St. Martin's Place, Charing Cross, W.O.
- \*RUSKIN, Prof. John, LL.D., Brantwood, Coniston.
- \*RUSSELL, Thomas, Ascog Butte, Rothsay.
- \*RUTGERS COLLEGE LIBRARY, New Brunswick, New Jersey, U. S. A.
- \*ST. ANDREW'S UNIVERSITY LIBRARY, N. B.
- \*ST. CATHERINE'S COLLEGE, Cambridge (by Deighton, Bell, & Co.).
- \*ST. JOHN'S COLLEGE, Cambridge (by Deighton, Bell, & Co.).
- \*ST. JOHN'S COLLEGE, Annapolis, Maryland, U. S. A. (by Stevens).
- \*ST. LOUIS PUBLIC SCHOOL LIBRARY (by Stevens).
- \*ST. MARY'S COLLEGE LIBRARY, Oscott, Birmingham.
- SALT, Samuel, Gateside, Silecroft, Cumberland.
- SAUNDERS, G. Symes, M.B., Devon County Lunatic Asylum, Exminster.
- \*SCHIPPER, Professor (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*SCIENCE AND ART DEPARTMENT, Cromwell Road, South Kensington, S.W.
- SENIOR, John, Staunton, Coleford, Gloucestershire.
- \*SHEFFIELD FREE LIBRARY, Surrey Street, Sheffield.
- \*SHEFFIELD LIT. & PHIL. SOCIETY (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*SHIMMIN, Charles F., Mount Vernon Street, Boston, U. S. A.
- \*SIGNET LIBRARY, Edinburgh.
- \*SIMONTON, J. W., Harrisburg, Pennsylvania, U. S. A.
- \*SION COLLEGE, President and Fellows of, London Wall, E.C.
- \*SKRAT, Rev. Prof. Walter W., M.A., LL.D., 2, Salisbury Villas, Cambridge.
- SLATTER & ROSE, Messrs., Oxford.
- SMITH, Charles, 14, Market St., Faversham.
- \*SNELGROVE, Arthur G., 6, Portway Terrace, Willoughby Rd., Hornsey, N.
- SNELL, Rev. W. M., Corpus Christi College, Cambridge.
- \*SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIES, Burlington House, Piccadilly, W.
- SOMERSETHIRE ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY, Taunton Castle, Taunton.
- \*SOTHERAN & Co., 36, Piccadilly, W. (by Trübner & Co.).

- \*STECHELT, G. E., 26, King William St., Strand, W.C. (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*STEPHENS, Professor George, University of Copenhagen, Denmark.
- STONYHURST COLLEGE, Blackburn.
- \*STRASSBURG UNIVERSITY LIBRARY (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*SULLIVAN, Sir Edward, 32, Fitzwilliam Place, Dublin.
- SUNDERLAND SUBSCRIPTION LIBRARY, Fawcett Street, Sunderland.
- \*SWAIN FREE SCHOOL, New Bedford, Mass., U. S. A. (by H. Grevel & Co.).
- SWEET, Dr. Henry, Mansfield Cottage, Heath St., Hampstead, N.W.
- \*SYDNEY FREE LIBRARY (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*TEN-BRINK, Professor Bernhard, Ph. Dr., Strassburg (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*TERRY, Frank C. Birkbeck, The College, Dumfries Pl., Cardiff.
- \*TINKLER, Rev. John, Arkengarth Dale Vicarage, Richmond, Yorkshire.
- TOOLE, The Very Rev. Canon Laurence, Bedford House, Hulme, Manchester.
- \*TORONTO, University of, Canada (by Allen).
- \*TORQUAY NATURAL HISTORY SOCIETY, Torquay, Devon.
- TOTTER, T. N., 21, Victoria Rd., Fallowfield, Manchester.
- \*TRINITY COLLEGE LIBRARY, CAMBRIDGE (by Deighton, Bell & Co.).
- TRINITY COLLEGE LIBRARY, OXFORD.
- TÜBINGEN UNIVERSITY LIBRARY (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*TULANE UNIVERSITY, New Orleans, U. S. A. (by H. Grevel).
- UNGER, Professor C. R., Christiania, Norway.
- UNIVERSITY COLLEGE, Gower Street, London, W.C.
- UNIVERSITY LIBRARY, Utrecht, Holland.
- \*UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, Berkeley, Cal., U. S. A. (H. Sotheran & Co.).
- \*UNIVERSITY OF LONDON, Burlington Gardens, W. (H. Sotheran & Co.).
- \*UNIVERSITY OF VIRGINIA, Albemarle Co., Virginia, U. S. A. (H. Sotheran & Co.).
- \*UPSALA ACADEMY (by Trübner & Co.).
- USHERWOOD, Venerable Archdeacon (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*VAN NAME, Addison, New Haven, Connecticut, U. S. A. (by Allen).
- \*VASSAR COLLEGE LIBRARY, Poughkeepsie (by H. Grevel).
- \*VICTORIAN PARLIAMENT, Library of, Melbourne (by Mr. Geo. S. Robertson, 17, Warwick Square, E.C.).
- \*VILES, Edward, 16, Wetherby Gardens, South Kensington, S.W.
- VIPAN, Frederick John, 31, Bedford Place, W.C. (*Extra Series only.*)
- VLOTEN, Dr. J. van, Haarlem, Holland.
- \*WALTON, Charles, 22, Newington Butts, Southwark, S.E.
- \*WASHINGTON, LIBRARY OF CONGRESS, U. S. A. (by Allen).
- \*WATKINSON LIBRARY, Hartford, Conn., U. S. A. (by Allen).
- \*WATSON, Robert Spence, Moss Croft, Gateshead-on-Tyne.
- \*WEDGWOOD, Hensleigh, 31, Queen Anne Street, W.
- \*WELLESLEY COLLEGE, Wellesley, Mass., U. S. A. (H. Sotheran & Co.).
- \*WHEATLEY, Henry B., 12, Caroline St., Bedford Sq., W.C. (*Treasurer.*)
- \*WHITAKER, J., 11, Warwick Lane, E.C. (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*WHITE, George H., Glenthorne, St. Mary Church, Torquay.
- WHITNEY, Henry Austin, Boston, Massachusetts (by Trübner & Co.).
- \*WILCOCKS, Horace Stone, 32, Wyndham Square, Plymouth.
- \*WILKINSON, Miss Isabel E., 2, Park Side, Cambridge.
- WILLIAMS, Sydney, 14, Henrietta Street, Covent Garden, W.C.
- WILSON, Edmund, 8, Osborne Ter., Beech Grove, Leeds.
- \*WILSON, Edward S., 6, Whitefriar Gate, Hull.
- WILSON, Wm., Hyde Hill, Berwick-on-Tweed.
- WINNER, Percy Jas., 65, Sankey St., Warrington.
- \*WITTHOFT, Valentin, Berlin, W., An der Apostelkirche 2.



18      *List of Members of the E. E. Text Soc., 1888.*

WOODHAME, J. R., High St., Brackley, Northants.  
WORCESTER COLLEGE, OXFORD.

\*WREN, Walter, 3, Powis Square, Westbourne Park, W.

\*WRIGHT, Dr. W. Aldis, Trinity College, Cambridge.

WÜLCKER, Professor R. P. (by Mr. A. Twietmeyer, Leipzig).

\*WURZBURG LIBRARY (by Trübner & Co.).

\*YALE COLLEGE LIBRARY, New Haven, Conn., U. S. A. (by Allen).

\*YORK MINSTER LIBRARY, York.

YOUNG, Sidney, 15, Alwyne Rd., Canonbury, N.

\*ZUPITZA, Prof. Julius, Ph. D., Berlin (by Asher & Co.).

---

The Honorary Secretary of the *Chaucer Society* and the *Ballad Society* is W. A. Dalsiel, Esq., 67, Victoria Rd., Finsbury Park, London, N.

The Hon. Sec. of the *New Shakspeare Society* is Kenneth Grahame, Esq., 65, Chelsea Gardens, Chelsea Bridge Road, London, S.W.

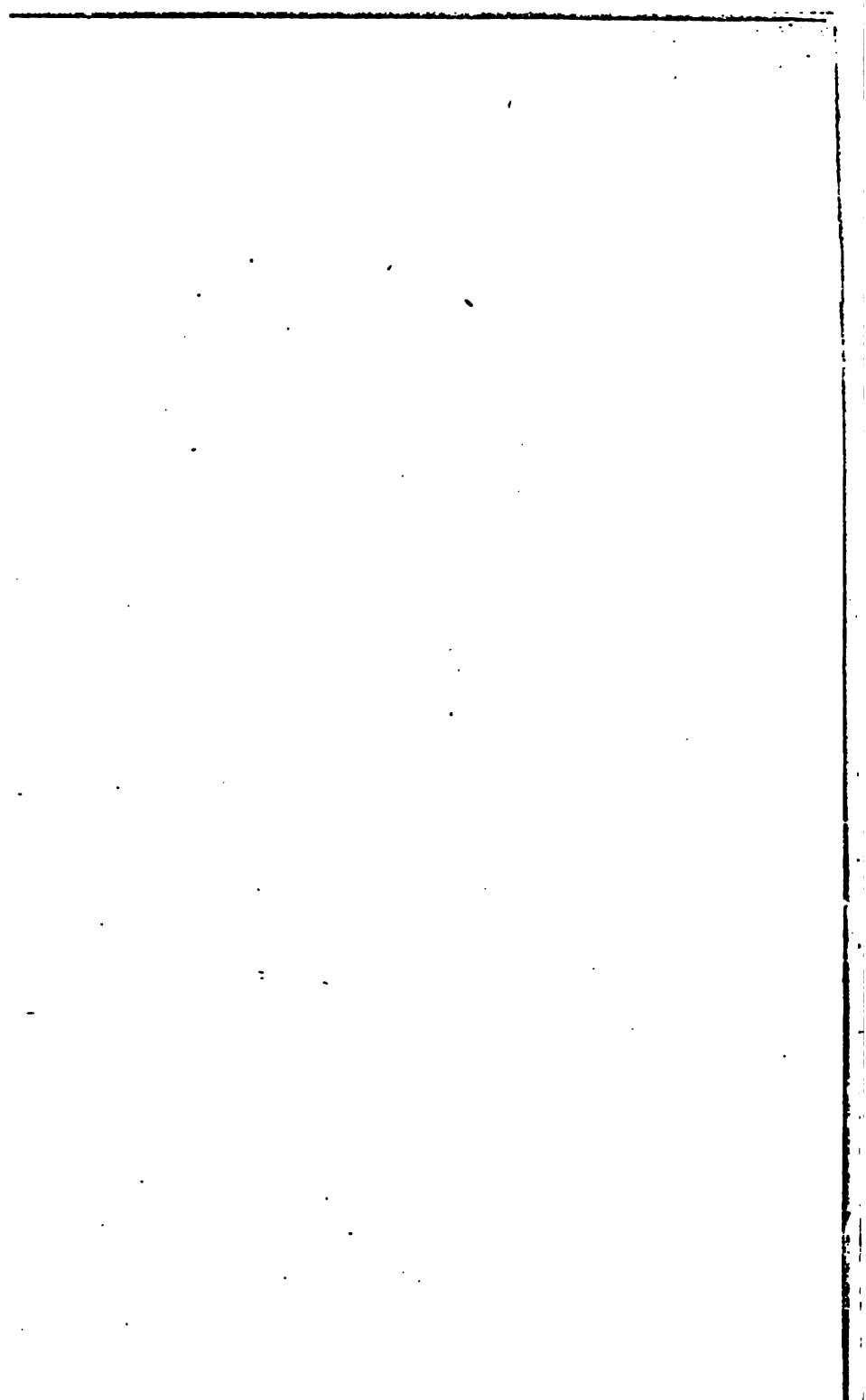
The Hon. Sec. of the *Browning Society* is Walter B. Slater, Esq., 249 Camden Road, London, N.

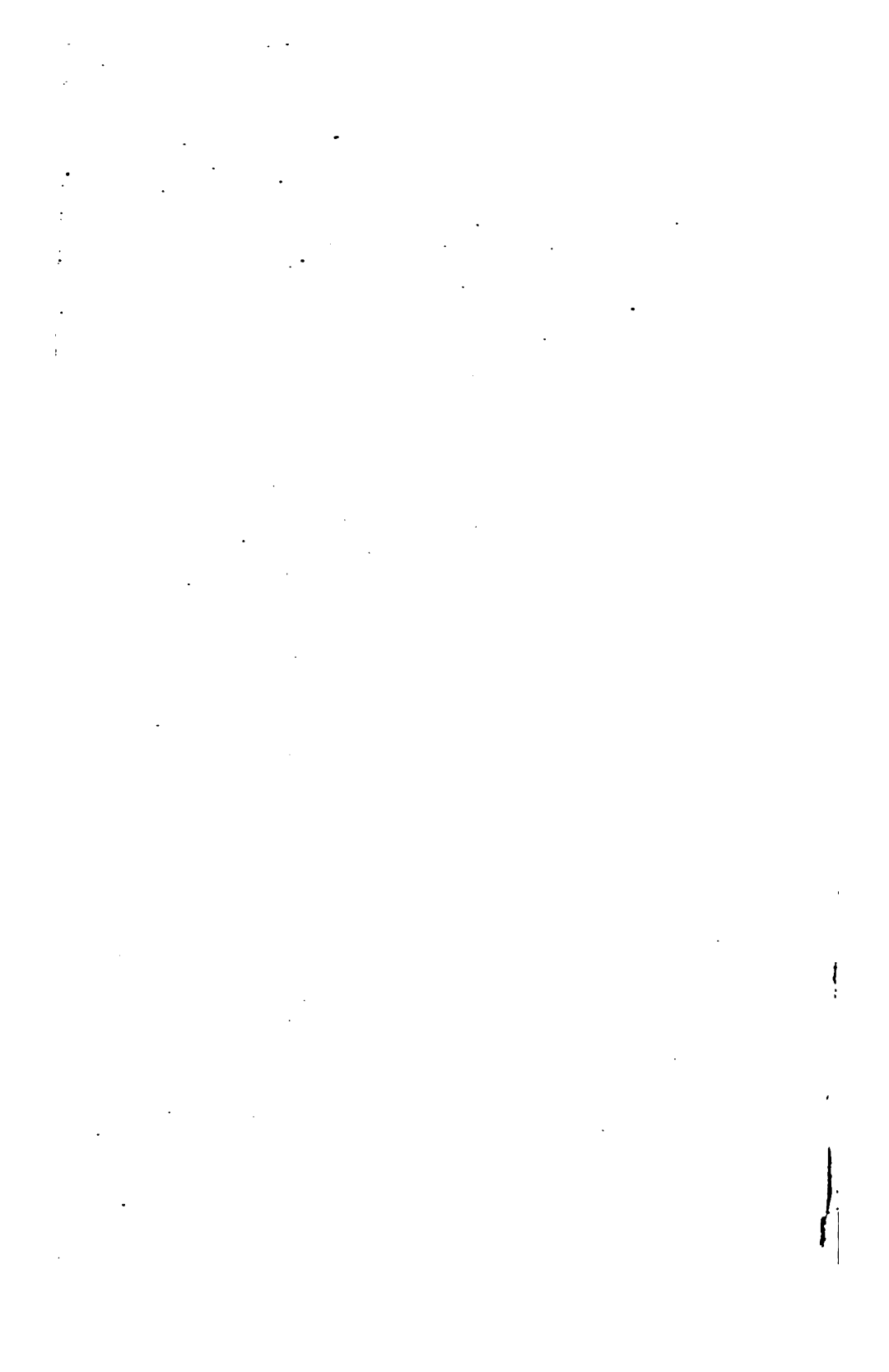
The Hon. Sec. of the *Wyclif Society* is J. H. Standerwick, Esq., General Post Office, London, E.C.

The Hon. Sec. of *The Shelley Society* is T. J. Wise, Esq., 127 Devonshire Road, Holloway.

---

*Shakspeare Quarto Facsimiles*, issued under the superintendence of Dr. F. J. Furnivall: 43 vols., 6s. each. B. Quaritch, 15 Piccadilly, London.





*The Publications for 1872-86 (one guinea each year) are:—*

49. An Old English Miscellany, containing a Bestiary, Kentish Sermons, Proverbs of Alfred, and Religious Poems of the 13th cent., ed. from the MSS. by the Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. 10s. 1872
50. King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. Part II. 10s. "
51. The Life of St Juliana, 2 versions, A.D. 1230, with translations: ed. T. O. Cockayne & E. Brock. 2s. "
52. Palladius on Husbandry, English (ab. 1420 A.D.), ed. Rev. Barton Lodge, M.A. Part I. 10s. "
53. Old-English Homilies, Series II., and three Hymns to the Virgin and God, 13th-century, with the music to two of them, in old and modern notation: ed. Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. 8s. 1873
54. The Vision of Piers Plowman, Text C: Richard the Redeles (by William, the author of the *Vision*) and The Crowned King: Part III., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 18s. "
55. Generydes, a Romance, ab. 1440 A.D., ed. W. Aldis Wright, M.A. Part I. 3s. "
56. The Gest Hystoriale of the Destruction of Troy, in alliterative verse; ed. by D. Donaldson, Esq., and the late Rev. G. A. Pantton. Part II. 10s. 6d. 1874
57. The Early English Version of the "Cursor Mundi"; in four Texts, edited by the Rev. R. Morris, M.A., LL.D. Part I, with 2 photolithographic facsimiles. 10s. 6d. "
58. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. Part I. 8s. "
59. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part II. 15s. 1875
60. Meditations on the Soper of Our Lords (by Robert of Brunne), edited by J. M. Cowper. 2s. 6d. "
61. The Romance and Prophecies of Thomas of Ercelesene, from 5 MSS.; ed. Dr. J. A. H. Murray. 10s. 6d. "
62. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part III. 15s. 1876
63. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part II. 7s. "
64. Francis Thynne's Emblemes and Epigrams, A.D. 1600, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 7s. "
65. Be Domes Dage (Hede's *De Dis Judicii*), &c., ed. J. R. Lumby, B.D. 2s. "
66. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part IV, with 2 autotypes. 10s. 1877
67. Notes on Piers Plowman, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. Part I. 21s. "
68. The "Cursor Mundi," in 4 Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part V. 25s. 1878
69. A. M. Davis's 5 Dreams about Edward II. &c., ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 5s. "
70. Generydes, a Romance, ed. W. Aldis Wright, M.A. Part II. 4s. "
71. The Lay Folks Mass-Book, four texts, ed. Rev. Canon Simmonds. 25s. 1879
72. Fa. lines on Husbandry, English (ab. 1420 A.D.). Part II. Ed. S. J. Hertridge, B.A. 15s. "
73. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part III. 10s. 1880
74. English Works of Wyclif, hitherto unprinted, ed. F. D. Matthew, Esq. 20s. "
75. Catholicon Anglicum, an early English Dictionary, from Lord Monson's MS. A.D. 1463, ed., with Introduction & Notes, by S. J. Hertridge, B.A.; and with a Preface by H. B. Wheatley. 30s. 1881
76. Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints, in MS. Cott. Jul. E 7., ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A. Part I. 10s. "
77. Beowulf, the unique MS. autotyped and transliterated, edited by Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D. 25s. 1882
78. The Fifty Earliest English Wills in the Court of Probate, 1387-1439, ed. by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 7s. "
79. King Alfred's Orosius, from Lord Tollermeche's 9th century MS. Part I, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 13s. 1883
- Extra Volume.* Facsimile of the Epinal Glossary, 8th cent., ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 15s. "
80. The Early-English Life of St. Katherine and its Latin Original, ed. Dr. Eickenkel. 12s. 1884
81. Piers Plowman: Notes, Glossary, &c. Part IV, completing the work, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A. 18s. "
82. Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints, MS. Cott. Jul. E 7., ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. Part II. 12s. 1885
83. The Oldest English Texts, Charters, &c., ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 20s. "
84. Additional Analogs to 'The Wright's Chaste Wife,' No. 12, by W. A. Clouston. 1s. 1886
85. The Three Kings of Cologne. 2 English Texts, and 1 Latin, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 17s. "
86. Free Lives of Women Saints, ab. 1610 A.D., ed. from the unique MS. by Dr. C. Horstmann. 12s. "

**EXTRA SERIES.**

*The Publications for 1867-1877 (one guinea each year) are:—*

- I. William of Palerne; or, William and the Werwolf. Re-edited by Prof. Skeat, J. 10s. "
- II. Early English Pronunciation, with especial Reference to Shakspeare and Chaucer. F.R.S. Part I. 10s. "
- III. Caxton's Book of Courtesy, in Three Versions. Ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 6s. "
- IV. Havelok the Dane. Re-edited by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 10s. "
- V. Chaucer's Boethius. Edited from the two best MSS. by Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s. "
- VI. Chevalere Assigne. Re-edited from the unique MS. by H. H. Gibbs, Esq., M.A. 6s. "
- VII. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part II. 10s. 1869
- VIII. Queene Elizabethes Academy, &c. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. Essays on early Italian and German Books of Courtesy, by W. M. Rossetti and Dr. E. Oswald. 12s. "
- IX. Andwile's Fraternity of Vocaboules, Harman's Caveat, &c. Ed. F. R. Viles & F. J. Furnivall. 7s. 6d. "
- X. Andrew Borede's Introduction of Knowledge, 1547, Dyetary of Helth, 1643, Barons in Defence of the Berde, 1542-3. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. 18s. 1870
- XI. Barbour's Bruce, Part I., ed. from MSS. and editions, by Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 12s. "
- XII. England in Henry VIII's Time: a Dialogue between Cardinal Pole & Lupset, by Thom. Starkey, Chaplain to Henry VIII. Ed. J. M. Cowper. Part II. 12s. (Part I. in No. XXXII. 1878, 2s.) 1871
- XIII. A Supplication of the Beggars, by Simon Fish, 1528-9 A.D., ed. F. J. Furnivall; with A Supplication to our Moste Soneraigne Lorde; A Supplication of the Poore Commons; and The Decaye of England by the Great Multitude of Sheep, ed. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 6s. "
- XIV. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, Esq. F.R.S. Part III. 10s. "
- XV. Robert Crowley's Thirty-One Epigrams, Voyce of the Last Trumpet, Way to Wealth, &c., 1580-1 A.D., edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 12s. 1872
- XVI. Chaucer's Treatise on the Astrolabe. Ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. 6s. "
- XVII. The Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D., with 4 Tracts (1542-48), ed. Dr. Murray. Part I. 10s. "
- XVIII. The Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D., ed. Dr. Murray. Part II. 8s. 1873
- XIX. Our Ladyes Myrroure, A.D. 1530, ed. Rev. J. H. Blunt, M.A. 24s. "
- XX. Lancelloh's History of the Holy Graill (ab. 1450 A.D.), ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part I. 8s. 1874
- XXI. Barbour's Bruce, Part II., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 4s. "
- XXII. Henry Brinklow's Complaynt of Roderick Mors (ab. 1612); and The Lamentacion of a Christian against the Citty of London, made by Roderick Mors, A.D. 1546. Ed. J. M. Cowper. 8s. "
- XXIII. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part IV. 10s. "
- XXIV. Lancelloh's History of the Holy Graill, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part II. 10s. "
- XXV. Guy of Warwick, 15th-century Version, ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part I. 20s. "
- XXVI. Guy of Warwick, 15th-century Version, ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part II. 14s. "
- XXVII. Sp. Fisher's English Works (died 1532), ed. by Prof. J. E. R. Mavor. Part I, the Text. 10s. "
- XXVIII. Lancelloh's Holy Graill, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part III. 10s. "
- XXIX. Barbour's Bruce, Part III, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. 21s. "

# Early English Text Society.

The Subscription, which constitutes membership, is £1 1s. a year [and £1 1s. addition: the EXTRA SERIES], due in advance on the 1st of JANUARY, and should be paid either to the Society's Account at the Head Office of the Union Bank, Princes Street, London E., or by Cheque, Postal Order, or Money-Order (made payable at the Chief Office) to the Hon. Secretary, W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Rd., Finsbury Park, London, N., and crossed 'Union Bank.' (United-States Subscribers must pay for postage 1d. a year extra for the Original Series, and 1s. a year for the Extra Series.) The Society's Texts are also sold separately at the prices put after them in the Lists.

## ORIGINAL SERIES.

### *The Publications for 1887 are:—*

Early English Verse Lives of Saints (earliest version), Laud MS. 109, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 20s.  
 13. Bradshaw's Life of St. Werburgh (Pynson, 1521), ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 10s.

### *The Publications for 1888 will be chosen from:—*

1001 and Virtues, from the unique Stowe MS., ab. 1200 A.D., ed. Dr. F. Holthausen. Part I. 8s.  
 Fifteenth-Century Cookery-Books, ab. 1420-1450, edited from the MSS. by Mr. T. Austin. [At Press.  
 2-Saxon and Latin Rule of St. Bead, Interlinear Glosses, ed. Dr. H. Loggman. [At Press.  
 3-The Canterbury Psalter, from the Trin. Cambr. MS., ab. 1150 A.D., ed. F. Harsley, B.A. [At Press.  
 4-Liber Scintillarum, edited from the MSS. by Ernest Rhodes, B.A. [At Press.

### *The following Texts are preparing for Issue:—*

1st-Text of 10 Psalms from all the Anglo-Saxon Psalters, ed. Dr. H. Loggman and F. Harsley, B.A.  
 2nd-Lynceus's Works. Part VI. and last, ed. W. H. S. Utley. [At Press.  
 3-Mandi, Book VI. Introduction, Notes, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. [Part printed.  
 4-Folk's Catechism, by Archbp. Thore-by, ed. Canon Simmons and F. D. Matthew. [Text printed.  
 5-Life of St. Kenelm, from the unique MS., ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. [At Press.  
 6-The prose Winesap, from the unique MS., ab. 1450, ed. A. K. Donald, B.A. [At Press.  
 7-The Metrical Lives of Saints, MS. Cott. Jul. E. 7, Part III, ed. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D. [At Press.  
 8-And Virtues, from the unique Stowe MS., ab. 1200 A.D., ed. Dr. F. Holthausen. Part II.

## EXTRA SERIES.

### *The Publications for 1887 are:—*

1-Guy of Warwick, 2 texts (Auchinleck and Calus MSS.), Part II, ed. Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D. 15s.  
 2-Arming of Hamlyn, 13. Huon of Burdon, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part IV. 5s.  
 3-Ornament of Aesthetes, from the unique MS. in the Chetham Library, ed. E. Adam, Ph.D. 10s.

### *The Publications for 1888 will be chosen from:—*

1-Dialogue against the Four Pectences, 1578 (ed. 1, 1584). By W. Ballein. Ed. M. & A. H. Bullen. 10.  
 2-Vicary's Anatomy of the Body of Man, 1548, ed. 1577, edited by F. J. & Percy Fumivall. Part I. 15s.  
 3-Antonic, ed. 1577, edited by F. J. & Percy Fumivall. Part II. [At Press.  
 4-Sher's English Words, Pt. II, with his Life and Letters, ed. Rev. Ronald Bayne, B.A. [At Press.  
 5-English Pronunciation, by A. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Pt. V, the present English Dialects. [At Press.  
 6-ve's Minor Poems, from the Phillips MS., ed. F. J. Fumivall, M.A., Ph.D. [At Press.  
 7-ve's Complete, from the Cosin MS. at Durham, ed. F. J. Fumivall, M.A., Ph.D.

8-The Large-Paper Issue of the Extra Series is stop, save for unfinished Works of it.

### *Preparing:—*

1-r's Bruce, ed. Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat. Part IV.  
 2-h's Holy Grail, ed. F. J. Fumivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part V.  
 3-of Branne's Handlyng Synne, A.D. 1390, edited by Dr. Fumivall.  
 4's englishing of the Enchiridion, A.D. 1500, with its French original, ed. M. Culley, M.A.  
 5's Book of the Ordre of Chivalry, ab. 1400, with Loutful's Scotch copy of it, ed. W. Bayne, B.A.  
 6's Englishing of Alain Chartier's Curial, ed. F. J. Fumivall, M.A., Ph.D.

### *The Publications for the years 1878 to 1886 (one guinea each year) are:—*

1-Lanceloth's Holy Grail, ed. F. J. Fumivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part IV. 15s.  
 2-The Alliterative Romance of Alexander and Dindimus, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 6s.  
 3-Starky's "England in Henry VIII's time," Pt. I. Starky's Life and Letters, ed. S. J. Herriage. 8s.  
 4-I. Gesta Romanorum (english ab. 1400), ed. S. J. Herriage. B.A. 15s.  
 5-The Charlemagne Romances:—1. Sir Furmbas, from Assin. MS. 33, ed. S. J. Herriage. 15s.  
 6-Charlemagne Romances:—2. The Sege off Melayne, Sir Otuel, &c., ed. S. J. Herriage. 12s.  
 7-Charlemagne Romances:—3. Lyf of Charles the Grete, Pt. I., ed. S. J. Herriage. 16s.  
 8-Charlemagne Romances:—4. Lyf of Charles the Grete, Pt. II., ed. S. J. Herriage. 16s.  
 9-Charlemagne Romances:—5. The Sowdons of Baby, &c., ed. Dr. Hausknecht. 15s.  
 10-Charlemagne Romances:—6. Banf C. leax, Toland, Otuel, &c., ed. S. J. Herriage, B.A. 15s.  
 11-Charlemagne Romances:—7. Huon of Burdon, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part I. 15s.  
 12-Charlemagne Romances:—8. Huon of Burdon, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part II. 15s.  
 13-Guy of Warwick: 2 texts (Auchinleck MS. and Calus MS.), ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part I. 15s.  
 14-Charlemagne Romances:—9. Huon of Burdon, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part III. 15s.  
 15-Charlemagne Romances:—10. The Four Sons of Aymon, ed. Miss Octavia Richardson. Part I. 15s.  
 16-Charlemagne Romances:—11. The Four Sons of Aymon, ed. Miss O. Richardson. Part II. 20s.  
 17-Sir Bevis of Hamton, from the Auchinleck and other MSS., ed. Prof. E. Kolbing. Part I. 10s.  
 18-The Wars of Alexander, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D. 20s.  
 19-Sir Bevis of Hamton, ed. Prof. E. Kolbing. Part II. 10s.

LONDON: N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.  
 BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 53 MOHRENSTRASSE.

2014









1971-1972  
1973-1974



3 2044 021 074 299

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED  
THE COST OF OVERDUE NOTIFICATION  
IF THIS BOOK IS NOT RETURNED TO  
THE LIBRARY ON OR BEFORE THE LAST  
DATE STAMPED BELOW.

6563858

CANCELLED

SEP 26 1979

BOOK DUE WID

6763160

JUL 29 1980

WIDENER

BOOK DUE

CANCELLED

JUN 12 1989

BOOK DUE

WIDENER

FEB 10 1996

BOOK DUE

WIDENER  
WIDENER  
DEC 23 2003  
MAR 25 2004  
BOOK DUE  
CANCELLED